

THE CŪLAVAMSA II



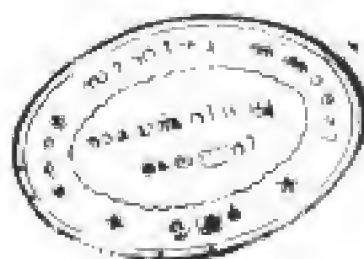


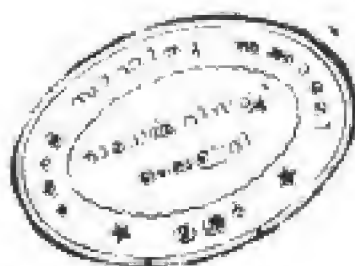


H. 86

RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUTE.
TRICHY, TAMIL NADU, INDIA.

2 JULY 1931





Pali Text Society

TRANSLATION SERIES, No. 20

1930: EXTRA VOLUME. PRICE, 10S.

CŪLAVAMSA

BEING THE MORE RECENT PART OF THE

MAHĀVAMSA

PART II.

TRANSLATED BY

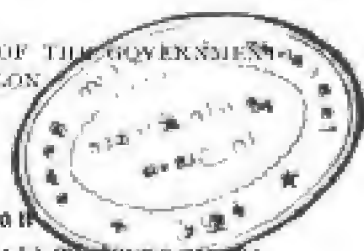
WILHELM GEIGER

AND FROM THE GERMAN INTO ENGLISH BY

Mrs. C. MABEL RICKMERS (née Duff)

AUTHOR OF "THE CHRONOLOGY OF BUDDHISM"

UNDER THE PATRONAGE OF THE GOVERNMENT
OF CEYLON



London

PUBLISHED FOR THE PALI TEXT SOCIETY

by

HUMPHREY MILFORD

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS, AMEN HOUSE

WARWICK SQUARE, E.C.

1930



RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUTE.

TRICHUR, COCHIN STATE.

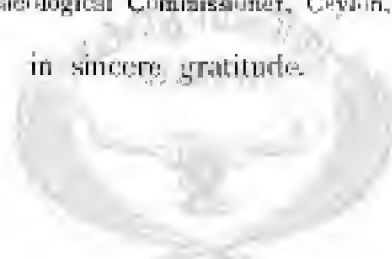
25 JUN 1931

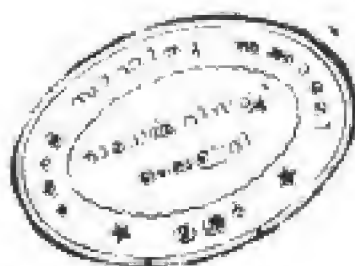
To

Mr. A. M. Hocart,

Archaeological Commissioner, Ceylon.

in sincere gratitude.





28 JUN 1954

INTRODUCTION

Recent years have brought us two comprehensive works on the chronology of Ceylon: 1) JOHN M. SENAVERATNE, "The Date of Buddha's Death and Ceylon Chronology", JRAS. C. B. XXIII, No. 67 (1914), p. 141 ff. and 2) DMDZ. WICKREMASINGHE, "Ceylonese Chronology", as Introduction to vol. III of his *Epigraphia Zeylanica*.

Still earlier investigations dealing with a longer period are: 3) SYLVAIN LÉVI, "Les Missions de Wang Hien Ts'e dans l'Inde" in JAs. 1900, p. 297 ff., 401 ff., translated by JOHN M. SENAVERATNE, JRAS. C. B. XXIV, No. 68 (1915—16), p. 75 ff. (with "Notes" by the Translator p. 106 ff. and 4) E. HULTZSCH, "Contributions to Singhalese Chronology", JRAS. 1913, p. 517 ff.¹

I mention further 5) H. W. COCHRAN, "A Short History of Ceylon" where on p. xxi there is a "Note on the Chronology of Ceylon" which deserves attention.

The numerous single investigations particularly those in the JRAS. C. B. will be quoted in their place. Their authors are: P. E. PIERIS, E. W. PERERA, S. DE SILVA, B. GUNASEKERA, H. O. P. BELL, E. R. ATKIN, H. W. COCHRAN etc.

The two first named articles (S. and WICK.) start as I did myself in the translation of the Mahāvamsa from FLEET's date of 483 B. C. for the Nirvana of Buddha. Even if this date is not absolutely exact — arguments are advanced for the year 487 B. C. — it is as well to retain it for the moment. Now WICKREMASINGHE, *EEZ.* I. p. 155 ff., has proved that even in

¹ I quote the above articles as follows: 1) = S., 2) = WICK., 3) = L., 4) = H. with the page number (in the case of 3 that of the English translation).

Ceylon itself there are traces of an era starting from 483 B. C. whereas later, almost certainly in the 7th century, 544/3 B.C. was adopted as the year of the Nirvana. Thus the most important thing is to find out the point in the chronology of Ceylon where the transition from the one era to the other takes place, where consequently we find an excess of 61 years.

SENAVERATNE (p. 143)¹ goes farthest in his assumption that the era of B. C. 483 was in use up to the close of the 15th century when a reform of the calendar took place, 544 B. C., being adopted as the year of Buddha's death, 93 instead of 61 years being erroneously added. At the same time the Śaka era (78/9 A. D.) was dated back 93 years. Later, about the 18th century, with a new reform of the calendar, the Buddha era was adjusted to the difference of 61 years. S. gets rid of the surplus number by the assumption that several of the kings' names handed down by tradition for the 15th and 16th centuries refer to the same person, that others are the names of co-regents, while many are mere inventions. Parakkamabāhu VI. is identical with Parakkamabāhu IX., Bhuvanekabāhu VI. with Bh. VII., while Parakkamabāhu VII. and VIII. never existed (p. 176—177).

SENAVERATNE defends his thesis with great acumen and extraordinary learning. But against it there is a series of synchronisms by which we can prove that the era 544/3 must be much older than S. assumes. Moreover the simultaneous alteration of the Śaka era is very unlikely. For this and other reasons SENAVERTNE's hypothesis was rejected during the discussion following his lecture on the subject. In spite of all the weakness and untrustworthiness of Sinhalese chronology, WICKHEMASINGHE is nevertheless right in taking up a more conservative attitude towards its tradition.

One cause of great uncertainty also lies in the fact that in our calculations we have to rely for the most part on the

¹ See also the detailed analysis of SENAVERTNE's hypothesis by C. SCHREINMAKER in "Ceylon zur Zeit der Könige Bhuvaneka Bāhu und Franz Xavers 1539—1552" by C. SCHREINMAKER and E. A. VORRETSCH I. (1938), p. 67 ff.

figures for the reigns of the individual kings. Here we cannot rule out the possibility that many of these reigns were at least partly contemporaneous, that it is a case of simultaneous or of joint reigns. But the means for establishing this in individual cases are wanting. We have of course to do also with round numbers. When it is e. g. said that such and such a king reigned 12 years, possibly a few extra months have been thrown in. The sum total of such additions produces however, considerable inexactitude.

The main point however, is that our sources often differ more or less in their statements regarding the length of the various reigns, that for many of the kings in the *Cūḍavamsa* and other documents figures are wanting altogether or can only be obtained approximately by calculation.

Matters are better, at least in my opinion, with the single dates for certain of the more important events, especially those starting with Buddha's Nirvāṇa. I do not deny that some of these dates may have been got at by the authors by the simple process of adding up the years of the reigns. Nevertheless I have the impression that there was a limited number of dates which rested on ancient tradition and had as their starting-point the year of Buddha's death¹. There are already traces of something like a Buddha era in the *Dīpavamsa* and the *Mahāvamsa*, as for instance, when it is said in *Dīp.* 17. 78, that Devānampiyatissa was crowned 236 years after Buddha's entry into Nirvāṇa. Or again when in both chronicles (*Dīp.* 6. 1. *Mhvs.* 5, 21) there is the remark that 218 years had elapsed between the Nirvāṇa and the coronation of Asoka.

It is possible that in later times a chronological system was constructed out of these individual dates to which the reigns of the kings were adjusted, not of course without some violence. Then a new confusion arose when at a certain time

¹ I regard also the statement in *Mhvs.* 31. 80 f., that the Abhayagiri-vihāra was founded 217 years, 10 months and 10 days after the Mahāvihāra as an ancient tradition, though it rests on a different basis. A figure so exact cannot be obtained by mere addition.

through a misunderstanding the cause of which we do not know, the Nirvana of the Buddha was dated back 61 years. At some point or other in the list of the kings this number must be allowed for. Then it is an open question — granted an ancient tradition — whether in converting these single dates into the Christian era we are to start from 483 B. C. or 544/3 B. C.

In the face of all this uncertainty it is advisable in our chronological investigations to rely chiefly on foreign testimony regarding the history of Ceylon. There are above all the synchronisms afforded by Chinese annals and South Indian inscriptions. Then we have the confirmatory evidence of Sinhalese inscriptions, especially those of the mediæval and modern times. Subsidiary to these are the single dates. The skeleton framed by this "foreign testimony" is indeed meagre in the extreme and the evidence is unequally distributed. A good deal remains doubtful. The blame lies partly in the method of description of the *Cūlavamsa* which conceals so much that to us seems particularly important. What a pity, for instance, that it has nothing to say about the relations with China which would seem to have been not inconsiderable. The name of China is not even once mentioned.

I come now to the fine and careful work of WICKERMANN. When I wrote the preface to Vol. I. of my translation of the *Cūlavamsa* in which I promised an introduction to the chronology for Vol. II., I had not then seen W.'s "Chronological Table of Ceylon Kings" (EZ. III, p. 1 ff.). Later I had doubts whether a treatment of the same subject by myself might not be superfluous. I think, however, that readers of my translation will be glad to have at hand a list of the kings with their more or less probable dates. They will also like to have a more or less comprehensive survey of the material on which our calculations rest.

One thing more. Wickr. makes no attempt at reconciling the two chronological computations of 483 B. C. and 544/3 B. C. He is apparently convinced that this is at present impossible and wishes to avoid increasing the uncertainty by a new and

again uncertain chronology. In converting into the Christian era he starts as far No. 76 (Kumārādhātusena)¹ from 483 B. C. Up to No. 94 (Dappōla I.) he places the two computations side by side. From No. 95 (Dāḥopatissa I.) up to the interregnum after No. 124 (Mahinda V.) he places the figures of the first computation in brackets, thus treating them as less probable and from No. 125 (Kassapa = Vikkamabhūta I.) he follows only the era of 544 B. C.

Here I venture a step farther. I believe namely that the change of the era falls in the earliest period of the Cūlavamsa, that is at the close of the 4th century A. D. Here accordingly is the period where we must allow for the excess of 61 years.

My theory stands and falls with the identity of Ts'a-li Mo-ho-nan of the Chinese annals (L. 83, 89) with King Mahānāma, No. 5 (63). Mo-ho-nan, so it is said, sent a letter, with gifts in the year 428 A. D. to the Chinese Court. This seems to contradict another notice from Chinese sources quoted by L. 75 according to which a king of Ceylon Chi-mi-ki-a-po-mo (that is Śrī Meghavarmā) sent an embassy to the Indian King San-moon-to-lo-kiu-to (that is Samudragupta) asking permission to build a monastery at Bodhi Gayā as shelter for pilgrims from Ceylon. The Sinhalese king Śrī Meghavarmā is without doubt Sirimeghavappa, No. 1 (59) the first ruler of the so-called Little Dynasty. Samudragupta reigned from 326 — (about) 375 A. D. According to the traditional chronology the reign of Sirimeghavappa is reckoned from 362—389 A. D.

But the Cūlavamsa reckons 79—80 years from the death of Sirimeghavappa to Mahānāma's ascent of the throne which would thus occur at the earliest in 468 A. D. And in fact Wick. 12 gives the date of 468-490 for Mahānāma's reign. But how does this agree with the other notice giving the year 428 for Mahānāma's embassy?²

¹ This — not Kumārādhātusena — is of course the right form of the name. The *dh* is merely periphrastic, "the Dhātusena who begins with Kumāra". See my Transl., note to II. 35, 44. 6.

² I have pointed out the discrepancy *Mhvs. Transl.* p. XI., note 2

WEEREMASINGHE tries to solve the difficulty by saying: "This (i. e. the embassy) may have taken place probably when Mahānāma was a priest wielding power in Upatissa's reign." This argument is refuted by the fact that Mo-ho-nan is distinctly described as a Ts'a-li, i. e. kshatriya, as king.

The solution of the problem must be sought elsewhere. Both Chinese notices are right, but the numbers given in the Sinhalese sources for the reigns of Sirimeghavanna up to Mahānāma are wrong. Their sum total is 129 to 130 years, but they have been expanded about 60 or 61 years in order to reconcile the old era of 483 B. C. with the new one of 514/3.

It is just here indeed that the traditional dates give the impression of artificial expansion. Buddhādāsa and his two sons (Nos. 61-63) are given a reign of 92/3 years! According to the Rajavaliya they even reigned 142 years! These are fantastic figures. Possibly my theory may throw a new light on 37. 100. Suppose we assume that Sirimeghavanna's reign after 362 A. D. was considerably shorter, that perhaps a great part of the 27/8 years allotted to it falls within the period when he was reigning along with Mahāsena or as his rival, we might perhaps follow the reading of the MSS. S. 5, 6, 7 *bhata* (not *bhata*) *tassa hanñhako* according to which we should translate: "his youngest brother, Jetthatisa, still a youth, hereupon raised the umbrella of dominion in Laṅkā." It is in any case only very reluctantly that I have decided to depart from the original text.

Be that as it may, if the Chinese notices and the hypothesis I have built on them are right, we must shorten the period between Mahāsena's death and that of Mahānāma by 60 to 61 years and this gives us for Mahānāma's death the year 430 or 431 A. D. Mahānāma, if we keep to the 22 years ascribed to him by tradition, would have reigned from 409—431 A. D.

It is impossible to determine individually how the reigns of Mahānāma's predecessors were distributed. I pointed out above that we might already begin shortening these with Sirimeghavappa. Upatissa with his 42 years may be discarded entirely, it seems to me, or at least but a very small portion of his reign be allowed to stand. He may be purely fictitious or perhaps a prince who reigned along with his father and either never came to the throne himself or if so, only for a short period. Here above all when the transition from the one era to the other had been effected, there set in those efforts to adjust the balance by manipulation of the figures.

There is one thing I should like finally to point out. If we go back for the change of the era to Sirimeghavappa and his immediate successors there is an inherent probability in this. It coincides with the transition from the Mahāvamsa to the Cūlavamsa. That we have here a significant breach in the history of Ceylon, a powerful reaction in favour of the Theravāda after a period of decline can scarcely be disputed.

LIST OF SINHALESE KINGS

I have made my own list of the kings of the Cūlavamsa, but have added WICKREMISINGHE's figures in brackets. Where former lists differ from my own this has also been indicated in brackets. Thus for instance, (166. Vijayabāhu VI.) means that this king (Cūlava. ed. II. 656 f.) is wanting in my list. — Udaya I. (Dappula II.) means that the king whom I call Udaya I. appears elsewhere as Dappula II.

ABBREVIATIONS:

- M. = Mahāvamsa or from No. 59 onwards Cūlavamsa.
 Br. = Rājāvaliṃ (published and translated by B. GUNASEKARA.)
 Pr. = Pūjāvaliṃ (A Contribution to the History of Ceylon, extracted from the Pūjāvaliṃ, Colombo 1893).
 Ns. — Nikāyasamgrahaya (ed. WICKREMISINGHE).
 Rr. — Rājantatūkaraṃ (ed. SĀDHANANDA, Colombo 1887).
 Nar. = Narendracaritāvalokanapradīpikā as quoted by WICKREMISINGHE.

Figures in italics denote that we have to do with fictitious numbers, whereas the others rest on more or less probable calculation. Figures in bold type are single traditional dates and chiefly those from non-Sinhalese sources or from inscriptions which serve to confirm the chronology of the Mahāvamsa.

The figures in the last column refer to the notes following the list of the kings.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
1. Mahāvamsa					
1. Vijaya	38	38	38	483-445 B.C.	1
Interregnum	1		1	445-444	
2. Paṇḍurāsadeva	30	32	30	444-414	
3. Abhaya	20	22	20	414-394	2
Interregnum	17				
4. Paṇḍukūbhaya	70	70	70	394-307	
(5. Gaṇātissa)		40			
6. Muṭasa	60	60	60	307-247	
7. Devānampiyatissa	40	40	40	247-207	
8. Uttiya	10	?	10	207-197	
9. Mahāsiva	10	?	10	197-187	
10. Sūratissa ¹⁾	10	10	10	187-177	
11. Sena					
12. Guttika	22	22	22	177-155	
13. Asoka ²⁾	10	10	10	155-145	
14. Māva	44	44	44	145-101	
15. Devānagāmaṇi	24	24	24	101-77	
16. Saddhātissa	18	37	18	77-59	
17. Tishāthana	— 1 10	1 8	1 — 10	59	
18. Lāṇḍātissa ³⁾	9 — 15	39	9 8 15	59-50	
19. Kāḷāṅga	6		6	50-43	
20. Vātthagāmaṇi	— 5	— 5	— 5	43	
21. Pūḷatāṭha					
22. Bāhiya					
23. Paṇḍuśāra	14 7	14	3 7	43-29	
24. Piliyasaṇḍa					
25. Dāṭhika					
(26.) Vātthagāmaṇi	12	12	12	29-17	3
26. Mahācōḷimahātissa	14	50	14	17-3	
27. Coruṅga	12		12	3 B. C. — 9 A. D.	4
28. Tissa	8	3	3	9-12 A. D.	

¹⁾ Rv. mentions two sons of Devānampiyatissa, 1) Sūratissa, 2) Upatissa, each of whom reigned 10 years. It then says that in the days of King Uttiya two usurpers seized the power and reigned 22 years.

²⁾ As to the chronological difficulties regarding Asoka see Wick. p. 5, n. 1.

³⁾ Rv. calls the successor of Tulaṅga King Lāṇḍātissa who had slain him and reigned 39 years. Then it passes on the Vātthagāmaṇi. The Pv. also calls Tula's successor Lāṇḍātissa.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
29. Anulā	4 3 —	3 4 —	5 2 —	12—16 A. D.	
30. Kuṣakaputissa	22 — —	22 — —	22 — —	16—38	
31. Bhāṭikābhaya	23 — —	19 — —	19 — —	38—66	
32. Mahādābhikama- bhūga	12 — —	12 — —	12 — —	67—79	
33. Amavajagāmaṇi	9 8 —	9 — —	9 8 —	79—89	
34. Kuṇḍujūṇṭissa	3 — —	. . .	3 — —	89—92	
35. Cālābhaya	1 — —	. . .	1 — —	92—93	
36. Sivaṇi	— 4 —	. . .	— 4 —	93	
37. Hanūga ¹⁾	9 — —	. . .	6 — —	93—102	
38. Candamukhasiva	8 7 —	. . .	8 7 —	103—112	
39. Vasudābhikṣita	7 8 —	. . .	7 8 —	112—120	
40. Subharaṇa	6 — —	. . .	6 — —	120—126	
41. Vasabha	44 — —	44 — —	44 — —	127—171	
42. Vasudābhikṣita	3 — —	3 — —	3 — —	171—174	
43. Gaṇabāhugāmaṇi	22 — —	24 — —	22 — —	174—196	
44. Mahallanāga	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	196—203	
45. Bhāṭikṣita	24 — —	24 — —	24 — —	203—227	
46. Kanīṭhātissa	13 — —	. . .	13 — —	227—245	
47. Kuṇḍjanāga ²⁾	2 — —	. . .	2 — —	245—246	
48. Kuṇḍanāga	1 — —	20 — —	1 — —	248—249	
49. Siraṇa I.	19 — —	. . .	19 — —	249—268	
50. Vohāṭikṣita	22 — —	22 — —	22 — —	269—291	
51. Abhayaṇāga	8 — —	2 — —	8 — —	291—299	
52. Siraṇa II.	2 — —	2 — —	2 — —	300—302	
53. Vijayakumāra	1 — —	6 — —	1 — —	302—303	
54. Saṃghatissa	4 — —	4 — —	4 — —	303—307	
55. Siraṃghabodhi	2 — —	?	2 — —	307—308	
56. Gaṇabāhaya	13 — —	13 — —	13 — —	309—323	
57. Jeṭṭhatissa I.	10 — —	10 — —	10 — —	323—333	
58. Mahāsena	27 — —	24 — —	27 — —	334—361/2 362	5

¹⁾ Wickramasinghe is I think, wrong when he says on p. 8 that I had overlooked the fact that Hanūga was deposed in the first year of his reign by the Lambakanna. I inserted the three years (Mhv. 35, 27) dominion of the Lambakanna Mhv. Transl. p. xxvii, last line, as "interregnum". When W. takes the round figure of 10 years for the interregnum + Hanūga's reign, I can only approve.

²⁾ According to Rv. Bhāṭikṣita's successors were: 1) Kuṇḍanū (20 years), 2) Vōraṭissa (22 years), 3) Abūasa (2 years). Then Siraṇā (= No. 52) reigned 2 years.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Mv.	Pv.		
2. Cūlavamsa					
1. (59.) Sīrimoghavamsa	28c — —	28 — —	28 — —	502-400 412	6
2. (60.) Jetṭhatissa II.	9 — —	10 — —	9 — —		7
3. (61.) Buddhādāsa	29c — —	30 — —	29 — —		
4. (62.) Upatissa I.	42 — —	42 — —	42 — —	409-431 428	8
5. (63.) Mahāsāsa	22 — —	20 — —	22 — —		
6. (64.) Sattḥisena	— — 1	— — 1	— — 1			431
7. (65.) Chintagūḥaka	1c — —	1 — —	1 — —	431-432	9
8. (66.) Mitalasena	1 — —	6 — —	1 — —	432-433	
9. (67.) Paṇḍu ¹⁾					
10. (68.) Parinda					10, 11
11. (69.) Khuddapārisinḥa	27 — —	. . .	27 — —	433-460	
12. (70.) Thiritaṇa					
13. (71.) Dāṭṭhiya					9
14. (72.) Pīṭhiya					
15. (73.) Dhātusena ²⁾	18 — —	18 — —	18 — —	460-478	
16. (74.) Kāsapa I. ³⁾	16c — —	16 — —	16 — —	478-496	10, 11
17. (75.) Moggallāna I.	18c — —	18 — —	18 — —	496-513	
18. (76.) Kumārādīnātāsena	9c — —	9 — —	9 — —	513-522 515	
19. (77.) Kittisena ³⁾	— 9 —	9 — —	— 9 —	522	10, 11
20. (78.) Sīra I.	— — 25	25 — —	— — 25	522	
21. (79.) Upatissa II. ⁴⁾	1 6 —	1 10 —	1 6 —	522-524	
22. (80.) Silākūla	13c — —	13 — —	13 — —	524-537 527	10, 11
23. (81.) Dāṭṭhāpabbuti	— 6 6 —	— 6 —	— 6 —	537	
24. (82.) Moggallāna II.	20c — —	20 — —	20 — —	537-556	
25. (83.) Kittisirimoghha	— — 19	19 — —	19 — —	556	

¹⁾ For Nos. 9-14 (67-72) Pv. has also 27 years.

²⁾ Rr. has the same number of years.

³⁾ I do not think that Wickr. is right when he follows Rv. in giving 9 years instead of nine months to No. 19 (77). There are other instances of the Sinhalese sources giving years instead of the months or days of the Mhva. (No. 20, 25, 30, people being accustomed to reckon by years. We have no example of the reverse. Moreover with regard to No. 19 (77) Pv. agrees with the Mhva. It seems to me that it is only in cases where both Pv. and Rv. together are against the Mhva. that weight attaches to their statements. Wickr.'s reference to the reading assumption in § 5 is no help. It is so isolated in comparison with the other MSS. that it is clearly a mere slip of the scribe.

⁴⁾ According to Nar. 2 y. 6 m.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Re.	Pe.		
26. (81a) Mahāsāga	3c — —	3 — —	3 — —	556-559	
— (81b) Lāmāni Singānā	. . .	3 — —	3 — —	559-568	
27. (85.) Aggabodhi I.	31c — —	30 — —	31 — —	568-601	
28. (86.) Aggabodhi II.	10c — —	10 — —	10 — —	601-611	609 12
29. (87.) Samphalissa	. . .	— 2 —	— 2 —	611	
30. (88.) Moggallāna III.	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	611-617	
31. (89.) Sīlāmeghavaraya	9 — —	9 — —	9 — —	617-626	
32. (90.) Aggabodhi III. SSB.		16 — —	16 — —		
33. (91.) Jetthathissa III.		— 5 —	— 5 —		
Aggabodhi IV.	16c — —	. . .	. . .	626-641	
34. (92.) Dāthopatiya I.		12 — —	12 — —		
35. (93.) Kassapa II.	9 — —	9 — —	9 — —	641-650	
36. (94.) Dappula I. ¹⁾	— 7 —	10 — —	3 3 —	650	
37. (95.) Dāthopatiya II.	9c — —	9 — —	9 — —	650-658	13
38. (96.) Aggabodhi IV. SSB.	16c — —	16 — —	16 — —	658-674	
39. (97.) Datta ²⁾	2 ³⁾ — —	10 — —	2 — —	674-676	
40. (98.) Hatthadāṭṭha	— 6 — —	— 6 — —	— 6 — —	676	
41. (99.) Mānassamma	. . .	35 — —	35 — —	676-711	
42. (100.) Aggabodhi V.	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	711-717	
43. (101.) Kassapa III.	. . .	7 — —	7 — —	717-724	718 14
44. (102.) Mahinda I.	3 — —	8 — —	8 — —	724-727	
45. (103.) Aggabodhi VI. SMV.	40c — —	40 — —	40 — —	727-766	742 15
46. (104.) Aggabodhi VII.	6 — —	6 — —	6 — —	766-772	
47. (105.) Mahinda II. SMV.	20 — —	20 — —	20 — —	772-792	
48. (106.) Udaya I.	5 — —	5 — —	5 — —	792-797	
(Dappula II.)					
49. (107.) Mahinda III. SMV.	4 — —	7 — —	4 — —	797-801	
50. (108.) Aggabodhi VIII.	11 — —	11 — —	11 — —	801-812	
51. (109.) Dappula II. (III.)	16 — —	12 — —	16 — —	812-828	
52. (110.) Aggabodhi IX.	8 — —	. . .	3 — —	828-831	
53. (111.) Sena I. SMV.	20 — —	. . .	20 — —	831-851	
54. (112.) Sena II.	35c — —	35 — —	36 — —	851-885	
55. (113.) Udaya II. (I.)	11 — —	40 — —	11 — —	885-896	
56. (114.) Kassapa IV. SSB.	17 — —	. . .	17 — —	896-913	16
57. (115.) Kassapa V. SMV.	10c — —	6 — —	6 — —	913-923	918 17
58. (116.) Dappula III. (IV.)	— 7 —	— 7 —	— 7 —	923	
59. (117.) Dappula IV. (V.) SMV.	12c — —	12 — —	12 — —	923-931	

¹⁾ The Mha. does not count the three years' reign in Rohana.

²⁾ According to Nar. No. 99 (97) reigned 2 y. 6 m.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
60. (118.) Udaya III. (II.)	32 — —	8 — —	3 — —	934—937	
61. (119.) Senna III. 4	9 c — —	9 — —	5 — —	937—946	
62. (120.) Udaya IV. (II.)	8 c — —	8 — —	8 — —	946—958	948 18
63. (121.) Senna IV.	3 — —	3 — —	3 — —	958—956	
64. (122.) Mahinda IV. SSB.	10 c — —	12 — —	10 — —	956—972	969 19
65. (123.) Senna V.	10 c — —	10 — —	10 — —	972—981	
66. (124.) Mahinda V. Interregnum	12 — —	48 — —	48 — —	981—1029	1017 20
67. (125.) Vikramabāhu I. (Kassapa)	12 c — —	12 — —	12 — —	1029—1041	
68. (126.) Kitti	— — 7	. . .	. . .	1041	
69. (127.) Mahāśāsakitti	3 c — —	3 — —	3 — —	1041—1044	
70. (128.) Vikramapagga	1 — —	3 — —	3 — —	1044—1047	1046 21
71. (129.) Jaguttipāla	4 — —	1 — —	4 — —	1047—1051	
72. (130.) Parakkamapagga I.	2 — —	6 — —	1 — —	1051—1053	
73 a. (131.) Loka (Lokissara)	6 c — —	. . .	6 — —	1053—1059	
73 b. (132.) Kassapa 2	— 6 — —	. . .	. . .	1059	
74. (133.) Vijayaabāhu I. SSB	55 — —	80 — —	54 — —	1059—1114	22
75. (134.) Jayabāhu I.	1. . .	9 — —	13 — —	1114—1116	
76. (135.) Vikramabāhu II. (I.)	21 — —	26 — —	26 — —	1116—1137	
77. (136.) Gajabāhu II. (I.)	22 — —	. . .	. . .	1137—1153	
78. (137.) Parakkamabāhu I. SSB.	33 — —	32 — —	33 — —	1153—1196	23
79. (138.) Vijayabāhu II.	1 — —	. . .	1 — —	1196—1197	
80. (139.) Mahinda VI.	— — 5	— — 5	— — 6	1197	
81. (140.) Nissankamalla	0 — —	9 — —	9 — —	1197—1196	
82. (141.) Vīrabāhu I.	— — 1	. . .	— — 1	1196	
83. (142.) Vikramabāhu III. (II.)	— 9 — —	— 9 — —	— 3 — —	1196	
84. (143.) Coṭṭagaṅga	— 9 — —	— 9 — —	— 9 — —	1196—1197	

¹⁾ In Rājāv. the sequence of Nos. 59—65 (117—124) is as follows: 1. Dappula 12 y. (evidently = No. 59, Dappula IV.), 2. Udā 8 y., 3. Sen 3 y., 4. Udā 3 y., 5. Sen 9 y., 6. Sen 9 y., 7. Midelsalā 12 y., 8. Salamevan 10 y. (= No. 65), 9. Mahinda 48 y. (= Mahinda V. No. 66). — Pūjāv. has 1. Dappula 12 y., 2. Udā 3 y., 3. Sen 3 y., 4. Udā 3 y., 5. Sen 9 y., 6. Sen 3 y., 7. Midelsalā 16 y., 8. Salamevan 10 y., 9. Mahinda 48 y.

²⁾ Having regard to Mhva. 57. 66 and 74, it is advisable to insert the Ka. sādhiṭṭasāyaka Kassapa as a distinct sovereign after Loka.

³⁾ Rājāv. and Pūjāv. do not mention Gajabāhu at all as king.

	Length of reign			Date	Notes
	M.	Rv.	Pv.		
85. (144.) Lihavati ¹⁾	3	—	3	1197—1200	
86. (145.) Śūhasamalla	2	—	2	1200—1202	1200 24
87. (146.) Kalyāṇavati ²⁾	6	—	6	1202—1208	
88. (147.) Dharmasāśoka	1	—	1	1208—1209	
89. (148.) Anikaśiṇa	—	17	—	1209	
Lihavati ³⁾	1	—	1	1209—1210	
90. (149.) Lokissara (II.)	—	9	—	1210—1211	
Lihavati ⁴⁾	—	7	—	1211	
91. (150.) Parakkamaśreya II.	3	—	3	1211—1214	
92. (151.) Māgha	21	—	21	1214—1235	
93. (152.) Vijayabāhu III.	4	—	24	1232—1236	
94. (153.) Parakkamabāhu II.	36	—	32	1246—1271	1246 25
95. (154.) Vijayabāhu IV.	3	—	—	1271—1273	
96. (155.) Bhuvanekabāhu I.	11	—	—	1273—1284	1283 26
97. (156.) Parakkamabāhu III.	—	—	—	1284—1291	
98. (157.) Bhuvanekabāhu II. ⁵⁾	—	—	—	1291—1292	
99. (158.) Parakkamabāhu IV. ⁶⁾	—	—	—	1302—1346	
100. (159.) Bhuvanekabāhu III.	—	—	—		
101. (160.) Vijayabāhu V.	—	—	—		
102. (161.) Bhuvanekabāhu IV.	—	—	—	1346—1353	1354/1 27
103. (162.) Parakkamabāhu V.	—	—	—	1348—1360	1354/60 28
104. (163.) Vikramabāhu I. (III.)	—	—	—	1347—1375	1360/1 29
105. (164.) Bhuvanekabāhu V.	20	—	—	1360—1391	1385 30
106. (165.) Virabāhu II.	—	—	—	1391—1397	1396 31
(166. Vijayabāhu VI.)	—	—	—		1405—14 32
(167. Parakkamabāhu)	—	—	—		
107. (168.) Parakkamabāhu VI	62	—	—	1410—1468	33
SSII.					
108. (169.) Jayabāhu II.	—	—	—	1468—1473	
109. (170.) Bhuvanekabāhu VI.	7	—	—	1473—1480	1475 34
110. (171.) Parakkamabāhu VII.	—	—	—	1480—1484	
111. (172.) Parakkamabāhu VIII.	—	20	—	1484—1503	
(173. Parakkamabāhu IX.)	—	22	—	1500—1529	35

¹⁾ The first time Lihavati reigned along with Kittī, the second time with Vikramācamaññakka, finally alone.

²⁾ Along with Ayasmantha Candaṇḍī.

³⁾ Reigned according to Br. 24 years. According to Injalakārita (Wickes Nos. 97 and 93 (156 and 157) reigned at times together. Wickes reckons the sum total of their reigns at 16 years.

⁴⁾ Wickes reckons the beginning of the reign as 1303 A. D.

	Length of reign			Date	No.
	M.	Rv.	P.		
112. (174.) Vijayabāhu VI. (VII.)	.	187	—	1509—1521	36
113. (175.) Dharmapālābāhu VII.	.	21	—	1521—1550	37
114. (175 d) Viravikkrama ¹⁾	.	157	—	1549—?	38
115. (176 a) Māyādhanu ¹⁾	.	70	—	1521—1581	39
(176. Dharmapāla)	.	.	.	1551—1597	
116. (177.) Rājāsīha I.	.	.	.	1581—1593	
117. (178.) Vimaladharmasuriya I.	.	13	—	1592—1604	
118. (179.) Senāratana	7	—	25	1604—1635	
119. (180.) Rājāsīha II.	52	—	.	1635—1687	
120. (181.) Vimaladharmasuriya II.	22	—	.	1687—1707	
121. (182.) Viraparakramasuriyasīha	34	—	.	1707—1739	
122. (183.) Sīrirājavarāsīha	8	—	.	1739—1747	
123. (184.) Kīlāsiyirāsīha	35	—	.	1747—1782	40
124. (185.) Sīrirājadhīrāsīha	18	—	.	1780—1799	
125. (186.) Sīriviṭṭamarāsīha	18	—	.	1793—1815	

¹⁾ In the middle of the 16th century a number of princes reigned at the same time in different parts of the Island. The most eminent of these was Māyādhanu, the Māyādhanu of Rv. The Viravikkrama of Mhva. 92. 6 is probably identical with Karmāra Rāyādāra (Rv.). In addition to these Jayavīra Rāyādāra who wielded power in the Highlands and Rājāsīha or Ruyigam Rāyādāra are mentioned as contemporaries.

Residences

1. Mahāvamsa: Nr. 1: Tambapanni. — Nr. 2, 9: Upatissagāma (40. 52). — Nr. 4—58: Anurādhapura.
2. Cūlaravamsa: Nr. 1 (59)—15 (74): Anurādhapura. — Nr. 16 (74): Sībhagiri. — Nr. 17 (75)—65 (120): Anurādhapura [Palatthinagara temporary residence of Nr. 46 (104) and Nr. 63 (111); Palatthinagara and Rohana of Nr. 65 (123)]. — Nr. 67 (126)—73 b (132): Rohana. — Nr. 74 (133)—92 (151): Palatthinagara. — Nr. 93 (152): Jambuddhū. — Nr. 94 (153): Jambuddhū (Palatthinagara 88. 29 ff.). — Nr. 95 (154): Palatthinagara. — Nr. 96 (155): Jambuddhū (Sābhagiri 90. 42). — Nr. 97 (156): Palatthinagara (90. 56). — Nr. 98 (157)—101 (160): MahāSīhagiri. — Nr. 102 (161)—104 (163): Paṅgāsīripura. — Nr. 105 (164)—113 (176): Sīrirājāsīha. — Nr. 114 (176 d): Sīrirājadhama. — Nr. 115 (177 a)—116 (177): Sīrirājāsīha. — Nr. 117 (178)—125 (186): Sīrivuddhanu.



NOTES

1. The first traditional synchronism is that of the landing of Vijaya on the Island with the Nirvana of Buddha. *Mhvs.* 6. 47, *Dip.* 9. 40. It makes the impression of having been purposely invented that the event might thereby have a greater significance. But it would be a mistake if for that reason we were to regard as inventions those single dates referring to later kings (*Devānampiyatissa* and *Vaṭṭagāmaṇi*). For here we start not from Vijaya but only from the Nirvana. But the reigns of the kings between Vijaya and *Devānampiyatissa* seem to have been manipulated in order to obtain the synchronism Vijaya-Nirvana.

2. A seemingly ancient tradition makes *Devānampiyatissa* a contemporary¹ of the Maurya king Asoka. There is no urgent reason for doubting the fact. According to *Dip.* 17. 78, *Devānampiyatissa* was consecrated as king² 236 years (that is in the 737th year) after the Nirvana. This figure corresponds to the sum of the years which according to *Dip.* and *Mhvs.* had elapsed since Vijaya. If we take the date arrived at by Fuxer for Buddha's death — 483 B. C. we get the year 247/6 B. C. as *Devānampiyatissa*'s coronation year and the fact of his being a contemporary of Asoka is confirmed.

3. According to *Ns.*, p. 10¹⁴ *Valagam Abā* came to the throne 439 y. 9 m. 10 d. after the Nirvana³. This gives us 43 B. C. This agrees with the statement of *Mv.* 33. 80 f. as

¹ For further details of my transl. *Mhvs.*, introd. p. xxxi ff.

² Also in *Ns.*, p. 2¹⁵.

³ Cf. also *WZ.* II. 205.

to the foundation of the Abhaya-vihāra'. According to the statement in Mhvs. the foundation took place 217 y. 10 m. 10 d. after that of the Mahāvihāra the date of which is, according to FLEER, in May 246. Therefore the Abhayagiri-vihāra was founded in March 28 B. C., after Vaṭṭagāmaṇi had regained the kingdom.

4. According to Rv. a famine called *bhūmijī-satya* took place under Coraṇūga and lasted three years.¹ This is said to have coincided with the beginning of the Saka era 78 A. D. = 622 A. R. The statement cannot be reconciled with the other events of the chronology. It would seem that the tradition about this famine was uncertain, for it is placed by Pv. 19² in the reign of Vaṭṭagāmaṇi.

5. For the end of the reign of Mahāsena and therewith of the so-called Great Dynasty Rv. and Rr. agree in giving 814 y. (? Pv. 846) 9 m. 25 d. after the Nirvana. Ns. 14¹² reckons the beginning of the reign as 818 A. R., so that with a reign of 27 years the end would fall in 845 A. R. 'This' seems to me in fact one of those single dates which rest on a sure traditional basis. This is also easy to understand. The tradition was that of the Bhikkhus of the Mahāvihāra and for them the death of Mahāsena meant the end of a period of persecution and the beginning of a new period of prosperity. In Mhvs. text, p. xxxviii I have calculated the year of Mahāsena's death as 352 A. D. The difference between it and that of Wickr. and S. can be adjusted by assuming that the round numbers of a reign usually include some extra months.

6. I refer the reader to the Chinese account mentioned on p. V which makes Śīrimeghavarṇa a contemporary of the Indian king Samudragupta (326-375 A. D.).

7. Fa-hian comes to Ceylon 411-412 A. D. A thera mentioned by him is perhaps identical with the Mahādhammakathin named in Mhvs. 37, 175 (cf. note to the passage) as living

¹ See Mhvs. transl., p. xxxiv f.

² Cf. also SCHREINER, JRAS. C. P. xviii, No. 67 (1914), p. 216.

under Buddhādāsa (AYUON, JRAS. 1911, p. 1142). Of course this there may have survived Buddhādāsa, as the chronology seems to indicate.

8. For Mahāsāma's reign Chinese sources furnish us with an exact date A. D. 428. See above p. V ff. For the arrival of Buddhaghosa in the reign of Mahāsāma tradition furnishes us with a date which assuming 544/3 as the year of the Nirvana, yields 412/3 A. D.

9. For Kumāradhātusena's (Kumārdās) reign a Chinese notice mentioned by T'ANGSAY¹ will serve. It says: "In the year 515 on the occasion of Kunnra Das raising the chatto, an envoy was despatched with tribute to China." Unfortunately T'ANGSAY does not state whether the name of the Sinhalese king is mentioned in the Chinese account. Possibly it is a deduction of his own. At any rate according to my own calculation, the year 515 would fall in the beginning of the reign of Kumāradhātusena.

10. A farther Chinese notice quoted by L. (see p. 91 f.) offers difficulties. According to this, an embassy of the Sinhalese king Kia-che Kia-lo-ha-li-ya brought tribute to the Chinese Court in the yr. 537 A. D. As a rule Kia-che is the transcription of the name Kassapa. But it is impossible that this could be Kassapa I, since he reigned before Kumāradhātusena (see note 9). S. LEVI has already pointed out that the second name Kia-lo-ha-li-ya might refer to Silākāla (Ambaherapa Salamewan). It should be noted too, that Silākāla was the son-in-law of Upatissa II. (III.) and that according to Mhrs. 41. 8 ff., this king had a son called Kassapa who was Silākāla's most dangerous rival. It might therefore be assumed that the Chinese account had confused these two persons or that the Sinhalese tradition had made out of one Kassapa Silākāla two individuals.

11. For Silākāla we have one more single date handed down in the Ns. p. 17²³: 1088 A. B. = 544/5 A. D. Accord-

¹ Ceylon, 2nd ed. I, p. 896.

ing to Wicr. this date refers to the introduction of the *Vetulla Canon* (*dharmadhatu*)¹ which according to Na., Rr. and Mhrs., took place in the twelfth year of the king's reign. This does not quite agree with our chronology, for according to Na. the beginning of Sīlākā's reign would fall in 532/3 A. D. (instead of 524)². If we might assume an error in the tradition and read 1080 instead of 1088 A. B. there would be complete agreement.

12. According to Mhrs. 42. 44 ff., the king of Kālīnga came to Ceylon in the reign of Aggabodhi II. and entered the Order under the guidance of the Thera Jotipāla. According to H. W. Conington (HC. p. 35, 51) this king of Kālīnga had been driven out by Pulakesin II. of the Cūlukya dynasty who had seized the kingdom of Kālīnga. This took place according to Jouveau-Demergil, 669 A. D. This year must therefore fall within the reign of Aggabodhi II.

13. According to Mhrs. 47. 33 ff., Mānavamma tries in vain to wrest the dominion over Ceylon from King Dāṭhapatissa II. He is helped in this by his friend Narasiṃha at whose court in Jambudīpa he had taken refuge. According to H. p. 557, this is the Pallava king Narasimhayarman I. who reigned 630-668 A. D. This enables us to fix an approximate date for Dāṭhapatissa II.

14. From Chinese sources (L.) we know that in the y. 718/9 a Chinese pilgrim Vajrabodhi visited Ceylon and was received with honour by King Chi-li Chi-la. The name of the king as it is given here, may very well be an abbreviation of Siri-Silāmegha(vamma). L. suggests Mānavamma, who also had the *biruda* of Silāmegha. Arceus (Ceylon Notes and Queries II, Jan. 1914, p. xxvii ff.) quite rightly objects to this for chronological reasons. But his own identification with Aggabodhi VI. also offers difficulties with my calculation as well as with that of Wicr. and S. I suggest Kassapa III, No. 43 (101).

¹ See my transl. *Cūlava*, I, note to 41. 37.

² According to Rr. 1038 A. B. = 532 (sic!) after the introduction of Buddha's doctrine, was the date for Sīlākā's ascent of the throne.

As we know, the *biruda* of *Silāmegha* alternates with that of *Sirisamghabodhi*. Since *Kassapa III.* was the second predecessor of *Aggabodhi VI.* who was certainly called *Silāmegha* (*Mhvs.* 48. 42), he is almost sure to have had the same surname, though this may not be expressly stated. All we know of him is that he was a very pious prince (*Mhvs.* 48. 20 ff.).

15. There is no difficulty about the two embassies of King *Chi-lo-mi-kiā* to the Chinese Court in the years 742 and 746. That king was *Aggabodhi VI.* *Silāmegha*, No. 45 (103).

16. Inscriptions of the 1st and 16th years (according to my calculation therefore 896, 912) of the reign of *Kassapa IV.*, No. 56 (114) in *WICKREMASEKERE*, *EZ.* II. 9 ff., I. 200 ff.; *H. C. P. Bell*, *Anurādhapura*, 7th Progress Report 1891 (= *S. P.* xii. 1896) p. 60.

17. According to *Mhvs.* 52. 70 ff., *Kassapa V.* undertakes with the *Pāṇḍyas* an expedition against the *Colas*. It is unsuccessful. There is evidently an allusion to this (*H.* p. 525 f.) in the *Udayāṇḍiram* inscription of the 15th year of the *Coja* king *Parāntaka I.* = 921/2. In it he boasts of his victory over the *Pāṇḍyas* and over an army come from *Laṅkā*. In an inscription, discussed by *Hai BAHADUR VENKAYYA*, of the 12th year of the same king's reign this twofold success is also mentioned.

18. Under *Udaya IV.* (*III.*) No. 62 (120), there was an incursion of the *Colas* into Ceylon who wished to seize the regalia of the *Pāṇḍya* king deposited there under *Dappula IV.* (*V.*) (*Mhvs.* 53. 9, 40 ff.). *Anurādhapura* was taken it is true, but the main object was not attained, as *Udaya* had taken the treasures to *Rohana* for safety. According to *H.* 524 f. this event took place in the last year of the reign of *Parāntaka I.*, and *R. B. VENKAYYA* has proved that it is only in his latest inscriptions of 943/4 to 947/8 that this king calls himself "Conqueror of Ceylon".

19. According to *Mhvs.* 54. 11 ff. the troops of the *Vallabha* king made an unsuccessful incursion into Ceylon under *Ma-*

hinda IV. No. 64 (122). COCHRANES (HC. p. 39, 53) supposes this to be the Coja prince Parāntaka II. whose general was defeated in 960. This date therefore falls in the reign of No. 64 (122).

20. Of Mahinda V. No. 66 (124) it is related in Mhrs. 55. 16 that in the 36th year of his reign the Cojas carried off him, his queen and all his treasure to India. H. 522 ff. assumes that this king was Rājendra-Coja who boasts of having captured the crowns of the king and of the queens of Ceylon. He first mentions the conquest of Ceylon in 1017/8 but not in the inscriptions of the foregoing year. The year 1017 is therefore that of Mahinda's capture.

21. The Coja king Rājādhirājadera relates (H. 520 f.) in an inscription of the year 1046 that he had deprived 4 kings of Ceylon of their crowns: a) Vikramabāhu, b) Vikramapādyo, c) Virasūlamegha and d) Śrīvallabhamadanarāja. This clearly refers to events related in Mhrs. 56. Here the following kings are mentioned as being at war with the Cojas: 1) Vikkama-bāhu, No. 67 (125) — a¹, 2) Kittī, 3) Mahālānakitti, 4) Vikkamapādju — b, 5) Jagatpāla, 6) Parakkama. Of 3, 5, and 6 it is distinctly stated that they were slain in battle with the Cojas, of 4 it is said besides that his crown fell as booty to the Damījas. Nos. 1 and 4 however, whose names are clearly recognizable in Rājādhirāja's inscription, ended otherwise: No. 1 died of a disease, No. 4 in combat with No. 5. Still their crowns may have been among the booty. At any rate the year 1046 falls in that period; the events may have reached their conclusion about 1050.

22. For Vijayabāhu I. No. 74 (133) to Parakkama-bāhu I. No. 78 (137) I refer the reader to WICKREMASINGHE's excellent treatment of the subject in EZ. I, p. 122 ff. and II. 205 ff.

¹ I should now prefer to read in Mhrs. 56. 6 *Devanāgarī* instead of *d*^o and translate "he betook himself to Devanagari (Bondra) and entered the company of the gods."

23. For Parakkamabāhu's campaign against Rāmañña (Mhrs. 76, 10 ff.) cf. H. C. P. Bell, Rep. on the Kégalla Dist., p. 73 ff. It took place in the 12th year of his reign. The Rāmañña prince Bhuvanāditta named in the Devanagula inscription, is identified by Bell with the king Narabaditsi-tsi-thu who reigned 1167—1204 (Phauke, History of Burma, p. 50, 281, 289).

24. The coronation day of Śāhasamalla is the earliest absolutely certain date in Sinhalese history. In the Polonnaruwa inscription of this king (EZ. II, p. 219 ff.) the date given for the event is Wednesday (*badda*), the 12th day of the light half of the month Binera (August-Sept.), after the expiration of 1743 y., 3 m. and 27 days of the Buddha era. FLAHERTY (JRAS. 1909, p. 327, 331) has calculated the date as Wednesday, 23rd August, 1200 A. D.

25. According to the Añjanagaluvāṇṇa Parakkamabāhu II., No. 94 (153), came to the throne in the year 1824 after the Sambodhi = 1779 A. B. = 1235/6 A. D., according to S. 155 = 1296 A. D. (reckoned from 483 B. C., not from 544/3 B. C., as the year of the Nirvana).

26. According to Mhrs. 90, 43 ff. the Tooth Relic came in the reign of Bhuvanekabāhu I., No. 96 (155), into the possession of the Pāṇḍya king Kulasekhara. This king reigned (H.) 1268—1308 A. D. Under Bhuvanekabāhu's successor Parakkamabāhu III. the relic is restored by friendly negotiation. COOMANSDE (JRAS. C. B. xxviii, No. 72, 1919, p. 82 ff.) refers to MAQRIẒI's account of a Sinhalese embassy to the Egyptian Court in the year 1283 A. D. and identifies the name of the Sinhalese king mentioned in the account with that of Bhuvanekabāhu I.

27. For Bhuvanekabāhu IV., No. 102 (161), the Lañkātilaka inscription is important. See B. GUNASEKERA, JRAS. C. B. X, No. 34 (1887) p. 83 ff.; H. C. P. BELL, Kégalla Dist., p. 92; WICKER, 29 f. It gives Śaka 1264 = 1342 A. D. as the year of his ascent of the throne. According to Mhrs. 90, 108 (also Na., Nar.) 1394 A. B. = 1350/1 was the 4th year of his reign,

the beginning of the reign therefore 1346/7. The difference is probably due to the fact that his appointment as yuvarāja took place in the y. 1342, this event being often reckoned as the beginning of the reign. According to COMBES (HC. p. 63) No. 102 (161) reigned at least until 1353/4.

28. Cf. the preceding note also for Parakkamabāhu V., No. 103 (162). According to the Hapugastenne inscription (JHAS. C. B. xii, No. 65, 1912, p. 362) the 11th year of his reign was = Śaka 1281 expired = 1359/60 A. D. The first year of his reign would be accordingly Śaka 1270 = 1348/9 A. D. But at that time No. 102 (161) was reigning and his successor probably yuvarāja. In the Vegiri-devale inscription (WICKA.) Parakkamabāhu V. in 1351/2 still calls himself āpā.

29. The Vigulavatta inscription (H. C. P. Bear., Kōgalla Dist., p. 78) gives Śaka 1282 = 1360/1 A. D. as the 4th year of the reign of Vikkamabāhu IV., (III.) No. 104 (163). His reign would accordingly have begun in Śaka 1278 = 1356/7 A. D. This agrees with the Niyamgampāya inscription (WICKA. 31) which gives the 17th year of his reign as 1316 A. B. = 1373/4 A. D.

30. For Bhuvanekabāhu V., No. 105 (164), we have several dates. Cf. S. 174 f., WICKA. 31 f. The most important are: a) according to Ns. 1929 A. B. = 1385/6 A. D. was the 14th year of his reign which makes 1371/2 that of his coronation. — b) according to Mhvs. 91. 13 (Ns. also) he is succeeded after 20 years (thus in 1391) by Virabāhu. — c) according to the Vegiri-devale inscription, Bh. V. made an endowment in the 30th year of his reign. He must therefore have lived at least 10 years after 1391 and claimed the royal dignity. Mhvs. 91. 13 would not agree with this if we were to assume the reading *kalaka* (not *sāleka* with Col. Ed.); for the passage would then state that only after his (i. e. Bhuvanekabāhu's) death (*nigbhite kālē*) Virabāhu of the Alakesvara family, seized the power.

31. Ns. 30²⁰ Council under the leadership of Dhammakitti 1339 A. B. expired = 1396 A. D.

32. Vijayabāhu VI., No. (160), is not mentioned in the Mhvs. The chronicle ignoring the tragic end of the Alagakkonāras,

jumps over to Parakkama VI. I refer the reader to the note to 91, 3 of my translation. Dates according to L. (JRAS. C. B. xix, No. 68, 1915-6, p. 96 f.): 1405, arrival of the Chinese Tcheng-hou in Ceylon; 1409 Tcheng-hou comes again to Ceylon and carries the king (No. 166) captive to China. The king is set free again in 1411 or 1412, but murdered the night after his return.

33. For Parakkamabāhu VI., No. 107 (168), we have again several dates. The most important are the following: a) ascent of the throne according to Mhva. 91, 15 as well as the inscription of Embekke-devale (H. C. P. Bull., Ceylon Notes and Queries, viii, Dec. 1916, p. cxxxi ff.): 1953 A. B. = 1409/10 A. D.) (according to other sources and to WICK. 2 years or 5 years later). — b) Chinese accounts (in T'ASSAY, Ceylon I, p. 460 f.), that in the year 1459 A. D. a king of Ceylon Pu-la-ko-ma Ba-zae La-cha had for the last time sent tribute to China. The king was evidently No. 107 (168). In the years 1416 and 1421 A. D. it is even related that the King of Ceylon brought the tribute in person.

34. With regard to the date for Bhuvanekabāhu VI., No. 109 (170), the Kalyani inscription of King Rāmādhipati of Pegu is important in that it mentions his embassy to King Bhuvanekabāhu, the son of Parakkamabāhu, in the Śaka year 837¹ = 2019 A. B. = 1476 A. D. Cf. Conussetos, HC. p. 93; 100; Taw Sen Ko, Indian Antiquary xxi, 1893, p. 11 ff., 29 ff. &c.

35. According to the Kelaniya inscription (AIC. No. 162) Parakkamabāhu IX., No. (173), ascended the throne in 2051 A. B.² = 1507/8 A. D. The 12th year of his reign fell according to the Munessaram Sannasa, in 2060 A. B., giving 1504.5 for his ascent of the throne, thus a difference of three years.

36. According to the Dondra inscription (H. C. P. Bull., Ké-galla Dist. p. 85 f.) the Śaka year 1432 = 1510 A. D. fell in the year after the 4th year of the reign of King Vijayabāhu VI.,

¹ Thus according to the modern Burmese era which begins in March 639 A. D. See C. Maues Durr, Chronology of India, p. 51.

² WICK. 42 would prefer to read 2049 (*ekam pañca* instead of *ek* pañca) This would give 1505/6 A. D.

No. 112 (174), his ascent of the throne would fall accordingly in 1505 A. D.

37. P. E. PIERIS, *The Date of Bhuvaneka Bāhu VII.* (JRAS. C. B. III, No. 65, 1912, p. 267 ff.) comes to the conclusion that No. 113 (175) reigned 1521-1551 A. D.

38. Viravikkama, No. 164 (175 d), came to the throne (according to Mhvs. 92. 6) 2085 A. B. = 1541/2 A. D.

39. Māyādhanu (Mayadunne), No. 115 (175 b), died according to Rājalekhana (Wickr.), Śaka 1503 = 1581/2 A. D.; Rājasiha I, No. 116 (177), according to Rv. Śaka 1514 = 1592/3 A. D.; Vimaladhammasuriya I, No. 117 (178), according to Rv. Śaka 1525 = 1603/4 A. D.; he came to the throne (Mhvs. 94. 5) 2135 A. B. = 1591/2 A. D.; Senāratana, No. 118 (179) died according to Rājalekhana (Wickr.) Śaka 1557 = 1635/6 A. D. and Rājasiha II, No. 119 (180), Śaka 1609 = 1687/8 A. D.; Vimaladhammasuriya II, No. 120 (181), Śaka 1629 = 1707/8 A. D.

40. Kittisirirājasiha, No. 123 (184), ascended the throne (Mhvs. 99. 2) 2296 A. B. = 1746/7 A. D. He died Śaka 1703 = 1781/2 A. D. He sends embassies to Siam (Mhvs. 100. 59 and 91) 2293 and 2296 A. B. = 1749/50 and 1752/3 A. D. Lastly Mhvs. 100. 282 gives 2301 A. B. = 1757/8 A. D. as the date for the consecration of the rebuilt Rajata-vihāra.

Contents of Chapters 73-101

Chapter 73

Parakkamabāhu I. begins the fulfilment of his task as ruler (v. 1-10). — Benevolence to the poor, reform and conciliation of the Order (v. 11-22). — Buildings such as almshalls and hospitals (v. 23-39). — Medical care (v. 40-54). — Construction of the city walls (v. 55-60). — The royal palace and neighbouring buildings (v. 61-94). — Laying out of the Nandana and Dipayyāna gardens with their various buildings (v. 95-123). — Building of the temple of the Tooth Relic by Mahinda and of the Golden thupa by Queen Rūparati (v. 124-147). — Building of streets, of three suburbs with vihāras and of fourteen city gates (v. 148-164).

Chapter 74

Restoration of Anurādhapura (v. 1-14). — Foundation of Parakkamapura, administrative measures (v. 15-21). — Rebellion in Rohaṇa (v. 22-39). — Rakkhā sent to Rohaṇa (v. 40-43). — A rising of the mercenaries in Koṭṭhasāra is suppressed (v. 44-49). — Rakkhā's campaign (v. 50-66). — Bhūta joins him, the two generals continue the campaign (v. 67-89). — The flank at Lokagalla secured, advance to Uddhānadrāra (v. 91-98). — Expedition against Dīghavāpi (v. 99-108). — Parakkamabāhu issues strict commands to take the sacred relics, Tooth and Alms-bowl, from the rebels. Their capture after heavy fighting at Uruvelā (v. 99-126). — Sūkambhātu escapes from prison and flees to Rohaṇa, Mañju sent in pursuit of him (v. 127-132). — Renewed fighting with the rebels (v. 133-142). — Death of Rakkhā (v. 143-152). — The

rebels gather fresh courage, battles in the Guttasālā district (v. 153-157). — At the command of the King the relics are sent to Pulatthinagarā; Mañju who negotiates their dispatch, secures the rear of the army by an expedition to the Dīghavāpi district (v. 158-180). — Parakkamabāhu brings the relics with great ceremony to the capital (v. 181-248).

Chapter 75

Combats in Dīghavāpi-maṇḍala (v. 1-18). — Advance of the Kaṇṇukiṅkya Rakkha along the coast by way of Gīmahatittha and Mahāvālukaḡāma as far as Mālūvaratthali (v. 19-68). — Expedition of the Daṇḍādhikārin Rakkha starts from Doḡivagga (v. 69-97). — Decisive battles, finally at Mahāsennagāma, capture of Mahānāḡahala and union with the other Rakkha (v. 98-120). — Fresh combats in Khaṇḍāvagga and Mahāḡāma (v. 121-140). — Feigned retreat to Pūḡadavāḡvāṇa and decisive actions against the rebels (v. 141-148). — Mañju joined in Kuṇḍugāma. Rakkha's troops capture Dvāḡasasahassaka and destroy the rebels there, Mañju's soldiers succeed in taking Queen Sugulā prisoner (v. 149-184). — Stern punishment of the guilty, clemency towards those who submit (v. 185-193). — Victorious return of the army to Pulatthinagarā (v. 194-204).

Chapter 76

Risings in Robaya and Mahātīttha (v. 1-9). — Insolence of the ruler of Rāmaṇṇa (v. 10-35). — Parakkamabāhu determines to make war on him and prepares for the campaign (v. 36-52). — Victories in Rāmaṇṇa and conclusion of peace (v. 53-75). — Succession disputes in Mudhurā, Parakkamabāhu petitioned for aid by the Paḡḡu king, sends an army under Laḡkāpura to Southern India (v. 76-85). — Landing and victorious actions with Kulasekharā's generals, occupation of Rāmissara (v. 86-101). — Restoration of the Ratanavāluka-cetiya in Anurāḡhapura by captive Daṇḡilas; on the completion of the work Parakkamabāhu celebrates a great festival (v. 102-120). — Continuation of the war in Southern India;

combats with Kulasekhara himself at the fortified camp of Parakkamapura opposite Rāmissara and further victorious actions (v. 121-132). — Prince Virapaṇḍu, the lawful heir to the throne, joins Laṅkāpura; capture of Madhurā (v. 193-219). — Fresh combats with Kulasekhara's generals which end with the taking of Semponmūri (v. 220-266). — Continuation of the campaign; Neṭṭura the key position of the Siḥalas (v. 267-290). — Reinforcements arrive from Laṅkā under Jagadvijaya. The town of Kājina finally taken by force from Kulasekhara, he himself escapes (v. 291-334).

Chapter 77

Kulasekhara renews the fight. Laṅkāpura subjugates several of his subordinate leaders and gains a victory at Penamarāvati (v. 1-24). — Virapaṇḍu consecrated king in Madhurā (v. 25-31). — Continuation of the war against Kulasekhara who finally seeks refuge in the Coja country (v. 32-70). — Further actions culminate again in a fight for Penamarāvati (v. 71-95). — Laṅkāpura sends the booty to Ceylon, Parakkamabāhu founds the village of Pāṇḍuvijaya in memory of the successful campaign (v. 96-106).

Chapter 78

Second account of Parakkamabāhu's reform of the Church. Mahākassapa head of the Council (v. 1-30). — The King's ecclesiastical buildings: Jetavana (with Tivāṅka house, circular temple for the Tooth Relic etc.), Ālāhanna pacireva (with Laṅkātilaka, Baddhasmāpāsāda etc.) (v. 31-55). — Fixing of the boundaries by the King (v. 56-70). — Pacchimārāma, Uttarārāma, Mahāthūpa (v. 70-78). — Vihāras in the suburbs and the Kapila-vihāra (v. 79-95). — Restoration of the buildings in Anurādhapura (v. 96-109).

Chapter 79

The laying out of gardens (v. 1-12). — Erection or restoration of thūpas and other sacred buildings in Rājaraṣṭha

(v. 13-22). — Building or restoration of reservoirs and irrigation canals (v. 23-69). — Similar works in Rohaṇa (v. 70-84). — Conclusion (v. 85-86).

Chapter 80

Vijayabāhu II. reigns piously (v. 1-14). — He is murdered by Mahinda VI. who is followed by Kittinissakka, famed for his pious foundations (v. 15-26). — Brief reigns of Virabāhu, Vikkamabāhu, Codagaṅga, Lilāvati (with Kitti), Sāhasamalla, Kalyāṇarati (with Āyasmanta) (v. 27-41). — There follow Dhammāsoka, Anikāṅga, Lilāvati (with Vikkamatacumūnakkha), Lokissara, Lilāvati (with Parakkuma) and Parakkamapaṇḍu II. (v. 42-54). — Tyrannical reign of Māgha (54-80).

Chapter 81

After a time of great confusion Vijayabāhu III. takes over the government in Jambuddoī (v. 1-16). — He fetches the relics of the Tooth and the Alms-bowl which had been hidden by the Theras on the Kottumala mountain and builds for them a safe sanctuary on the Billasala mountain (v. 17-39). — He has sacred texts transcribed, builds vihāras and restores decayed buildings (v. 40-63). — He carefully educates his two sons Parakkamabāhu and Bhuvanekabāhu and appoints the former as his successor (v. 64-80).

Chapter 82

Parakkamabāhu II. brings the Tooth Relic to Jambuddoī, builds a temple for it and makes three urns as receptacles for it (v. 1-14). — Miraculous apparition (v. 15-49). — The setting up of the relic accompanied by a great festival (v. 50-53).

Chapter 83

Benevolent reign of the King (v. 1-7). — The Daniḷas conquered and driven out (v. 8-35). — Incursion of the Jāvakas; they are defeated by the King's nephew, Virabāhu (v. 36-52).

Chapter 84

Restoration of property in the Island according to former conditions (v. 1-6). — Reform of the Order, invitation to foreign theras like Dhammakitti (v. 7-16). — The King builds monasteries, sees to the better training of the bhikkhus, celebrates great festivals for the Order, honours eminent theras and bestows abundant gifts on the bhikkhus (v. 17-44).

Chapter 85

Parakkamabāhu II. builds in Sīrivaddhana a vihāra and has the two sacred relics brought thither from Jambuddonī with great ceremony (v. 1-36). — Offerings to the bhikkhus and a sacrificial festival for the Buddha (v. 37-58). — Building of the Billasela-vihāra and other monasteries and restoration of decayed structures in Kalyāṇi, Hatthavanagalla, Devanagara. Veneration of a relic of Mahākassapa in Bhūmatittha (v. 59-89). — Veneration of the Tooth Relic in the Sīrivijayasundara-vihāra and other meritorious works (v. 90-98). — Great kāṭhina offering and sacrificial festival (v. 99-117). — Pilgrimage to the Sumanakūṭa (v. 118-122).

Chapter 86

The King has all kinds of meritorious works performed by his minister Devapattirāja (v. 1-17). — Making of a road from Gaṅgāsiripura to Sumanakūṭa and buildings on the summit (v. 18-36). — Embellishment of the Hatthavanagalla-vihāra and road-building at Bhūmatittha (v. 37-43). — Laying out of a large cocoplantation, building of the village Mahāluhujagaccha. Devapattirāja honoured by the King (v. 44-58).

Chapter 87

A threatened famine prevented by the exhibition of the Tooth Relic (v. 1-13). — The King gathers round him his five sons and his sister's son and gives them advice (v. 14-38). — With the consent of the bhikkha community he transfers the government to his eldest son, Vijayabāhu (v. 39-71).

Chapter 88.

Vijayabāhu chooses Virabāhu as his intimate friend (v. 1-9). — He builds a temple for the Tooth Relic (v. 10-17) and divides the protection of the country among his brothers (v. 18-28). — Affection of the people (v. 29-42). — Vijayabāhu's buildings erected during his journeys through the country (v. 43-61). — War with Candabhānu (v. 62-76). — Buildings in Subhagiri and Anurādhapura (v. 77-89). — Restoration of Pulatthiagara (v. 90-121).

Chapter 89

Parakkamabāhu consecrated king in Pulatthiagara (v. 1-10). — Ceremonial transference of the Tooth and Bowl relics from Jambuddoṇi to the above town (v. 11-46). — Great Upasampadā ceremony in Salmassatittha (v. 47-63). — Distinction conferred on deserving bhikkhus (v. 64-71).

Chapter 90

End of Vijayabāhu IV. (v. 1-3). — Bhuvanekabāhu I. escapes from the rebel Mitta to Subhagiri (v. 4-11). — Mitta murdered in Jambuddoṇi by rebel mercenaries who immediately support the King (v. 12-30). — Establishment of his dominion and meritorious works of Bhuvanekabāhu I. (v. 31-42). — Incursion of Āriyacakkavattin who carries off the Tooth Relic to the Paṇḍu country (v. 43-47). — Parakkamabāhu III. regains the relic by negotiation (v. 48-55). — He reigns in Pulatthiagara (v. 56-58). — Bhuvanekabāhu II. reigns as pious king (v. 59-63). — Parakkamabāhu IV. builds a temple for the Tooth Relic and celebrates a festival for it (v. 64-79). — Literary activity of the King. His buildings (v. 80-104). — Bhuvanekabāhu III., Vijayabāhu V., Bhuvanekabāhu IV. (v. 105-9).

Chapter 91

Parakkamabāhu V. and Vikkamabāhu V. Alugakkonūra founds Jayavaddhanakotṭa (v. 1-8). — Bhuvanekabāhu V., Virabāhu II. (v. 9-14). — Parakkamabāhu VI. His meritorious works (v. 15-36).

Chapter 92

Jayabāhu II., Bhuvanekabāhu VI., Paṇḍita Parakkamabāhu VII., Vira Parakkamabāhu VIII., Vijayabāhu VI., Bhuvanekabāhu VII. (v. 1-5). — Viravikkama (in Kandy) earns merit by offerings to the Order. Pilgrimages, festivals etc. (v. 6-31).

Chapter 93

Māyādhana (v. 1-3). — Rājasiha I. (in Sitāvaka) is converted to Hinduism and persecutes the Buddhist priests (v. 4-17).

Chapter 94

Vimaladharmasūriya I. in Goa (v. 1-6). — He brings the Tooth Relic from the Labujagāma-vihāra to Kandy and builds a temple for it (v. 7-14). — He summons bhikkhus from Arakan and furthers the Order (v. 15-23).

Chapter 95

Senāratana saves the Tooth Relic from the Portuguese and proceeds to Mahiyāngaya where a son is born to him, with significant signs (v. 1-16). — Returning to Kandy, he divides the realm by lot among his three sons (v. 17-26).

Chapter 96

Rājasiha II. dispossesses his brothers and becomes sole king (v. 1-6). — He is distinguished by personal courage (v. 7-10). Successful fights with the Portuguese (v. 11-37). — Vigorous rule in the interior (v. 38-42).

Chapter 97

Vimaladhammasuriya II. builds a temple for the Tooth Relic and furthers the Order by the admission of monks from Avakka (v. 1-15). — Pilgrimages and other meritorious works (v. 16-22). — Narindasitha lays the Order under obligations, undertakes pilgrimages, performs other pious works and builds the new temple for the Tooth Relic (v. 23-47). — The sāmaṇera Saranapṛaka takes the Tooth Relic under his protection and at the instigation of the King, performs several important works (v. 48-62).

Chapter 98

Vijayarājāsitha marries princesses from Madhurā who embrace Buddhism and are its devoted disciples (v. 1-20). — The King's relations with Saranapṛaka (v. 21-24). — Veneration of the Tooth Relic with great festivities (v. 25-57). — Sacrificial festival of lamps (v. 58-64). — The building of viharas and the embellishment of Sirivaḍḍhana (v. 65-70). — Sermons (v. 71-79). — Banishment of the Parangis, visit to the sacred places (v. 80-86). — Embassy to Ayojjiā in order to fetch bhikkhus. The King's end (v. 87-97).

Chapter 99

Kittisirirājāsitha reigns piously and seeks to spread the Buddhist doctrine (v. 1-24). — Honours conferred on the bhikkhus from Rakkhaṅga and furtherance of the Order (v. 25-35). — Pilgrimage to the sacred places (v. 36-41). — Great festivities in Sirivaḍḍhana, specially in honour of the Tooth Relic (v. 42-74). — Continuation of the Mahāvamsa (v. 75-80). — Friendly relations of the King and his brothers who like himself, are believing Buddhists (v. 81-107). — Military embroilment with the Olundas who take Sirivaḍḍhana, but suffer a severe defeat (v. 108-139). — The Tooth Relic which had been concealed from the enemy is brought back to the town (v. 140-149). — The Olundas sue for peace (v. 150-167). — The King cares for the welfare of the Order (v. 168-182).

Chapter 100

Veneration of the Tooth Relic by the King who makes huge offerings to it and celebrates festivals (v. 1-43). — Reform of the Order, embassy to Ayojñhā to King Dhammika who sends bhikkhus under the leadership of the thera Upālī to Laṅkā where they are received with great festivities (v. 44-90). — The King himself visits the monks from Sāminḍa in the Puppārāma where dwellings are assigned them and instigates the holding of an Upasampadā ceremony (v. 91-96). — Furtherance of the newly established Order; the envoys who had accompanied the monks from Sāminḍa return thither (v. 97-135). — Dhammika again sends bhikkhus to Laṅkā. Death of Upālī (v. 136-148). — Envoys whom Kittisiri had sent to Dhammika return with rich gifts (v. 149-170). — Efficiency of the Siamese monks in Laṅkā; their return to Siam (v. 171-179). — The making of a Buddha image in Sirivuddhāna and ceremony of the Festival of the eyes (v. 180-200). — Rebuilding of the Gaṅgārāma and furnishing of the monastery (v. 201-215). — Foundation of a monastery in Kuṇḍasālā (v. 216-219). — Restoration of the cult on the Sumanakūṭa (v. 220-228). — Restoration of destroyed monasteries and their property, namely of the Rajata-vihāra which is described in detail (v. 229-292). — Further meritorious works of the King and of his minister Savanṇagāma (v. 293-301).

Chapter 101.

Sirirājādhirājasiha reigns piously (v. 1-18). — Sirivikkamarājasiha at first a pious prince, becomes a tyrannical monster. The people rise against him and banish him to the mainland. The British take possession of the kingdom (v. 19-29).

24 JUN 1931

CHAPTER LXXIII

ACCOUNT OF THE REBUILDING OF PULATTHINAGARA

Now when the Ruler Parakkama had accomplished his consecration as king, he the wise one, best among those who understand what is good (for the people), thought thus: "By those kings of old who turned aside from the trouble of furthering the laity and the Order.— who through lust, hatred, fear and delusion went wofully astray¹, who caused great evil by the gathering of immenturable taxes and the like — has this people aforetime been grievously harassed. May it henceforth be happy, and may the Order of the great Sage — long sullied by admixture with a hundred false doctrines, rent asunder by the schism of the three fraternities and flooded with numerous unscrupulous bhikkhus whose sole task is the filling of their bellies — (that Order) which though five thousand years have not yet passed, is in a state of decay, once more attain stability. Of those people of noble birth who here and there have been ruined, I would fain by placing them again in their rightful position, become the protector in accordance with tradition. Those in search of help I would fain support by letting like a cloud overspreading the four quarters of the earth², a rich ruin of gifts pour continually down upon them.

¹ *Chanda, dosa, bhaya, uddha* are called A. II. 18 *cattari agatigamānāni*. Cf. *chandagatīy (dosa-gatīy etc.) gantūy* D. III 133²¹, *chandaṭṭ agatīy gacchati* Nett. 44¹ etc.

² The Buddhist cosmology recognises four chief continents. Cf. Vv. 20, 10 *caturāṇa mahādīpāṇaṃ isāraṇa ya'dha kūvaṇa*. S. V. 343²⁶ *caturāṇa dīpāṇaṇa paṭṭābhā*. In contrast to these are the 2000 small dīpas by which they are surrounded (Vv. 104²¹). In the Gal-sināra inscription

9 All this was (for me) while with arduous struggle I sought
 10 the royal dignity, the absolutely preconceived result. Now is
 the time to carry out what I have wished." In consideration
 of this he bestowed office on those who deserved it¹.
 11 Hereupon he had the drums beaten and those in search
 of help called together and he allotted them yearly a large
 12 alms equal in weight to his body. Then the Ruler in order
 to promote the furtherance of the Order, assembled the great
 13 community dwelling in the three fraternities. Further he called
 together many distinguished teachers learned in the methods
 14 of discriminating between failure and non-failure, and as he
 himself was the foremost among those versed in the rules of the
 Order and acquainted with right and wrong, he could distin-
 15 guish the genuine from the false ascetics. Further being in
 virtue of his impartiality free from liking and disliking, and
 as a result of his unweariedness arduously active day and
 16 night, he cured like a clever, expert physician who distin-
 17 guishes between curable and incurable disease, those which
 were curable and set aside those which were incurable by the
 method prescribed by the rules of the Order, free in his de-
 18 cisions from error. From the days of King Vaṭṭagāmaṇi
 Abhaya² the three fraternities had lost their unity, despite
 19 the vast efforts made in every way by former kings down to

the Buddha is compared to a rain-cloud which pours its blessing over the four continents. These continents are: Uttarakuru, Jambudīpa, Pubbavidēha and Aparagodāna (Wickramasingame, EZ. II, p. 272, n. 11). For the Brahmanic teaching of the Drīpui see Kieker, Kosmographie der Indier, p. 110ff.

¹ Verses 2—10 form one sentence. It is governed by *āhāsi kato vi-
 āśatvau etau sabhāya magā sambhāritam*. What he has aspired to is:
 1) with regard to the mass of the people that they should be happy (v. 4a); 2) with regard to the Order, that it might attain stability (*yodhā
 assa sambhāritam* v. 4b); 3) with regard to the nobility, that the king
 should again become their protector (v. 7d; *pāṭamaṃ* must be supple-
 mented by an *assaṃ* from *assa* in 6d "may I be"); 4) with regard to
 those in want, that the king may support them (v. 8d).

² For the schism in the Order at the time of this prince see Mahā. 32. 96ff.

the present day. They turned away in their demeanour from one another and took delight in all kinds of strife. But the all-wise Ruler who had already in past existences striven after the purification of the Order as something which must be attained¹, achieved its union, whereby he had to endure double as much heavy toil as in his efforts for the royal dignity. And he made the Order as uniform as milk and water so that it could last in purity for five thousand years².

Hereupon the best of men had a square hall³ erected in the middle of the town with four entrances and several large

¹ P. *gahitabhāta* is an adverbial formation from *gahitabha* = skr. *grahita*, *taṃsa*. It would correspond to skr. *grahitavyatas*. Cf. Watters, *Indische Grammatik* § 1098.

² Verses 12–22 form one sentence. The principal verb in 22 c d is *abhinī* (*śamastamam bhavadatibhātam*), subject *bhāupati* in 21 d. The gerunds *rāśikāntā* (12 c) and *samapattiya* (13 b), as also *samaggaṃ ketaṃ* (21 d) are subordinate. This last is preceded by the pres. and pres. participles: — *paṭigāḥmanayāguttitā* (15 b), *atāpito* (15 d), *samapāśhārento* (16 c), *tācīchānto* and *vinayajayā* (17 a b), as well as *anagapetasaṃkappa* (17 c) and *anubhānto* (21 c). These are all of them attributes of the subject. The object of *samaggaṃ abhinī* is *vikāguttitāyā* with the three attributes in 19 b c d of which the first has a still closer adverbial definition in 18 and 19 a ("in spite of the great efforts" etc.); *payāsaṃ* must be supplemented by *katvā*. — The brief account of our chronicle is confirmed by the Gālavāra inscription of Parakkamabāhu in Polonnaruwa. Cf. Ed. Muller, *AIC* nr. 54; Wickramasinghe, *EZ.* II. 240 ff. From the contents it is even possible to establish certain connections between the inscription and the account of the Cōlars., though these are of too vague a character for us to draw far-reaching conclusions from them. Both start with the schism of the church under Vajragāmaṇī. Both speak of the intention that the Order should now be secure in its stability for 4000 years. In the Cōlars. the king is compared to a cloud spreading itself over the four continents just as the inscription uses this comparison of Buddha. See also note to 78. 5. In chap. 78 a second and more detailed account of the reform of the church follows. Rijāvali says (ital. by H. Gressmann, p. 50) quite briefly: "he reconciled the religious differences which had existed since the reign of Vajragāma Abī." The account in the *Nikāya-saṃgraha* is more detailed (p. 22 of Wickramasinghe's ed.).

³ P. *catuṣgāḥa* = skr. *catuṣpādā* denotes a square surrounded by buildings. We must imagine therefore a square court surrounded on all sides by halls open to the interior. Cf. *Mhv.* 37. 16. The word occurs as the name of a particular building in Anurādhapura in *Mhv.* 15. 47, 50; 36. 68.

24 rooms and instituted a great almsgiving in which everything
 needful was to be had daily for many hundreds in number
 25 who had kept the precepts of moral discipline¹. And every
 year the Ruler of men had given to each of them according
 to his age, garments and mantles, (thus) at all times full of
 26 benevolence. Thereupon he had four almshouses built in the
 four districts of the town and had them erected in separate
 27 divisions, and therein he placed many vessels of bronze, cushions
 28 and pillows, mats, carpets and bedsteads as well as cows by
 the thousand that gave sweet milk. Then near these (halls)
 29 at a spot with pure water he laid down charming gardens
 adorned with trees that bore abundant blossom and fruit, and
 30 fair as the garden of Nandana². Further generous as he was,
 he set up in their neighbourhood rich provender houses
 31 supplied with money and money's worth which contained all
 necessities such as syrup, sugar, honey and the like. And
 32 (there) he instituted for many thousands of bhikkhus from
 all four regions of the earth who practised moral discipline
 and other virtues, for Brahmanas belonging to a mendicant
 33 order, as well as for many other supplicants and poor tra-
 vellers daily a great almsgiving, he the wise (prince), untiring,
 unwearying, with a heart full of love.

34 Hereupon the Ruler of men, filled with pity, had another
 great hall built for many hundreds of sick people, fitted for
 35 their sojourn there, and had placed in it in the way above
 described, a complete collection of all articles of use. There
 36 also he gave to each sick person a special slave and a female
 slave to prepare day and night according to need, medicines
 37 and food, solid and liquid. There too he had many provender
 houses built in which a quantity of medicine, money and
 38 money's worth and the like were collected. To discerning
 and skilful physicians who were quick at distinguishing various
 (bodily) conditions and who were versed in all the text books,

¹ P. *śāpāḍāśarp* refers as W. assumes, to monks "Age" in v. 25
 (P. *yathāśāpāḍāśarp*) means then the period of belonging to the Order.

² The pleasure garden of the god Indra. E. W. Hornsby, *Epic Mythology*
 p. 141.

he gave maintenance according to their deserts, recognising 39
the merits in all of them and made them day and night
practise the medical art in the best manner. He himself on 40
the four Uposatha days in the month, having laid aside all
his ornaments and having taken upon himself the vow of the
sacred day, pure with pure upper garment, surrounded by his 41
dignitaries, was wont to visit that hall, his heart cooled with
pity¹. With an eye that charmed by goodness he gazed at 42
the sick. And as the Ruler of men was himself versed in
medical lore², he the all-wise summoned the physicians ap- 43
pointed there, tested in every way their healing activities, and 44
if their medical treatment had been wrongly carried out he
met them with the right method, pointed it out to them as
the best of teachers and showed them the proper use of the 45
instruments by skilfully treating several people with his own
hand. Then he tested the favorable or unfavorable condition 46
of all the sick, let those who were rid of their illness have
garments given to them and then rejoicing in good, after he 47
had taken his reward³ from the hands of the physicians and
given them their reward⁴, he returned to his palace. By such 48
means year by year he being (himself) free from disease,
freed the sick from all their illnesses.

Yet another miracle never before seen or heard was mani- 49
fest in him who was rich in the virtue of pity rightly exercised.
To that hall there came, tortured by great pain, a crow 50
suffering from an ulcer that had formed in her cheek. As if 51

¹ P. *dayasitalahamman*. CE 73. 141. The heart is hot with passion. Passion is cooled by pity. We Northerners would be more inclined to say it is "warmed".

² P. *dyabbhede* = skr. *dyavade*. The *Āyurveda* "Veda of the (Long) Prolonging of the Span of Life" was held to be the basis of all medical knowledge and was regarded as an *upāṅga* of the *Ātharvaveda*. See Wiesner, *Geogr. der ind. Literatur*, III, p. 542; J. Jorav, *Medicin*, p. 12 f.

³ Each time the expression *patti* is used. Employed of the king, it means the merit working itself out in the *kamma*. This *puṇi* is found in the healing activity of the physicians and is left by them to the king, because he is its spiritual parent. CE note to 42. 60. Employed of the doctors, *patti* means the payment for their services.

chained by the strong bonds of his pity she sat as if with clipped wings, motionless outside the hall meaning piteously.

52 The physicians who rightly recognised her condition, caught
53 her and cured her at the Great King's command. Her disease
cured, the King set her upon an elephant and having made
her walk round the town, her right side towards it, he set
54 her free. Where, when and by whom was ere such exceeding
great mercy even to animals seen or heard?

55 Thereupon King Parakkamabāhu, the hero, to whom all
right-minded people were devoted, set about the rebuilding in
grandeur and beauty of the superb city of Pulatthiagara
56 which had reached such a state that nought but its name
remained, and which no longer sufficed to make manifest his
57 superlatively royal glory¹. The Monarch now had a high
chain of walls built which on all sides enclosed the fortified
58 town² and was larger than the town wall³ of former kings
and gleamed with its coating of lime bright as autumn clouds.
59 Then after he had built round this three walls⁴ each in turn
60 smaller than the other, he laid down various streets. Then he

¹ For the following description compare above all A. M. Hocart, *The Topography of Polonnaruwa* (ASC. Memoirs II. 1920, p. 381). H. W. Conanssen is certainly right in his assumption that the description in the *Cōluyāpur* proceeds from south to north. I refer the reader at once to the second and later account of Parakkamabāhu's building activities in 78.31 ff.

² By *dharmādāra* I understand here the inner walled part of the town in contrast to the open parts of the town lying around it. The "chain of walls" refers probably to the rampart of the town still recognisable, stretching for about a mile from north to south and half a mile from east to west. Within this rampart lies the "citadel" with the royal castle. See note to v. 61.

³ The old *parapāḍārasaḍḍato* shows that we must take the positive *mekhataṃ* in the sense of a comparative, as is often the case. The new structure was thus more extensive than the older one.

⁴ The *Kautilya* lays down that three trenches each narrower than the other, must surround the wall of a castle. The dug out soil may have served for the construction of the "small wall". See Kaut. 2. 3. 21 in Jolly's ed. p. 91; in J. J. Meyer's translation p. 65⁴⁰ in that of Srīmanasūrya, p. 67).

erected around his own palace and around his whole dwelling
 a second inner wreath of walls¹ and built thereon a palace² 61
 seven storeys high, furnished with a thousand chambers and
 adorned with many hundreds of pillars painted in divers hues.
 It was richly supplied with hundreds of alcoves³ which were 62
 like to the summit of the Kelāsa⁴ mountain and were radiant
 with manifold ornaments of climbing plants and flowers. It 63
 had doors and windows of gold large and small, well divided
 walls and stairs and offered conveniences for every season.
 It was ever adorned with many thousands of various beds 64
 which were made of gold, ivory and the like and had costly

¹ P. *anupāṭkāramantalaṃ*, i.e. a secondary circle of walls.

² The word for "palace", *pāsādhaṃ*, first occurs in v. 70. All the verses between contain attributes of which I have made independent sentences. There is no doubt that the palace is recognisable in the ruins which are marked "palace" on the plans. It is enclosed along with a number of subsidiary buildings by a rampart (the *anupāṭkāra* of the text) "forming an oblong of roughly 440 by 264 yards" (A. M. Hocutt, l. c., p. 3). The enclosed ground is now known by the name of the "citadel", and the palace stands in the southern part of the square. Cf. for the whole H. C. P. Bell, ASO, 1911—12 (= S. P. III, 1915), p. 56 ff. When the Cōlāva speaks of a thousand apartments and many hundreds of pillars that is of course merely the stereotyped exaggeration constantly recurring in such descriptions. At the same time there is a striking number of tiny rooms grouped round the central main part of the building in the ground-floor. There are more than fifty of them. Without doubt there were further apartments in the upper storeys. That the palace at least in its central portions consisted of one or several storeys is proved by the extraordinary strength of the walls enclosing the innermost chamber. These are more than ten feet thick. Then too a broad staircase is still standing which led from the south of this room upwards. Unfortunately our chronicle gives instead of exact figures merely the customary phrases proscribed by poetics.

³ P. *kāṭṭhāra*. Rāvaṇa's palace is also described in the Rāmāyaṇa B. 9. 14 (Bombay ed. 1902) as *kāṭṭhāraṇi śubbhāraṇi sarvataḥ samānta-bhāvaṇi*. The commentary on the passage explains *kāṭṭhāraṇi* by *gṛha-saṃparyāṇi*.

⁴ Buildings which are high, pointed and white in colour (covered with stucco), especially stūpas (78, 77), are frequently compared to the Kelāsa mountain (cf. 68, 41 and note).

65 coverings. The height of its splendour¹ was reached in the
 royal sleeping apartment which was ever immeasurably re-
 66 splendent with a thick bunch of pearls² suspended at its four
 corners, white as moonbeams and gleaming so that they
 67 laughed to scorn the beauty of the divine Gaṅgā. (The sleep-
 ing apartment) was adorned with a wreath of large golden
 lampstands which breathed out continually the perfume of
 68 flowers and incense. With the network of tiny golden bells³
 suspended here and there and giving forth a sound like the
 69 sound of the five musical instruments, the palace made known,
 as it were, the rich fulness of the merits of the King. This
 70 splendid palace, like to a matchless structure of Viśvakarman⁴,
 charming and peerless, he, the first among the protectors of
 the earth, built and gave it the name of Vajayanta⁵.
 71 For the carrying out of the ceremonies of expiation by
 the Brahmins (he built) the Hemamāndira and for the recitation
 72 of magic incantations the charming Dhāraṇīghara⁶. For li-
 stening to the birth stories of the great Sage which were
 related by a teacher appointed there for the purpose, (he built)

¹ So I translate *śaṁkṣābhāṣaṁ uttamaṁ* (cf. skr. *śaṁkṣā* as well as below v. 102) in v. 67 d. Verses 65 b to 67 a b contain attributes of *śrī-śaṅkṣagabhāṣa* in 67 c, v. 65 attributes of *śaṁkṣamuttakābhāṣa*.

² In Rām. 5. 9. 17 it is said of Rāvaṇa's palace *śaṁkṣābhāṣaṁ śaṁkṣamuttakābhāṣaṁ*.

³ The *śaṁkṣābhāṣa* is one of the ornaments of the *maṇḍapa* (JāCo. I. 32³¹; DhCo. I. 274⁵) and of the *pāśāḍha* (D. II. 183⁸; Mhv. 27. 10, 27).

⁴ Skr. *Vīśvakarman*, the architect of the gods, often associated and confused with *Viśṇu*. Cf. Bowers, *Epic Mythology*, p. 201. He is the builder of Varuṇa's palace (ibid. p. 118) and of the divine hall of assembly (ibid. p. 113).

⁵ This is the name of Indra's palace. See 45. 135.

⁶ I take *Aṁśamāṇḍira* "golden house" and *Dhāraṇīghara* "house of incantation" as the names of the buildings in question. *Saṁti* in *a* is as otherwise *śaṁtikarma*, to be understood in the technical sense of skr. *śānti*. Cf. with *pariṇatana* in c *pariṇatānamanta* JāCo. I. 200⁴³. It is impossible now to say which of the present ruins correspond to the buildings mentioned. We should probably look for them in the various structures in the immediate vicinity of the palace.

the fair Maṇḍalamandira¹. For the reception of the magic 73
water and of the magic thread given him by the yellow-robed
ascetics (he built) the Pañcasettatimandira². Lastly he who 74
ever trod the path of the true doctrine, erected a sermon
house³. It was surrounded by an enclosure of coloured cur-
tains and adorned with costly canopies. By reason of the 75
many-hued, sweet-smelling flowers laid down here and there
as offerings it had the semblance of a single nosegay. Its 76
interior was constantly lighted by lamps with scented oil and
perfumed by incense of gum resin. It was gaily adorned with 77
many likenesses of the Victor (Buddha) in gold and the like
and was resplendent with a garland of pictures of the Omniscient
One, which were painted on stuff. When that Prince among 78
kings entered it to place with his own hand a (jewel as) eye⁴
upon the statue of the Victor, or to honour by sacrifice the 79
Tathāgata, or to listen to the unsurpassable true doctrine
— (then) was it like unto a divine hall of assembly. It was 80

¹ That is "circle house". Of course the building which was to serve for the narration of the jātaka was first erected and then an *acarya* appointed for the purpose. DEB. (ASU. 1906, p. 10ff.; cf. EZ. II. 236ff.) regards the *maṇḍalamandira* as the so-called *Paṭṭa-vihāra* to the south of Paṭṭhānagara. But I do not believe that he is right.

² That is "the house of the seventy-five". The reason for the name is unknown. Obviously the building was meant to serve for the holding of *parikkā* ceremonies. Water and thread play the most important part in these, as the white thread which runs through the hands of all the participating priests starts from a vessel filled with water. At the close the foreheads of the priests are sprinkled with the water.

³ Again verses 74 to 81 form one sentence. The attributes in 74 to 81b precede the object *āṣṇamūḍḍam* in 81c. Of these we have made independent sentences. The most important building in the neighbourhood of the palace is the "Rājumūlipāva" situated to the east of it. It is an oblong structure on a terrace of three tiers. The walls of the terrace are decorated with beautifully carved reliefs. Whether indeed we may call the building a *āṣṇamūḍḍam* is doubtful. It looks like a hall of audience or like a council-hall. Cf. ASU. 1906 (= S. P. XX. 1909), p. 3ff.

⁴ The eyes of Buddha statues consisted frequently of precious stones (dark blue sapphires). Their insertion took place with specially solemn ceremonies.

- graced by a wonderful peacock which drove people out of
 81 their senses whenever screeching its peacock cry, it began
 its dance together with the dancing girl who danced there
 while they struck up a sweet rhythmic song¹.
- 82 Further in order to listen to the rhythmic songs of the
 many musicians and to behold their charming dance, the
 Monarch had built near the palace the Sarassatimanḍapa².
- 83 It glittered in every direction with its golden pillars. It was
 delightful with paintings relating to his (Parakkamabāhu's)
 84 deeds. It was embellished by a wishing-tree offering all de-
 sired things which sparkled with all kinds of ornaments such
 85 as earrings, bracelets, necklaces and the like, which was re-
 splendent with garments of linen, silk, Chinese stuff and other
 86 materials, which gleamed with its golden trunk and a row of
 branches, and which was adorned by a flock of numerous birds
 which were painted on it.
- 87 Further he had the fair manḍapa erected which bore the
 name Rājavesibhūjanaga³. It was like unto the hall of the
 gods, called Sudhammā, which descended to earth, just as if

¹ The peacock was thus a mechanical toy which however existed apparently only in the imagination of the poet. "Rhythmic" is *layamita* or in v. 82 *layapeta*. The Indians distinguish three *layāh* or tempi; *druta*, *madhya* and *vilambita*.

² "Manḍapa of Sarasvatī". She is the goddess of eloquence, here of the arts of the muses in general. It is impossible to identify either this building or the one following. The description is unfortunately purely formal. The fact of both buildings being described as manḍapas suggests something of the pavilion kind, provisional in character. Verses 82 to 86 and 87 to 91 again form each one sentence, built up in the same way as the sentence in v. 74 to 81.

³ The name is difficult to explain. A suburb of Pulatthinagara is called thus (73. 163; 78. 79), and this name again seems to be connected with the epithet Rājavesibhūjanagasīlamegha applied to Itakkīya in 76. 192. The word *veśi* means "harlot", "prostitute". *Itthāṇiga* in addition to "snake" means the "lover of a prostitute" (BE. s. v., c). This meaning is here to be assumed in the name owing to the association with *veśi*. In the inscription of Itala Puliyankulam of the time of Parakkamabāhu I, dealt with by Coomaraswamy (JRAS. C. B. XXX, nr. 79, p. 271), he has the surname of *ari-rāja-veśi-bhūjanaga*.

the good deeds of all people were accumulated at one spot. It was three-storeyed, ornamented with coloured pictures, 88 surrounded by lines of fair *vedikā*¹, exquisite, adorned with 89 a costly chair beneath a wishing-tree which offered the singers and other people the wished-for objects. It shimmered with its 90 manifold precious stones like the diadem, sparkling in the sun, of that fair lady, the island of Laṅkā, whom he won by the force of his arms²; and it was like unto the wreath of tresses of 91 the protector of the world of men³. In the same way he 92 built the fair *Ekattamūha-pāsāda*⁴ that ended with a ma-

¹ What *vedikā* means is not easy to determine. Noteworthy is the frequency of the phrase *vedikāya parikkhitta* „surrounded by a *vedikā*“ as for instance a bathing pond, a *pakharavāṭ* D. II. 1797 ff. Here most probably it means a railing, since just before the same has been said of a stair case. As a staircase when it is of gold etc. has golden thimble (that is railing gates) and *śrīṅga* ṣ. e. cross-bells, as well as an *uṣṭra* (curnice) of silver, in the same way the *vedikā* of the pond has it. Cf. further VCo. 340³, where *kuṣṭhāraśrīṅga* is explained by *uṣṭraśrīṅga* *vedikāya bahirāṃ parikkhittāṃ*. A *vedikā* is part of a heavenly *pāsāda* just as the rooms, the windows, the network of bells (Mhvs. 27. 16). The *loha-pāsāda* had a *parāśaredikā*, a *vedikā* of coral (Mhvs. 27. 26). There was a *nānārātraśrīṅga* round the bodhi tree (Mhvs. 30. 70). A *vedikā* belongs to a *stūpa* (Mhvs. 32. 4; 34. 41), to an image house (Mhvs. 78. 40), to a bathing-house (Mhvs. 78. 40). Cf. also note to 75. 118.

² I divide *nijahāṇubala* (= instr.) *arava*. For it is hardly admissible to take the whole as a parallel compound to *śaṅkhaśrīṅga*.

³ W. regards this as referring to Śiva. The reference is suitable, since Śiva wears the crescent moon in the hair over his forehead, his tresses are therefore illumined.

⁴ Lit. „one-pillar-palace“. In such a one-pillar-palace, *gola ekatūṅga*, was Citti the daughter of Pundarikāśodeva confined, to prevent her coming into contact with any man. JCo I. 44²¹⁻²³ also mentions an *ekattamūhāpāsāda* which serves as a king's dwelling. For an idea of what such a structure looked like, v. 94a b is important where it is compared to a candleabra. One must therefore oddly enough imagine the *pāsāda* as something in the form of a dovecote. It should be remembered however, that the rooms both in the royal castle at Polonnaruwa and in the *Badhūśrīṅga-pāsāda* were extremely small, not more than 8×10 ft. In *Vaṇerabesdigala* I saw something like a room just large enough for a man stretched at full length to lie down in.

93 kura¹ and rose aloft as if it had split open the earth. And
it was adorned with a superb golden chamber² that was
94 placed above on a golden column, possessed of the beauty of
a cave of gold for this lion among kings, and which glittered
like a candelabra on a golden foot.

95 Again the Ruler, the leader of earth protectors, had a
private garden laid down in a region close to the king's house.
96 As one felt that it showed by its beauty a likeness to the
(heavenly) pleasure garden Nandana, and by lavishing charm
charmed the eyes of men³, it received the name of Nandana⁴.
97 Its trees were twined about with jasmine creepers and it was
filled with the murmur of the bees drunk with enjoyment of
98 the juice of the manifold blossoms. There campaka, asoka
and tilaka trees, nāgas, ponnāgas and kotakas, sal trees, pā-
99 ḷali and ulpa trees, mangoes, jumbū and kadamba trees, vakulas,
coco palms, kuṭajas and bimbijālakas, mūlati, mallikā, tamāla
100 and naranālikā shrubs⁵ and yet other trees bearing manifold
fruits and blossoms rejoiced the heart of the people who went
101 thither. Pleasant it was, and with the cry of the peacocks
and the gentle twitter (of the birds) it always delighted the
102 people. It was furnished with a number of ponds with be-

¹ A dolphin-like mythical animal often employed as ornament especially on balustrades of staircases.

² P. *jātarūpanicārena*, with a dwelling-room, a habitation of gold.

³ I separate thus: . . . *jandraya nayanai* (acc. pl.) *nandani-dasya nandayati*. The fem. *nandana* is found also §. I. 6¹⁰.

⁴ Verses 95 to 112 are one sentence: . . . he laid down . . . the private garden . . . by name Nandana . . . whose trees . . . and it was filled . . . There follow further attributes of *phareyyānaṃ*, partly in adjective form, partly as relative sentences (cf. *gatiḥ* in v. 100, 109, 111; *gaya* in v. 110).

⁵ The botanical names are in the same order 1. *michelia champaka*, 2. *jonesia asoka*, 3. unknown (Skr. *tilaka*), 4. *mesua ferrea*, 5. *rottleria tinctoria*, 6. *pandanus odoratissimus*, 7. *shorea robusta*, 8. *bignonia suaveolens*, 9. *nauclea cadamba*, 10. *mangifera indica*, 11. *eugenia jambolana*, 12. *nauclea cordata*, 13. *minocope elengi*, 14. *cocos nucifera*, 15. *wrightia notidysenterica* or *pericum antidysentericum*, 16. *momordica monodelpha*, 17. *jasminum grandiflorum*, 18. *jasminum sambac*, 19. *xanthochymus pictorius*, 20. a variety of *jasminum sambac*.

autiful banks whose chief decoration were red and blue lotus
 flowers and which appropriated all that was the loveliest of
 the lovely. It was adorned too with a large gleaming bath- 103
 room¹ supported by pillars resplendent with endless rows
 of figures in ivory, which was fair and like to a mountain 104
 of cloud pouring forth rain by (reason of) the showers of
 water which flowed constantly from the pipes of the apparatus,
 and which seemed to be the crown jewel of the beauty of 105
 the garden² and ravished the eye. The garden was (further) 106
 resplendent with an extensive palace³ adorned with many
 columns of sandalwood, resembling an ornament on the earth's 107
 surface, that glittered, peerless, shimmering, and with an
 octagonal mapḍapa resembling an ear ornament. It was also 108
 adorned with another large, fair, charming mapḍapa that had
 the charm of a wreath of serpentine windings⁴. There in the 109
 garden the Sīlapokkharagī⁵ pond continually captivated the
 King who was highest among rulers of the earth, who had
 attached the good without number to himself. Still more 110
 delightful was the garden by (means of) the Maṅgalapokkharagī

¹ P. *dhārasaṃḍapa* (v. 105) corresponds to the skt. *dhārāgrha*. From the description it is clear that a shower bath is meant.

² P. *ayyānatakkhiya*. It must be borne in mind that *akkhi* is at the same time the name of the goddess of beauty, Lakṣmī. Thus in the picture the garden is compared with the goddess and the "palace" with an ornament of her diadem.

³ P. *śimāseṇa*. Writers are fond of using the term half mythically. By v. is understood mainly the shades of blessed spirits which hover in the air. In JACO. I. 328¹³ a tree serves as *śimāseṇa* for the devatā dwelling there. Sate here and in the following the word occurs but rarely as a name for human habitations.

⁴ Is the idea here pillars with baroque spirals such as are found on a structure of the so called quadrangle in Polonnaruwa?

⁵ I. e. stone pond. Having regard to the two names occurring in v. 110, I prefer to take this as a proper name. W. also understands *paṇṇapokkharagī* in v. 111 as such. It is quite possible. We must then join *sugandhienāṇipāreṇa* with *maṇḍayana* "which gladdened by the fulness of perfumed water". My translation of vv. 111, 112 was determined by the circumstance that **parvata* and **paṇṇa* occur next to each other.

pond, and provided with the Nandāpōkkharanī pond it looked
 111 like the divine garden of Nandana. Yet another pond gleamed
 112 there, filled with a stream of perfumed water, gladdening the
 royal moon, and it was ever fair with rich beauty and splendour,
 furnished with the cave called Yasanta and with bathing
 ponds¹.

113 Again on land that resembled an island because the water
 divided into two arms, the foe-subduer laid down a second
 114 garden, the Dīpuyyāna². There one saw the Dhavalāgūra³
 that like to the summit of the Kelāsa, was made entirely of
 115 stucco, wonder exciting. The garden was adorned with a
 Vimāna which bore the name of Vijjāmaṇḍapa because it was
 116 built to show forth the various branches of science. And there
 too gleamed the beautiful, roomy⁴ Dolāmaṇḍapa⁵ that was

¹ The *pōkkharanī* or *śaṭha* comes in rather lamely after bathing-ponds have been already mentioned in v. 109 to 111. The question is where most the garden be looked for. In my opinion no weight can be attached to the structures in it mentioned in the text. The description is purely formal, made up according to the recipe for describing a garden. Even the enumeration of the many trees means nothing. The author is merely displaying his botanical knowledge, or rather his acquaintance with literary sources like *Abhp.* 536 ff. Of actual facts which could be utilised little remains but that he was a *gharagghāna* a house-garden (private garden). We must look for it therefore in the immediate neighbourhood of the royal castle and I believe therefore that it filled the northern half of the citadel. Doubtless it contained pavilions and bathing arrangements. A. M. Hocutt is inclined to look for the Nandana garden to the east of the palace and outside of the citadel, mainly on account of the *śāṭapōkkharanī*, since a bathing pond answering this description does in fact lie under the eastern wall of the citadel.

² Opinion is now unanimous, I think, that the "island park" lies on the so-called "promontory" that juts out in the Topavera west of the citadel and on which are now situated the rest house and the bungalow of the Archaeological Survey. For the ruins of the Promontory see the plan *ASC.* 1901 (= *LIII.* 1907). For the bathing-house in the *Dīpuyyāna* of *EZ.* II, 143.

³ I. e. "white house", to be taken as a proper name.

⁴ The meaning of *pariṭṭa* is unknown. Skr. *ṛiṭṭa* (cf. *Kaṭṭaliya* 2. 2. 1) means a (fenced-in) pasture.

⁵ I. e. "wing pavilion".

furnished with a swing hung with tiny pretty golden bells. The garden was further resplendent with the vimāna called 117
 Kīlūmaṇḍapa¹ where the king at the head of the sport officials
 connoisseurs of the merry mood², was wont to amuse himself.
 And it was for ever embellished by the so-called Sanimaṇḍapa³ 118
 which consisted of ivory, and again by another (maṇḍapa), the
 superb so-called Moramaṇḍapa⁴ and also by the Ādāsamaṇḍapa⁵ 119
 whose walls consisted of mirrors. There too the bathing 120
 pond Anantaṭṭepakkharāṇi⁶ with its stones whose layers resembled
 the coils of (the serpent king) Ananta, continually captivated
 the people. There the bathing pond Cittāṭṭepakkharāṇi⁷ with 121
 its gay pictures rejoiced the foe-subduer Parakkamabāhu, the
 royal sage. Resplendent there was a four-storeyed, peerless 122
 palace, painted with various pictures and bearing the name
 Singāravimāna⁸. The garden was adorned with tūla and 123
 hiṇṭāla palms, was resplendent with tūga and ponnāga trees
 and was rich in banana, kaṇṇikāra and kaṇṇikāra trees⁹.

¹ I. e. "play pavilion" or "games pavilion".

² P. *hassarasa* = skr. *hāṣyasa*. On the theory of the name a note to 72. 91.

³ The name might mean "pavilion of (the planet) Saturn". The Col. Ed. reads against the MSS. *Sānimaṇḍapa* which would mean "carpet pavilion, pavilion of the curtains".

⁴ I. e. "peacock pavilion".

⁵ I. e. "mirror pavilion".

⁶ Ananta is here the name of the world serpent *Śeṣa* (see Horne, *Epic Mythology* 28—29). It is also called Anantaṭṭaga, and it would be possible to insert this name also here in *anantaṭṭepakkharāṇi* (instead of "coils of the s"). W. seems to do this. But then it is not clearly indicated in what the comparison consists. In my opinion the steps surrounding the pond were laid somewhat in this form:

⁷ I. e. "picture pond".

⁸ P. *śingāraya singārasaṅkapaṭṭaya*, lit. a vimāna in which the word *śingāra* (Skr. *śaṅgāra*, "ornament, jewel, a particular race") stands in front (of the name). *Paṭṭa* is used here instead of the customary *ādi* (note to 41. 6).

⁹ The botanical names are in the same order: 1. *borassus flabelliformis*, 2. *phoenix paludosa*, 3. *mesua ferrea*, 4. *rofflera tinctoria*, 5. *musa sapientum*, 6. *pterispermum acrifolium*, 7. *prema spinosa* (?). — *Veuses*

124 Now there was in the palace of the Monarch of all races
 of rulers, among those belonging to the closest of his followers,
 a man named Mahinda. He was a worshipper of the triad
 125 of the Jewels¹, understood what was blessed and unblessed,
 was wise, pure in heart, versed in the means of accomplishing
 126 many meritorious actions, never went astray through lust,
 hatred, fear or delusion, was never satiated with the fulness²
 of goodness, as little as the ocean by the (streaming in of
 127 the) waters. He was gifted with conscientiousness and modesty,
 attacked ever with brave courage and was a discerning guar-
 128 dian of moral discipline. Now this man with the favour
 of the sublime Monarch who was ever a helper in all (good)
 129 enterprises, caused a *pāsāda* to be built for the honour of
 the sacred Tooth Relic which was pure by its suffusion with
 the nectar of the eighty-four thousand portions of the doctrine.
 130 The same (*pāsāda*) was embellished by a roofing and doors
 and windows of gold and was resplendent with numerous
 131 paintings within and without. It gleamed with canopies of
 various colours like a golden mountain surrounded by a net
 132 of lightning. It was resplendent with curtains which glistened
 in brilliancy, and with a series of couches covered with costly
 133 coverings. It was like to a dwelling of the goddess of beauty,
 glorious as if all the grace found in each living being were
 134 concentrated in one spot³. It was resplendent with its vast,
 charming hall of the moon, which was wonderfully beautiful,
 white as light, or as pearl ornaments, or as geese, or as snow,
 135 or as a cloud. Banners were fixed on it, it was fair, with
 gilded summit, bright, calling forth delight, beautiful⁴.

113—123 again form one sentence which must be analysed according to note to v. 90. According to the description in this passage, the garden must have been full of buildings. That would fit the "promontory" on which there are many ruins, amongst others those of a bathing-pond.

¹ See note to 46. 17.

² P. *syehi* lit. by the floods.

³ The sentence must be construed thus: *śāśvato aya Sivaya jātantay abhayaṃ devalbhāṣitay rāmagayitay* (what is gracious = grace eye elattha piyāṭṭay).

⁴ The verses 124 to 135 are one sentence. The subject is Ma-

Further the King, the sole banner of the stem of the 136
nobility, possessed a dear consort who had come forth, re-
joicing the eyes of the people, as the moon (rises) from the
ocean, from (the house of) the great king Kittisirimagma¹, 137
who loved him, the highest of rulers, as Sītā (loved) Rāma.
Amongst all the ladies of the harem, many hundreds in number, 138
she was by far his best loved. She loved the triad of the 139
jewels and beyond her own husband who was like to the King
of the gods (Indra), she cared for none even as much as grass
whoever he might be. She did what the Lord of men wished, 140
had friendly speech, was adorned with the ornament of many
virtues such as faith, discipline and the like, was skillful in 141
dance and song, possessed an intelligence (sharp) as the point
of the kusa grass, her heart was ever cooled by the practice
of the virtue of pity². She, the Queen Kūpavati, most 142
beautiful of beautiful women, the clever, the virtuous, pure in
action, the highly-famed, mindful of the doctrine of the Victor 143
which teaches of impermanency, had learned many sayings of
the great Sage and kept them in her memory, as for instance
"Short is the life of the lamentable men; the pious man should 144
live as if his head were in flames; there is no escape from

kindamāśaka (v. 127 f.), predicate and object are *śāstrāṇi jātāni*, Verses 124-127 contain the attributes to the subject, verses 130-134 follow an adverbial in 128, 129 the attributes to the object *pāśāṇa*. It is to be noted that nothing is said about the spot where this temple of the Tooth Relic was built. A. M. Theer assumes that it must have stood in the Dīpaṭṭhāna, since the kings used to keep the sacred relic near the palace. He says (Munindrā ABC, II, 41: "Perhaps that puzzling structure called the Maṇḍabāṇa, without doors or windows may be the temple in question." V. 130 seems on the other hand to contradict this. However the Tooth Relic was in Kelapa in the early times of Parakkrama. Its recapture is first described in the following chapter. If then Mahinda's building was to serve for the keeping of it, its recapture was either actually expected or the structure belongs to the time after the close of the campaign described in Chap. 74. Cf. also 74. 108 ff.

¹ This seems to be the king of that name mentioned in 41.65. The name of the queen is given in v. 142.

² Cf. above v. 41 with the note.

145 death¹. Thus as she knew the short-lived nature of beings
 who wander about the ocean of existences, and as she knew
 that there was no firm hold there that could compare with
 146 meritorious works, so she was unwearied in much well-doing,
 and as thereby she achieved her speedy escape from the cycle
 147 (of rebirths) she built in the midst of the town a vast golden
 thūpa², as it were a golden ship to reach the saving shore
 of Nirvāṇa.

148 Further in this beautiful town the all-wise (king) had
 different kinds of streets laid down, many hundreds in number,
 adorned with many thousands of dwellings of two, three and
 149 more storeys and provided with various bazaars where all
 wares were to be had and in which day by day there was
 150 incessant traffic of elephants, horses and chariots — (streets)
 which were here and there enlivened by people who were ever
 indulging in great games.

151 Then he laid down in the vicinity three suburbs called
 152 Rājavesibhujāṅga, Rājakulāntaka and Vijita, adorned with
 three three-storeyed pāsādas which possessed every excellence
 153 and every beauty, and crowned by three vihāras which were
 154 named Veḷuvana, Isipatana and Kusinārā³. But between the

¹ The stanza is taken from *Saṅgīyuttā* 4.9.5 (= I. 105). It is worth noting that in S. the Sinhalese MSS. have in the same way as here in the Mhvs. the reading *kḷeyyaṇṇa*, whereas the parallel to the preceding stanza requires *kḷeyya* *saṃ*, which seems to be the Burmese reading. There can of course be no question of our correcting the passage, since the author without doubt followed the Sinhalese tradition, though erroneous. In its proper form the translation of the quotation runs: . . . "Short is the life of man, the pious man will despise it, he will live as if etc. etc."

² H. C. P. Bell. (ASC. 1909 = VI. 1914, p. 6) has already identified this with the thūpa of the so-called Pābulu-velvora, situated within the mangala, thus in the town itself and in its northeastern part.

³ In the account 78. 79 K. the three *sāḥḍanagārā* are called 1. Rājavesibhujāṅga, 2. Sthūpura (instead of Rājakulāntaka) and 3. Vijita and the vihāras built in them are given in order as Isipatana (in E), Kusinārā (in V) and Veḷuvana (in S). I believe the designation *Rājakulāntaka* ('end i. e. starting-point, of the dynasty') is an allusion to Sthūpura, for this was the name of the town founded by Vijaya's father Sthūbāhu (Mhvs. 6. 36) in Lāṅkāraṭṭa. To identify the suburb of Vijita with the

royal palace and the three towns the monarch had built at a distance of a *gāvuta*¹ from each other, charming sermon houses and image chapels² and splendid *vihāras* adorned with rest- 155 houses for bhikkhus from all four regions of the heavens.

In the town Pulatthi(nagara) by name furnished thus with 156 all accessories and provided with every luxury, like to a garden made beautiful by union with the joy of spring, which he 157 himself enlarged so that it was four *gāvutas* long and seven *gāvutas*³ broad, which bore his name — the beautiful one — 158 which possessed a splendid wreath of walls, which was resplendent with fair dwellings, which contained large as well as small streets, which was an elixir for the eyes — (in this town) 159 the Lord of men who was like to Puruṇḍada (Indra), who was skilled in the preserving of all advantages, those not yet achieved 160 and those already achieved, had fourteen gates erected: the superb King's Gate⁴, the beautiful Lion Gate, the great Ele- 161 phant Gate, further the Indra Gate, the gate called after Hanumant⁵, the lofty Kuvera Gate, the brightly painted Gaṇḍi Gate, as well as the Rākṣhasa Gate⁶, the high-towering Ser- 162

town of the same name mentioned in *Mhvs.* 7. 45 is quite unhistorical. But it is not impossible that the suburb was named after that town. The three monasteries were called after especially sacred places: ... *Veḷuvāna* after the park near Rājagaha which was given to Buddha by Anāthapiṇḍika; *Laṭṭapāna* after the park in Benares where Buddha preached his first sermon; and *Kusinārā* after the place where he entered Nirvāṇa. For *Veḷuvāna* see below note to 78. 87.

¹ Cf. 78. 91, 83. 20. According to the *Kimphīya* 2. 20 a *gāvuta* (sky. *gavyūta* or *gavyuta*) would be the equivalent of $\frac{1}{4}$ *yojana* (cf. note to 38. 68 and I, p. 342) that is, if the Indian *yojana* as is likely, is the standard of measurement, a little over two miles in excess to the Buddhist *yojana* the half of that.

² P. *saddhammapaṭṭivāḍhara* = *saddhammapāra paṭṭivāḍhara* ca.

³ If we reckon the *gāvuta* as over two miles then what is meant here could not possibly be the city with its ramparts alone which reached nothing like these dimensions, but the outlying open town as well.

⁴ For the King's Gate, *rajaśāra*, see note to 74. 199.

⁵ The monkey king, Rāma's ally in his campaign against Ravana, king of Lanka.

⁶ For Kuvera see note to 37. 106, for the *rakṣhasas* note to 39. 34. Gaṇḍi (the same in Skr.) is a name of the goddess Durgā, wife of Śiva.

163 pent Gate and the resplendent Water Gate, further the Garden Gate and the beautiful Māyā Gate¹, the Mahātitttha Gate², and the splendid Gandhabba Gate³.

164 In this manner did King Parakkamabāhu who possessed the firmness of the king of the mountains, whose intelligence was sharp as the thunderbolt, make the aforesaid small town of Palatthinagara which had suffered by many wars, splendidly adorned as the city of the Tūvatīpsa gods.

Here ends the seventy-third chapter, called <Account of the Rebuilding of Palatthinagara>, in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ Māyā is the name of the mother of Gotama Buddha.

² Through this gate ran in all probability the road leading to Anurādhapura and from here to the well known port Mahātitttha on the western shore of Ceylon.

³ P. *gandhabba* = Skr. *gandharva*, denotes a group of semi-divine beings who are regarded as the heavenly musicians. They are the male counterpart of the *arakara*, the *nymphe*.

CHAPTER LXXIV

ACCOUNT OF THE FESTIVAL OF THE TOOTH RELIC

With the idea that the original capital¹ Amrādhapura 1 which had been utterly destroyed in every way by the Cola army, was specially deserving of honour, since its soil was 2 hallowed while he lived² by the feet of the Master, distinguished by the wheel with its thousand spikes and its rim, and because it was the place where the southern branch of 3 the sacred Bodhi tree (was planted) and where a doṇa³ of relics was preserved - (with this idea) the Lord of men began to take in hand its restoration. Hereupon the discerning 4 Lord of men summoned a high dignitary and instructed him in accordance with his wishes. The latter accepted the charge 5 without disregarding it in any way, with bent head, made obeisance with clasped hands, betook himself to Amrādhapura 7 and himself acquainted with the appropriate action, began to carry out to the uttermost the king's command. Within the 8 compass of the capital of the former kings the skilled one restored within a short time the large and the small walls, the streets, the pāsāḍas and the gate towers, the charming 9

¹ P. *amāraḍḍhataḥ*. The word *araha* has a twofold meaning, that of "original" (as for instance in *amārabhāsa* "primitive language") and that of "first" (to which everything else goes back, as in *mūlāvaran* "first dignitary" &c. of "important", "pre-eminent").

² According to the legend the Buddha also visited the site of the future Amrādhapura during his three sojourns in Laṅkā. The picture of the wheel on the sole of the foot is one of the 32 great bodily marks of a *mahāpuruṣa* (see I, II, 17), who will either become a great world ruler or a Buddha.

³ A measure of capacity used specially for corn. Skr. *doṇa*.

bathing-ponds and the delightful gardens as they had been
 10 formerly; also the cetīyas of the three fraternities, the Mahā-
 cetīya and the others, as well as the numerous vihāras such
 11 as the Lohapāsāda and the like, as well as the pāsāda serving
 him as dwelling, with its gates, bastions and towers, with its
 12 royal courtyard, and embellished with a charming moon
 chamber, and brought it about that the whole town furnished
 13 with these and other marvellous works was as at oldtime. Thus
 he had the buildings set up by many former kings repaired
 14 in haste by one of his dignitaries. For all wishes are fulfilled
 for the wise who partake of the harvest of good deeds
 accumulated in many existences.

15 Hereupon the all-wise (Prince) laid the foundations of the
 town called Parakkama(pura)¹. It was furnished with gates
 16 and towers, with walls, moats, streets, pāsādas and shops and
 adorned with parks which were embellished with pāsādas,
 erected there for the shelter of many hundreds of bhikkhus
 17 who strove after moral discipline and other virtues. It was
 superb, prosperous and wealthy like Ālakamandā, the town
 of the gods, and ever crowded with people.

18 Then he issued orders as to the way in which the officials
 appointed over the various districts of the island of Sihala
 19 should collect without loss the taxes levied on each district
 without oppressing the people in their particular territory.
 20 Further in every month on the four Uposatha days, in ponds
 and all other places in the island of Laṅkā for all creatures

¹ A Parakkamapura is mentioned in 72. 151. It must have been situated in Dakṣiṇadeśa. If that is the town meant here, *śārapesi* in v. 17 can only refer to its restoration and embellishment. Moreover Pulatthīnagara itself bore the name of Parakkamapura. It was according to 70. 157 *attanṭamābā*, just as under Vijayabāhu I. it was called according to the Velukkūra inser. (EX. II. 246), Vijayarājapura. I consider it not improbable that verses 15 to 17 also refer to Pulatthīnagara and its restoration, and that the compiler who found the two names in different sources, referred them erroneously to two different towns. What he tells us of this Parakkamapura is in any case nothing more than the usual customary phrases. Pējāv. and Rājāv. say nothing about the founding of a town Parakkamapura.

without exception, such as game, fish and the like, living on 21
dry land and in the water he commanded safety (of life), he
who was himself threatened by no peril.

Now in the province of Rohana numerous vassals after 22
the death of the Monarch Mānābharaṇa, deviated from the
right way¹. Not knowing the character of King Parakkama, 23
and harassed in their hearts by fear they did not make their
appearance before the Sovereign. As they thought again and again 24
of their own shortcomings their terror was in course of time
redoubled. They knew in truth quite well that the great 25
courage of that lion-like King could not be surpassed by others;
all they thought of was that not a day's life would remain 26
to them once the union of the kingdom had taken place², but
they thought not at all of the further course (of events).
With speeches like this: "shall we ever permit a hostile army 27
even to set eyes on our country with its rivers, mountains
and ravines?" they brought all the inhabitants of the pro- 28
vince under their influence and betook themselves to the Queen-
mother Sugulā³. "Thy grief, o Queen, called forth by Mānā- 29
bharaṇa's death, shall not torment thy heart as it pleases.
Who then so long as we are in life, shall enter this our land 30
with its many inaccessible fastnesses?" With such like and 31
similar words they persuaded the Queen and all united, they
built at each difficult spot as far as the frontier of the 32
country, numerous fortifications, which were immovable even
by elephants, had trenches dug everywhere, placed there barri- 33

¹ P. *niggaṭiko*. The translation is uncertain. In Skr. *nirgaṭi* does not occur in literature. W. "were brought to great distress . . . and had become utterly helpless." I start from the fundamental meaning "to go out of", i. e. the right way.

² P. *ratṭhe anujātanapradhāṇe*. I believe that *anujātanā* = Skr. *anujayā* stands here as so often, in place of the abstract, as only in that case is the proper construction of the compound possible. The union of the kingdom consists in the incorporation of Rohana. The vassals fear that in such an event they will not escape justice.

³ The consort of Śirirāṭṭha (59. 45) and mother of the younger Mānābharaṇa.

cades of briars sharp-pointed as iron, made the roads in-
 34 accessible with felled and fallen trees. Thereupon all the sol-
 diers native to the province, thousands in number rebelled
 35 and took up their place everyone in one of the big strong-
 holds, girded for fight, well armed with offensive and defensive
 36 weapons, full of violence, with strong forces¹. The Queen
 Sugala who had not a mind capable of reflection and was
 37 inclined herself by nature to evil, let the fatal words of these
 people influence her. She made over to them the great pos-
 38 sessions of pearls, jewels and the like over which she had
 control, as well as the rich treasures belonging to the Tooth
 and Alms-bowl Relics as if she were throwing them into the
 39 fire, gave them office, ignorant of the right and the wrong
 occasion, and began herself through them to start the revolt.

40 When the Lord of men Parakkama whose courage was
 hardly to be surpassed, heard of these events he smiled gaily
 41 and joyously. He summoned his general Rakkha by name,
 a war-tried man, told him how matters stood exactly as he
 42 had heard of them and spoke to him (thus): "Arise in haste,
 quench thoroughly the forest fire of the hostile army which
 43 has broken out with a rain shower of arrows, appoint people
 whom it is necessary to appoint, to keep the country in order
 and come again quickly." Thereupon he sent him off with
 strong forces.

44 Now the Sīhala and Keraja (mercenaries) dwelling in
 Kotṭhasūra² banded themselves together with the Velakkāra
 45 force³ and took counsel together: "The Lord of men has sent
 forth many famous warriors together with high dignitaries to

¹ Verses 22-36 form one sentence. The subject is *adimanta* in 22 which is again repeated by *gaddā* in 34. The predicate is *visuddhima*. All the other verbs are gerunds with which are co-ordinated participles referring to the subject, or absolute locatives.

² The place lies not far from Polaththinagara in an easterly (south or north-easterly) direction see note to 61. 431. According to our passage, it seems to have been a garrison for mercenaries.

³ For the Kerajas see note to 53. 9, for the Velakkāras note to 60. 36. It is plain from our passage that the Velakkāras were a troop of (Dravidian) mercenaries.

take Rohaṇa: let us meanwhile take possession of Hajarattā.¹ And they all of one accord began the war. King Parakkama- 46
bāhu before whom every sovereign bowed, sent some digni- 47
taries who were heroes thither with fitting army and train. He had those slain who deserved it, granted several villages 48
to those inhabitants living under a common selfgovernment, had a number of other villages made into such as were de- 49
signed for the royal use² and free himself from fear³ of any
kind, he made an end of fear of the foe.

But after the general Rakkhā had with bowed head, pro- 50
strate, received the command of the Great King he marched,
the highly-famed hero, from Palatthinagara, betook himself 51
to the locality named Barabbala⁴ and halted there. When the 52
whole of the forces in Rohaṇa together with the inhabitants
of the province⁵ received news, in accordance with the facts,
of his gradual approach, they came to the decision: "as long 53
as we are in life we shall not permit him to cross the fron-

¹ It is plain from this passage that certain villages had been assigned to the mercenaries for usufruct. In addition to the execution of their ringleaders (18a b) they are now punished by the withdrawal of such villages which means a decrease in their revenues. Of the villages taken away some are allotted to peasant holders² as communal property (*gaya*), others are declared royal property. I do not believe therefore, that W. is right in translating *gaya* by "assemblies of monks". *Gaya* here is rather the technical, administrative term (*śāstr*, the same, cf. HE. s. v. *gaya* 3). For mediaeval village constitution in Ceylon on which this passage throws a side-light, see H. W. Connerose, H. U. p. 45 ff.

² P. *gaya* includes the two concepts: fear (subjective) and danger (objective). Cf. above v. 21.

³ H. W. Connerose discusses the campaigns described in 74. 50 ff. in his "Notes on Ceylon Topography in the twelfth century" H. Unfortunately the place names mentioned in verses 56-78 cannot be determined. Later details show however, that this part of the campaign took place in the districts on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga, mainly in Bintenne and the adjoining regions. Barabbala, Kantakavara, Ambulala, Sava, Devaendantibāvara, Kingsakavattā, Vajumakhatthali, Dēhāvēndibāvara and Saholara are unknown.

⁴ P. *mahāvaṃsa* and *raṭṭhāveśīna*: contrast between the regular army and the militia.

54 tier of our kingdom and enter here", and with great fury,
 reeking nothing of their life, they marched to the same place
 55 intent on the opening of hostilities. Thereupon the general
 Rakkha gave this army fearful battle, slew many soldiers,
 56 broke through the trees which they had felled and hung across
 the road, and with large forces reached the place called
 57 Kaṇṭakayama¹. He fought with the hostile army that had
 taken up its position there by the building of a stronghold,
 58 broke through the fortifications, forced an entrance and after
 robbing many thousand warriors of their life, he marched
 59 farther and came to the place called Ambalaha. He offered
 battle to the army stationed there, broke through the strong-
 60 hold there and made the whole battlefield full of flesh and
 blood. Then he marched from there farther, broke through
 61 the strong fortification of Sava and slew many soldiers. Be-
 yond this lay the forest Divācandaṇḍabāva hemmed in on
 62 both sides of the accessible road by high mountains, and where
 just at its heart the road was endangered and all traffic made
 impossible by many huge trees which they had felled and
 63 thrown down. In this forest from one to two gāvutas in extent
 the hostile army had laid down one behind the other seven
 very inaccessible fortifications whose stout gates were not to
 64 be shaken even by rutting elephants. Against this army that
 had firmly determined: "we shall in no case permit him to
 enter as he thinks fit into any single stronghold occupied by
 65 us"² he delivered for several months day and night terrible
 66 battles and while he slaughtered many thousands of warriors
 together with their leaders, the general Rakkha with large
 forces took up a position on the spot³.

¹ I. c. "Thorn wood". The part. *chinduto* is parallel with *ndento* in 55 c, *chindito* is subordinate to the part. *pāṇḍo*. Cf. *chinasapāṇḍo* *śarāṅḍo* in 38 c, as also *chindito* *pāṇḍo* (*raṅḍo*) in 62 b.

² I should prefer here to place the full stop after *sebhatho* and thus take this word in the *uṇṇo* *veṇṇo*. For the position of *hi* see note to 37. 114.

³ Verses 65—66 form one sentence. Subj. *Rakkhamāndhā* in 55 a, again repeated by *amāndhā* in 66 d; pred. is *viṇḍitha* in 66 c. The construction in v. 64—65 is as follows: . . . "after he in the

When the hero, the Great King Parakkama, heard during 67
his sojourn in Pulatthinagara from the mouth of the mes-
sengers of Rakkha's constant battles, he gave orders to the 68
Adhikārin Bhūta who dwelt in his palace thus: "An indecisive
struggle for so long a time with these wretched rebels is
fitting neither for me nor for thee; smite in pieces according 69
to these my orders the whole of the fortifications along with
their gales, slay the whole of the numerous army and send 70
me then speedily a true report of these doings." He assigned
him numbers of soldiers and sent this man experienced in the 71
art of war, to the scene of the fight¹.

Hereupon Bhūta marched forth from superb Pulatthinagara 72
and joined with strong forces the commander-in-chief Rakkha.
Without in any way departing from the orders of the illustrious 73
Lord of men, they both had doublets of buffalo hide made
(for their men) for protection against the arrows, made the 74
great army ready for battle, offered a sharp encounter, slew
numerous warriors, many hundreds in number, broke through 75
the seven strongholds, laid down as they were one behind
the other, started from there again and came to the village
of Kipsukavuttika². Here too they fought a fearful, bitter 76
fight. Then after they had set out from there and had reached
Vaparakkhatthali, and after they had here destroyed a hostile 77

forest D. (61 d) ... (there follow the attributes 61 d to 63 a) ... with
the army (65 b), which, after it ... had set up fortifications (63 b — 64 a),
was firmly determined ... had fought (65 d) ... "

¹ It is plain that Rakkha's action in the difficult ground of the
Divāmandantolūtaṇa forest had come to a standstill. Bhūta is sent to
his aid. Cf. further the note to v. 99.

² Here one might assume the end of the sentence, since the part.
gātā may be regarded as a finite verb. But the subject changes in the
sentence. In v. 72 the sing. *svā* is subject; but *yātā* must be supplemented
by an *addhā* (after Bhūta's joining with Rakkha). *Māreṇa* which is the
reading of all the MSS. (= skr. *māragantakā*) must also be taken as
plural. In the continuation of the sentence there is again a change of
subject. At first as we see by *catthentā*, the plural *abbhā* remains sub-
ject. Then in v. 78 it is the singular *Rakkhacāyavāṇṭhā*. The preceding
gerundives in verses 76—78 b are to be treated as loc. abs.

army which had approached from various directions, and there-
 78 upon ordered battle at the village called Dāḥbāvaḍḍhana and
 had further fought an action at the village called Sahedara,
 79 the general Rakkha who had large forces and train with him,
 sent on many thousands of warriors of his own neighbourhood¹
 80 to do away with the hostile army at Lokagalla. Then he de-
 stroyed a vast hostile army that approached with the intention
 meanwhile of overwhelming the commander-in-chief (Rakkha),
 and retired².
 81 The great four-membered army that had marched to Loka-
 galla so utterly destroyed the division there that only the
 82 tidings thereof remained, took away from it all its possessions³

¹ I take *ḥapetroua* in the sense of "putting aside for a particular purpose." By the removal of a considerable part of Rakkha's troops the foe is emboldened to make fresh attacks. The operations which H. W. Cosmarov certainly interprets aright i. e., now become topographically intelligible. Events hitherto have taken place along a line east of the Mahaveliganga. Rakkha probably follows the main road leading from Dasala by way of Mahiyanganga (Alet-nurru) to Ribile. With Cosmarov we may look for Sahedangāma somewhere in the region of Ribile. Here Rakkha is forced to halt, to secure in the first place his threatened right flank. The name Lokagalla without doubt corresponds to the modern Laggala. There is a small river of this name which rises on the saddle of Passum and flows northwards to the Mahaveliganga which it joins just where the river bends at right angles to the north. I am informed by Mudaliyar Waseesana-Badulla that an old short cut led across the saddle of Passum from Kattala along the Laggala-oya to the Mahaveliganga. The rebels had reckoned with the possibility that the enemy might use this road for their advance and had occupied it. Rakkha however, advances farther east along the main road. A farther penetration southwards lays him open to the risk however, of being attacked in the flank from Laggala or cut off in the rear. Hence the expedition in this direction briefly described here.

² All MSS. have *paḍḍaḍḍi*. I will not risk altering it. Moreover it makes good sense. Rakkha cannot for the moment advance. He is content to release himself from the foe who is pressing hard on him. Too much stress need not be laid upon the *monēra* "cut up" in 80d. It merely expresses the successful defence.

³ W. translates: ... "Yet could they not completely cut off their great resources." He has misunderstood *sachchattāna*. What we have to do

and betook itself then to the place where the commander-in-
 chief was sojourning. The two armies joined forces, advanced 83
 to Majjhimagāma¹ and here made the firm resolve: 'We shall
 not permit the commander-in-chief in Lokagalla to seize the 84
 sacred Tooth Relic and the precious Alms-Bowl Relic².' At 85
 the village of Kapṭakadvāravāṭa³ they fought a great battle
 with the hostile army, destroyed the troops of the enemy and
 then marched to Uddhanadvāra. With the hostile army which 86
 after laying down fortifications, had taken up a position there
 they fought a severe action, blew up the fortifications along 87
 with their gates, destroyed many of the enemy and took up
 a position in that village to equip army and train (now).
 Queen Sugala took the sacred relics, the Tooth and the Alms- 88
 bowl, and betook herself to Uruvelā⁴.

with here is not the *a prius* + *chūḍā*⁵, but the frequently used verb
acchinchati 'to take away by force' (skr. *ā + chūḍ*; cf. PTS. P. D. s. v.)
 The *dhana-jātay* which has been taken away consists of course of
 elephants, horses, chariots, arms.

¹ Now Medagama, 10 miles south of Rūhū. It still lies on the
 highroad leading from Mahāgāma in the south to Polonnaruwa. According
 to H. W. Coomaraswamy to the south of Medagama lately a milestone was
 discovered with a short inscription of Nissankā Malla (letter of 20th
 Dec. 1927).

² *Lokagallapāhasenānāikadūddhāra* cannot possibly be the subject of the
 principal sentence as W. assumes. That must be sought rather in *acc*
 used in 83a. There is no reason either why the generals who had
 fought at Lokgalla should be so set upon the gaining of the sacred
 relics. In a far greater degree was this the case with Rakkha. The
 idea is rather this: Parakkam's generals fear that the hostile troops
 which had been defeated at Lokagalla might withdraw to the main
 army and there insist above all on safeguarding the relics, since all
 was already lost in the field. This Rakkha and his followers were
 determined at all costs to prevent.

³ H. W. Coomaraswamy compares this with a present Kutupelella. I cannot
 find the name either in the Census or on the map. Sinh. *pyēla* means
 'gate' = P. *dvāra*.

⁴ For Uddhanadvāra see note to 61. 16. It was situated near Ma-
 namagala, thus about 10 to 12 miles SSE. of Medagama. According to
 61. 25 it was the capital of that part of Rohana called Aṅgharūpa
 which was ruled by Sirivallabha. Here his widow Sugala lived and the
 sacred relics were kept in her neighbourhood. Uruvelā whither she

89 But for the purpose of disposing of the hostile army in
 90 Dighavāpi¹ the Lord of men Parakkama had sent forth with
 an army the Adhikārin Kitti and the Jivitapattaharin Kitti and
 yet other dignitaries with a thoroughly equipped army and
 91 train². They engaged the foe who coming from the direction
 of Erāhulā³, had taken up a position at the village called
 92 Givalaba, in a terrible battle, broke through their fortifications
 there, killed many enemies, started from there again and
 93 reached Uddhagūma. There they laid down fortifications, carried
 on war for three months and put the great army to flight.
 94 With a hostile army that had erected fortifications near the
 locality called Hihoba, had dug trenches and spread thorn
 95 bushes, and which with massed troops had taken up a position
 96 ready for combat, they then fought a terrible battle. They broke
 through the whole stronghold together with the gates and
 entered by force repulsing each attack with a hail of arrows⁴.
 97 Thereupon they advanced farther and scattered as before, a
 hostile army that at a spot about a gāvuta in extent beside
 98 the village of Kirindagūma had as before set up fortifications
 and there taken up a position, and halted with vast forces at
 the place called Dighavāpi⁵.

brought them for safety is identified with good reason by Conze with Etimole which is situated about 5 to 6 miles south-east of Monaragala. What is curious is that Sugala when she is forced to flee, does not put a greater distance between herself respectively the relics, and the enemy.

¹ *Parakkam* (Ancient Ceylon, p. 336) was the first as far as I know, to identify this and rightly so with Mahakandiyaeva, 25 to 30 miles N.E. of Bihile and about the same distance S.W. of Batticaloa. The Rala-mahatmaya Bihile assured me that the old name Dikveva is still well known among the people.

² I do not believe that the expedition is only now set going after the occupation of Uddhavadūra by Rakka. It is far more likely that it was begun earlier by the two Kittis, probably sent off by Parakkama at the same time with Bhāta. The author is going back in his description.

³ Conze is assuredly right in identifying this with the present district Eravur, S.W. of Batticaloa.

⁴ Lit. They made the combat one where it was difficult for anyone to come near (*durāsahaya*).

⁵ The single localities mentioned such as Uddhagūma, Hihoba,

The Ruler of men, Parakkama, the best of far-seeing men, 99
 sent to his dignitaries who were at that place, the fol-
 lowing message: "Shattered¹ in combat the foe is in flight. 100
 They have seized the splendid sacred relics of the Alms-bowl
 and the Tooth and are fain, through fear, to cross the sea. 101
 So have I heard. If this is so, then the island of Laṅkā will
 be desolate. For though here on the Sihala island various 102
 jewels and pearls and the like and costly kinds of various
 precious stones are found, yet of quite incomparable costliness 103
 are the two sacred relics of the Lord of truth, the Tooth and
 the Alms-bowl. At the cost of much valuable property and 104
 by the constant amassing of well-armed and armed warriors I
 have freed this superb island of Laṅkā from every oppression, 105
 but all my pains would be fruitless². My head adorned with 106
 a costly diadem sparkling with the splendour of various precious
 stones, would only be consecrated³ by the longed-for contact 107
 with the two sacred relics of the Great Master, the Tooth
 and the Alms-bowl. Therefore must ye all, with the same 108
 end in view, with army and train and without in any way
 departing from the orders I give, conquer the hostile army 109
 and speedily send me the splendid Tooth Relic and the sacred
 Alms-bowl." The Adhikārin Kitti by name who was in the 110
 district of Dighavāpi, received his message with bowed head,
 and with his division after assembling about him the many 111
 leaders, he marched to the place which the commander-in-chief

Kirinda cannot be determined. At any rate this Kirinda is different from the place of the same name on the coast south of Tissamahārāma. Doubtless however, these events took place on a line running from north to south west of Batticaloa. Moreover the object of the whole undertaking is intelligible. By pressure on the right wing of the enemy the thrust against the main position in the centre at Uddhavadvāra was to be eased. The army columns then unite at Uddhavadvāra for the decisive blow (c. 111, 112).

¹ P. *khīṇaditū* in a passive sense. See Cālaya, ed. I, Introd. p. XV.

² Lit. "These by me, the island liberator, made efforts will be perfectly *kāmasā* "at one's own pleasure") fruitless."

³ P. *pariśīto* (lit. "purified") with reference to *attowaṇagga*, because this ("the head") is only a paraphrase for the person ("my head" = "I").

112 (Rakkha) was occupying. A vast army consisting of hostile
 divisions and inhabitants of the country¹, advanced with all
 113 its leaders, plentifully supplied with arms, equipped for combat,
 brave, a veritable host of heroes, against the village of
 114 Uddhannadvāra, full of lust for battle. "Of the enemy who
 have invaded our country we shall not let a single foe escape.
 115 On the road which would be the line of retreat of the foe
 we shall place barricades and make the roads to an extent
 116 of two to three gāvutas impassable and round about the terri-
 117 tory occupied by the enemy cut off the supply of food. Then
 when the whole hostile army is weakened we shall fight an
 action with it in which because of our rain of arrows they
 118 will have difficulty in approaching us², and destroy them."
 So thought the army and after it had in the way above
 described, put up strong barricades it took up a position,
 119 keen for battle. Thereupon the Adhikārin Bhūta, the com-
 mander-in-chief Rakkha and the Adhikārin called Kittī, the
 120 heroes, crushers of the hostile army, after equipping their
 great army on the battle-field advanced thence according to
 121 orders all together and destroyed in a terrible combat a great
 number of soldiers so that sought but their name remained.
 They broke with large forces through the stronghold called
 122 Mahārāvura, marched thence further, assembled all of them at
 the place Vayalaggama by name and war-experienced (as they
 123 were) took up a position there. The hostile army which was
 lying opposite in the district called Samunagalla they destroy-
 124 ed in the way described above, and after they had in a terrible
 battle which was fought at the place called Badaguna scattered
 in desperate battle the entire army of the foe which stood here
 125 and had also put to flight in combat the whole army which after
 laying down fortifications in the district called Uruvelū, had
 126 taken up their position there, they took possession of the

¹ I read *saṃpattaraggikā* and believe this adjective belongs in the
subhārasa of the following compound. We have thus again the distinction
 between the regular troops and the militia.

² Cf. above v. 96 and note.

splendid relics of the sacred Bowl and of the sacred Tooth and halted on the spot at the head of their mighty army¹.

At that time an officer of King Mūnābharaṇa, the general 127
by name Sūkarabhātudeva, the foolish one, who had been placed 128
in chains by King Parakkama, had burst his fetters and had
escaped to Rohaṇa. Then the Ruler of men summoned the 129
Adhikārin Mañju² and spake to him (thus): "The general
Sūkarabhātu has fled to his country, thou must come up with 130
him before he has gained a hold anywhere." Therewith
the Lord of men sent him off. He betook himself from Pu- 131
laithinagara to the place called Sāpataganu³. There he fought
a great battle with the hostile army. He slew many soldiers 132
and after laying down a fortification took up a position him-
self there at the head of his large army.

Now⁴ all the many rebels, each in his division, roused the 133
whole population of the country down to the very boys (in

¹ Herewith one object of the warlike operations has been attained. The actions described in vv. 129-136 must have taken place in a relatively limited territory SE. of the modern Monaragala. As the sequel shows, Parakkama's generals had obviously not yet advanced as far as Guttakāla (Buttala) (cf. v. 154, 156).

² It is remarkable that the MSS. have the form Mandin. Likewise 75. 132, 135. It is however beyond doubt that the same general is meant as the one mentioned in 74. 144, 75. 139 as Mañju.

³ Conze'sson identifies this with the modern Sapataganuva. It lies about 8 miles NW. of Badulla in the Vignulva Korale, on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga at the spot where it flows from west to east. This throws light on the whole episode. Since Sūkarabhātu has crossed the Mahaveliganga, it may be said that he has escaped to Rohana. His object was plainly to organise the rebellion in Malaya, in the rear and flank of Rakkha's troops. For that reason Parakkamabāhu is forced to send a new division against him. Mañju suppresses the movement in Malaya, Sūkarabhātu himself however, escapes, joins the rebels in position opposite Rakkha, and takes over the leadership here in the sequel (see v. 156). Mañju remains posted for the moment in order to safeguard the flank of the main army.

⁴ I believe that v. 132 closes the Sūkarabhātu episode for the moment. The sequel takes place as v. 136 shows, in front of Rakkha's army. A more exact localisation is impossible, since the individual places cannot be identified. The situation only becomes clear again in v. 154.

134 open revolt). With the firm resolve, even at the sacrifice of
 135 their life, not to give up the two relics of the Tooth and of
 136 the Alms-bowl, they assembled with hostile intent, mastered
 137 by insolence, at the village called Bhattasūpa. Thereupon the
 138 commander-in-chief Rakkha, as also the Adhikārin Kitti and
 139 the Adhikārin Bhūta and many other officers gave terrible
 140 battle to the hostile army, and skilled in war as they were,
 141 let not two escape by the same way. They took, in loyal
 142 devotion to the King, the Tooth Relic and the Bowl Relic
 143 with them, instituted a great sacrificial festival and withdrew
 144 unthreatened from any quarter. Now the whole hostile army,
 well equipped, having taken up arms with fury, gathered
 together from every side¹ at the place called Denaṭṭarala and
 fought a mighty, terrible and horror-raising battle². By the
 (corpses of the) men slain in the terrible fight and (the mass
 of) the cast-off weapons the commander (Rakkha) and the
 other dignitaries, left (the foe) on every side not even room
 to place their feet, and after taking³ with them the splendid
 relics of the sacred Bowl and of the sacred Tooth, they reach-
 ed the village named Saṃpanṇukokilla.

143 Carried off by an attack of dysentery, the commander
 Rakkha now went thither in accordance with his doing — all
 144 living forms are indeed transitory. The two adhikārin Mañña
 and Kittī by name⁴ without omitting any honour due to his

¹ Denaṭṭarala according to Cosensier is now even the name for Okkamṇṇṭiya which lies a few miles E. of Battala. Popular tradition identifies the vihāra of Okkamṇṇṭiya with the monastery where Siddhātissa found refuge after his defeat in battle by his brother Daṭṭhagāmaṇi. See *Mhvs.* 24. 39 ff.

² Verse 140 a is hopelessly corrupt. According to the somewhat high-handed emendation of S. and B. W. translates "the whole army of the enemy that was at Yāpi".

³ Note that the line *gahetvā purāṇe dāṭṭhāpattidhātubhāṇṭake* is exactly the same as v. 126 a b. Nevertheless *gahetvā* in the two places must be taken in a different sense. As in this passage a *śāṭhā* of 6 *pūḍas* appears in the same way as these appear elsewhere, the line may be a later addition. The intention was to stress that Rakkha took the relics along with him on all his expeditions. Cf. v. 153.

⁴ One expects that along with Kittī Bhūta would be mentioned

rank, carried out the ceremonies of the dead¹. Now that the 145
 wise commander was dead and the Ruler of men tarried afar
 off, they brought together with exceeding energy the whole 146
 army of the Sovereign who was endowed with terrible courage,
 and while these heroes allowed no possibility of any sort for 147
 any kind of panic and celebrated a great festival for the two
 sacred relics, they sent their report to the illustrious Ruler 148
 of men and tarried yet a few days on the spot. When the 149
 Sovereign Parakkama heard of these events he had erected²
 on the spot where the commander had been hurst, a vast 150
 alms-hall with four entrances, and in order to honour (the
 dead) by sacrifice he sent the (following) order: "Collect for 151
 those bhikkhus coming from the four regions of the heavens
 and for the other bhikkhus a plentiful gift of alms," (Thus)
 he (commanded), the best among the grateful, the first among
 those who have attained knowledge. The two experienced 152
 commanders joyfully carried out the order in fitting manner
 and remained on the spot.

The rebels thought, since the commander-in-chief was dead 153
 and they (themselves) had gained a leader in Sūkṛabbhāto,
 they would meanwhile try for victory, and all gathered to- 154
 gether in the district of Guttasālū³. When the vast, foe- 155
 crushing army of King Parakkama heard that, it advanced 156
 with its leaders, fighting at various places a severe action,
 from all sides against the district of Guttasālū. Thereupon all 157

here. Cf. the association in v. 119, 136. Mañju is still in position (v. 166 ff.)
 in the N. W., in Mahāya. He had thus merely to be summoned to the
 funeral rites.

¹ P. *petakiccāni*. According to the Brahmanical view as it is here
 and often expressed in ceremonial, the deceased before he is admitted
 to the world of the manes, becomes a *preta* a "roaming soul". The
ekādikṣatāśāntika is offered to the *preta*. BULLASONBY, *Ritual literature* p. 90.

² I am now of opinion that direct speech begins first at 150 c. The
 gerund *kavetā* is, as seems clear from 149 c.1, to be subordinated to the
 finite verb *posasi*.

³ Now the modern Battala. See note to 51. 109. The scene of the
 contests and the further course of the operations is now again per-
 fectly clear.

the rebels gave up this village and withdrew through fear to
 158 the village (and) district of Mahāgāma¹. When the Sovereign
 Parakkama heard of these events he of matchless bravery sent
 159 a messenger with the order: "That ye fight as chance wills
 it, while dragging the relics about from village to village
 160 pleaseth me not. Send ye both relics at once to me." When
 161 the commanders of the army received this message they with
 the intention of sending the sacred relics, the Tooth and the
 162 Bowl to Pulatthinagara, entrusted an officer with their care,
 started from the village called Hintālavānagāma, and after they
 163 had as before fought a terrible battle with the approaching
 hostile army at Khiragāma² and had put it to flight on all
 164 sides, they entered Khiragāma, fought here also a severe action
 and cut down many. Then they marched farther from that
 place, fighting at Tanagaluka, and Sukhagiriḡāma, at Kaṭa-
 165 dorāvāda³ and Ambagalla⁴, as well as at Taṇḍulapatta like-
 wise a furious action, and after bringing hither with great
 pomp both relics, the Tooth and the Bowl, they sent them
 166 to the Adhikārin Mañju. This (officer) had at the village
 called Sākhāputta⁵ and at Lokagalla cut down many soldiers
 and brought all the dwellers in (the district of) Dhūttanayada⁶

¹ New Magama, the old capital of Rohaya (see note to 45. 42) in the agricultural district of Tissamahārāma.

² Khiragāma is the place where according to 79. 71 (cf. note to the passage) a cetiya was erected to Queen Ratanañjali who was cremated there. Compositor as he informs me by letter (20th Dec. 1927), has discovered this stupa in Udakkumbura near Alupola in the Kandukuru Korale, about halfway between Battula and Medagama. It is situated not far from the old high road. It is not impossible that we have to do in v. 162 ff. with movements of retreat in a northerly direction from Battula, since Bhūta and Kittī were trying to get into touch with Mañju. For Hintālavānagāma see also note to 76. 7.

³ Perhaps the same as the Kaṭṭakudāvānava mentioned 74. 88. Thus Compositor.

⁴ W. separates the compound *Kaṭadorāvāmbagallake* into *Kaṭadorāvā* cū *Dambagallake* which I consider impossible.

⁵ According to Compositor the same as Sūputtagumura; certainly right. The latter form is nearer to the Sinhalese.

⁶ The mention of Lokagalla now Laggalla (see note to 74. 79) shows

into his power. He was stationed there, went forth to meet 167
 the relics of the Tooth and the Bowl, celebrated for them
 sacrificial festivals day and night, entrusted the Kammavāṭha 168
 Aṭṭhama with the care of the relics and sent the two relics to
 the Great King. Thereupon he set forth, marched to the vil- 169
 lage called Bokusaṭṭa and held counsel, being versed in counsel,
 with all the dignitaries: "Our foes know their own country. 170
 When we come near them they disperse on every side, pene-
 trate then (again) into the territory that we have brought 171
 into our power, in order to conquer it, and vex the people.
 But would our master, the world conqueror, prize as much as 172
 a blade of grass, a kingdom even if it were utterly subdued,
 but by disregard of his commands, he who knows the
 course of war? Therefore will we honour the command of 173
 our illustrious monarch and in order that the foe may not be
 able to return to the territory¹ already subdued by us, post 174
 there at different places a strong force with officers, and when
 thus our enemies have their roots cut off by us, we will set 175
 forth to lay our heads at the foot lotus of our master." Thus
 he resolved who was wise among those who understand de-
 cisions. Hereupon all the dignitaries who agreed with his 176
 words, set forth with the vast army, ready for battle, and 177
 marched to the village of Vāḍḍasāragāma in a district where
 many roads meet. After they had arrived there and deprived
 many foes of their life, they set forth thence and built a 178
 fortification at the place called Bahupāsāpa. Having posted
 there the Laṅkāpura² Kitti and another large army consisting 179

that Mañju was still in position near the place where he had come into
 contact with Sākumbhāṭṭa (74.131 and note). From 70.17 it is clear
 that Pannanagarāṭṭha was a district in Malaya, approximately correspond-
 ing to the present Vinyalaya division.

¹ The gen. *vasikataṇṇa phasaṇa* stands instead of the loc. governed
 by *parimantā*. Cf. Ollar, ed. I, introd. p. XVI.

² W. translates "Kitti and Laṅkāpura". He takes the last-named
 apparently for the general of this name (76.63) often mentioned in the
 sequel to whom apparently 70.218 also refers. According to the last
 passage this Laṅkāpura was the son of the Laṅkāddhinātha Kittu.

of the four members, all the dignitaries and leaders set forth
 180 at the head of the main army with large forces to subdue
 from one strip of country to the other the numerous rebels
 in the district called Dighavāpi¹.

181 Meanwhile the Ruler of the kingdom, King Parakkamabāhu,
 tarried in beauteous Pulatthinagara where there was no war
 182 trouble. Endowed with the gifts of faith and insight and
 with the effects of many meritorious works, he the first among
 183 those versed in art, spent the day in pleasant pastimes. But
 now when he learned that the relics were gradually drawing
 nearer, he spake, his heart full of the greatest satisfaction
 184 and joy: "In truth a great gain for me! Blessed is my life,
 the finest fruit of my labours for the peace of the realm is
 185 mine now that I may behold and reverence these two relics
 of the Monarch of sages." With these and the like exclama-
 186 tions he the virtuous one, went forth well bathed, beautifully
 clad, well anointed and beautifully adorned at the head of
 187 the festively arrayed princes and dignitaries, like to the moon
 in autumn when it is surrounded by the stars, the distance
 188 of a yojana to meet (the relics). At the first glimpse he who
 was honoured by the pious, honoured them with all kinds of
 ornaments, with the most varied kinds of precious stones and
 189 pearls, with costly jewels, with all kinds of incense, with lamps
 190 and sweet-smelling flowers and with many perfumes giving
 expression to his reverence, as if the Enlightened One were
 191 still in life. Unceasingly shedding tears of joy and with tins
 hairs bristling as if the inward rapture had burst forth,
 192 beautifying his whole body, and with floods of the highest
 joy making drunk his soul, as if he possessed limbs which
 193 were overwhelmed by showers of the finest nectar, the stand-

¹ Mañju's plan was plainly this, to suppress the revolts which were constantly breaking out in the rear of the army stationed at Guttasālū-butṭala, in the same way as he had until now covered the flank in Dhanuṃgaḍala. Hence he now marched eastwards into the Dighavāpi district. In *Mhv.* 76. 3. 4 Bāḥupāsāṃ is likewise associated with Dighavāpi. Verses 176—180 form one sentence in which the subject *sabbhe* 'we' (v. 176) is once more repeated by *sabbhe* 'we' (v. 177) or (v. 179).

fast one, the superb one bore the splendid Tooth Relic on his head, like to the Moon-bearer¹ who bears the crescent moon upon his head. He showed all his companions the two relics 194 while well versed in the sacred writings, he proclaimed their glory, and after he the all-wise had had a great sacrificial 195 festival celebrated by them (his companions) the Ruler of men had the relics laid down on the spot². He who kept a watch 196 over all his senses, set up a strong guard; he commanded that gifts of every kind should be offered, and then his heart filled 197 with the joy of faith, he returned with his dignitaries and his train to his abode like god Brahmā to the Brahma palace.

Thereupon the King had erected in the middle of the 198 town for the Tooth Relic a splendid temple of fine proportions, like to the hall of assembly, Sudhammā³. From the King's 199 Gate onward⁴ he had the road for the distance of a yojana made perfectly level like the palm of the hand. Then he who 200 had his joy in the welfare of all beings, had erected everywhere triumphal arches with coloured pictures on them that delighted the heart of the people, and beneath these outspread 201

¹ Name of Śiva who is represented with the crescent moon in the hair above his forehead.

² P. *utthāra*, i. e. just at the spot where he had raised the Tooth Relic to his head and showed it to his train. According to vv. 187, 199 it was about a yojana (that is about nine miles) from the southern door of the town. Here the relics are kept provisionally until their festive entry into the town.

³ Skt. *sūta sudhammā*, the hall of the god Indra. E. W. Hornum, *Epic Mythology*, p. 58. It is difficult to say which building in Pāṇasavva is meant by this *sūthādhāmaghara*. According to 73, 124 ff. Mahinda one of the king's followers had built such a temple. Later on (75, 41) the circular building in Jetavanāsāma is mentioned as the temple of the Tooth Relic. This one can however scarcely be meant in this passage, as it would be difficult to compare it with a *sūthā*. Probably the relics were changed about from place to place and this is reflected in a certain vagueness of the tradition.

⁴ See 73, 166. As the relics were brought hither from the south we may assume that the King's Gate lay in this direction. The loc. *sa-jaleśāramā* in place of the abl. with *paṭṭhaya* is explained by the influence of the metre. Likewise 75, 72.

canopies¹ tied with garlands of all kinds of flowers in gaily-
 202 hued succession. The pillars of the triumphal arches he decked
 singly with different stuffs and the upper part he provided
 203 with rows of umbrellas and whisks², with bunches of all kinds
 of flowers, with fluttering cloths³ and banners and other costly
 204 things fit as votive offerings. The two sides of the street he
 embellished with fruit-bearing trees, such as saundras⁴, banana,
 205 araka and coco palms and furnished them with vases filled
 with charming nasegays, with all kinds of banners and pennons,
 206 with lamps and incenses and the like, and adorned the road,
 capable of distinguishing the true from the false way, like the
 207 street Sudassana of the lord of the thirty gods⁵. Then after he
 who understood how to win good people for himself, had speedily
 furnished the gate court of the temple of the Tooth Relic
 208 like to (the town) Alaka⁶, the Monarch had a priceless jewel
 209 hollowed out and filled with sweet-smelling powder. Here the
 Increaser of the realm placed the superb Tooth Relic, then
 210 laid the jewel in a casket of precious stones and this again
 he placed in a costly box of gold. But the Bowl Relic he
 211 placed in a costly golden *maṇḍapa* that sparkled with the
 rays of various precious stones, that was wonderful and
 212 shimmering like the rainbow, that rested on four wheels, that
 was indeed lovely and like to a bundle of rays of the rising
 sun, on a beautifully arranged seat covered with costly carpets
 213 in a sweet-smelling layer of flowers. Then he capable of
 maintaining what has been won, made people of the clan of

¹ P. *vāṭṭānāṃ paṭṭānake*, lit. "outspreadings of canopies." *Vidāśa* *saṃmasamāntare* precedes. The stretching out of the canopy is described by the three derivatives of the root *pat* (with *vi*, *pa* and *ang*).

² The whisk, *cāmara*, made of the tail of the yak, has graminious, belongs like the umbrella to the insignia of royalty.

³ P. *vāṭṭānā*. The word cannot mean "canopy" again here. The instrumentals in v. 202 d and 203 are governed by *saṃjjetā*.

⁴ Name of the King's canopy.

⁵ P. *śatāsudassana*. *Aśura* or *Śakra* is meant. *Vidāśa* is also in Skt. a general designation for the gods. *Sudassana* is in epic poetry the name of Indra's palace (E. W. Housley, *Epic Mythology*, p. 63, 141).

⁶ The name as *Ālakapāṇḍita* (34. 106), town of the God Kaveri.

the Lambakappas with umbrellas, whisks and swords in their hands and other people of noble families place themselves round the maṇḍapa for its protection. Round about the maṇḍapa he placed splendidly attired dancing girls in many hundreds of (other) costly maṇḍapas, each of these being accompanied by people bearing lutes, flutes, drums and the like in their hands and by bands of female musicians who were like to the heavenly musicians¹, to do honour with their dance, their song and their music (to the relics). With all kinds of flowers, with incense and various perfumes he filled the town with fragrance² and delighted the crowd of people. With the light of many thousands of lamps he transformed the heavenly regions and the intermediate regions into pure glory. With rows of umbrellas and whisks, with rows of coloured banners and all kinds of pennons he veiled the whole firmament. With the trumpeting of elephants and the neighing of horses, with the clatter of chariot wheels and the rattle of kettledrums; with the enrapturing tone of all the festive shell trumpets, with the roll of the great drums and the cries of victory of the bards; with the shouts of acclamation and loud clapping of hands and the jubilant cries (of the people) he filled the regions of the heavens with noise³. The Monarch himself arrayed with all his ornaments, mounted his favourite, beautiful elephant⁴ which was hung with coverings of gold, and sur-

¹ P. *gandhabbā*. The *gandhabbā*, skr. *gandharvāḥ* are semi-divine beings, the heavenly musicians. They are thought of as males, their feminine counterpart are the *Apsaras*. A feminine *gandhabbā* could only arise in the Pāli stage after the more general meaning 'musician (pure and simple)' had been formed for the masculine alongside of the original meaning.

² P. *raṅgāra* from the denom. *raṅga*, likewise in *Mhva.* 5. 139 'His sent after being perfumed, used to be hung up'. My translation of that passage was wrong.

³ P. *saddhakāramāśāṣṭa*. By the constantly repeated cry of *saddha* the people are accustomed to give expression to their joy and enthusiasm during festive processions. *Kāraṇa mahārāśāṣṭa*, lit.: 'muffle the heavens talkative'.

⁴ P. *paravarāṣa* *vāṇa* . . . *saddha*.

225 rounded by many dignitaries, who rode their steeds¹, he
 226 went forth with great pomp² from the splendid town, betook
 himself to the sacred Tooth Relic and to the glorious Bowl
 Relic, revered them in worthy fashion with hands folded
 227 on the brow, and while offering to them with his own hands
 sweet-smelling flowers he went on his way with both relics³.
 228 Now at an unusual time a great cloud gathered spreading
 herself forth⁴. With her hollow rumbling she increased the
 roll of the drums and with the bright banquet of the rainbow
 229 she adorned the space of the heavens. She made lustrous
 lightning quiver on all sides, an instructress for the dance
 230 begun by the peacocks. Together with the dust raised by
 231 the hoof-beat of the horses she made the wreath of the sun's
 rays disappear and veiled the whole firmament in thick darkness.
 232 When the dignitaries saw all this they thought again and
 again: she will pour forth violent rain to disturb the high
 233 festival, and their hearts filled with sore trouble, they betook
 themselves to the all-wise Ruler and considered what was to
 234 be done. But the Great King who knew the excess of his
 own power and the unimaginable majesty of the great Sage,
 235 spake (thus): "Be ye not troubled; here a marvellous high
 festival is being celebrated that captivates the hearts of men
 236 and gods, and I have set forth with unapproachable courage,
 rich in merit, rich in wisdom, rich in glory, rich in fame.
 237 What god, what Mara and Brahma would be able to hinder
 238 the magnificent festival taken in hand by me? Harbour there-
 fore no fear when ye convey the two relics, but set forth on

¹ P. *vāhanicollāsa*. The word *vāhana* means it is true, not merely riding animals but vehicles of every kind, also chariots.

² P. *ambhāreṇa maharēṇa* seems to be a transposition of *maharēṇa ambhāreṇa*. D. I. 49⁴⁷, M. II. 118¹⁴ we have *maharēṇa vajjambhāreṇa*. Buddhaghosa says (Somy. I. 146¹¹) *ambhāreṇa vajjambhāreṇa*, *ambhā* ca *vajjambhāreṇa*; *ambhāreṇa* ti pi *paṭi*, *ambhāreṇa* ti *utthā*; *kāpāpāriyāya* eva.

³ Verses 158 to 227 form one sentence. The principal verb is *paṭipajji*. The preceding verbs are gerunds or present participles.

⁴ Lit.: A great untimely cloud came up, spreading itself out (v. 231 c d) increasing . . . decorating . . . etc, making the whole firmament veiled in a mass of darkness.

your way." With these words the discerning (prince) set forth. Then the great cloud while filling all the ponds and rivers 239 outside the range of the festival with floods of rain, as she 240 approached the great procession, moved along before it and rained just enough to lay the dust of the ground! When all 241 the inhabitants of the town who had gathered together and the virtuous sons of the Sage, many hundreds in number, saw this miracle they cried: "In truth of great majesty is this 242 Ruler of men, the foe-subduer; in consequence of his high merit he has appeared in Laṅkā. Here is merit, here is wisdom, 243 here is pious devotion* to the Tathāgata, here is fame and glory and exceeding great sublimity." Proclaiming these and 244 other words of highest wonderment they filled all regions of the heavens with loud songs of praise. While thus the Monarch 245 accomplished such a series of wondrous things as had never been seen or heard of before, he celebrated the high festival 246 in a manner befitting his majesty, and after the wise (prince) had had the two relics brought into the temple of the Tooth Relic, the hero who was a single light for the whole world, 247 celebrated for seven nights long a festival of lamps.

Thus did the King Parakkamabāha before whom monarchs 248 did obeisance, institute in pious fashion for the glorious relics a great festival that like none other called forth joy, rejoicing, wonder and admiration from all people who beheld it.

Here ends the seventy-fourth chapter, called "Account of the Festival of the Tooth Relic", in the Mahāraṃsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

* *Āntrāna parato vṛgān* must be joined "placing itself at the head". The acc. *dhara-parāṅga-mūrtiḥ* is governed by *parāṅgaḥ vṛgān* (para. part. of *neti*) lit. bringing to rest, stilling.

* Notice here the expression *Mūrti* = skr. *bhakti* i. e. love, surrender in faith. The *bhaktimārga* as path to salvation comes in Hinduism as third after *brahmavṛga*, practice of the ritual, and after *jñānamārga* philosophic knowledge. The use of *Mūrti* in this passage shows plainly the influence of Hindu ideas on Buddhism. What *Vigra* is to Hinduism that Buddha is here — the object of *bhakti* (see H. Jacobi, *Die Entwicklung der Gottesidee bei den Indern*, p. 281). The word *Mūrti* occurs again in the same sense in 85. 33 and 121 and in 95. 9, 10 in *Sarabhatti* which is contrasted with the Buddhist faith.

CHAPTER LXXV

THE CONQUEST OF ROHANA

1 Now all the dignitaries and leaders set forth with great
 2 forces to occupy the district of Dighavāpimajjala¹. After
 fighting a great battle at the place Savanaviyala and utterly
 3 destroying the stronghold there with its twelve gates, and
 after fighting further at the place Gomayagāma, at Chaggāma
 4 and at the stronghold Balapāsāpa² a severe action and shattering
 the hostile army, they halted at the stronghold named
 5 Balapāsāpa with array and train. Thereupon the dignitaries
 and leaders set out thence, fought a sharp combat in the
 6 district of Mahavattthuka, and while fighting at various places
 — at Vadhogimnakapāsāpa, at the village called Mulutta, at
 7 Senaguttagāma, at Bolagāma, at the place Vānaragāma and at
 Gallambattthikagāma great battles in terrible succession, they
 marched from all sides against the village of Hittālaranagāma³.

¹ The narrative starts immediately after 74.180 and continues the description of the operations set on foot by Mañja. Cf. *sabbe 'muccā padhāna ca mahabattiparakkhatā* (74.179cd) with *sabbe amucca ca padhāna ca mahabattā* (75.1ab).

² Balapāsāpa is already mentioned in 74.178. It must be assumed either that the place had in the meantime been abandoned by Kittī or that vv. 2, 3 are merely a repetition of 74.178ff. Conzebrun identifies Chaggāma with the modern Śakammas, situated near the east coast at Tirukovil.

³ It is, I believe, impossible to determine the places named in vv. 5, 6. But evidently the troops march in broad alignment through the district of Dighavāpī in a concentric direction — hence *samantata* — to Hittālaranagāma. This must be looked for according to 74.162 near Kūmāgāma, thus somewhat north of Battala. In this region the troops of Kittī and Hittā were probably standing. Thus there is evidently a plan for uniting the whole army and striking a decisive blow in the neighbourhood of Guttasūlā and Mahāgāma.

With the hostile army that stood here after it had erected 8
 on a space of three *gāvutas*¹, a strong fortification with many
 entrenchments, they fought a great battle, slew numbers of 9
 soldiers and took up a position on the spot, spreading fear
 amongst the foe. But now the rebels all set off for Digha- 10
vāpimapaḍala with the intention of (re-)taking the (already)
 captured province². When the dignitaries in *Hintālaṅgāma* 11
 received exact tidings of this undertaking they sent off many
 soldiers. These covered in two nights a tract of ground of 12
 twenty *gāvutas*³, fought a great battle, cut down the foe and 13
 so terrified them that they gave up trying to renew the con-
 test. Then they returned victorious to their place⁴. Hereupon 14
 all the dignitaries near this village having fought with the
 foe — who after throwing up an entrenchment at the place 15
 named *Ādipādapunnāgakkhaṇḍa* were standing in the district
 of *Guttasūhā* — a great battle and after likewise fighting at
Corambagāma, further at the village of *Mulānagāma* and at 16
Kuddālamapaḍala a severe action, set forth from the place called 17
Hintālaṅgāma. They fought an action at *Kittirājavālukagāma*,
 further a terrible battle at the place called *Uladā*, at the 18
 village named *Vāluka* and after fighting an action at *Huyala-*
gāma, they halted, slaying many enemies⁵.

¹ Over six miles. See note on 73. 154.

² Thus the revolt breaks out again in the rear and the flank of the army. The pacification of the *Dighavūpi* district had not been successful.

³ More than 40 miles.

⁴ I. e. to the headquarters at *Hintālaṅgāma*.

⁵ One must not be misled by the accounts of the success of single actions. It is clearly the case here of guerilla warfare. In open fight the rebels offer little resistance. But when the revolt seems to have been suppressed at one place, it at once breaks out anew in another. The accounts of "great battles" (*maḍaguddhā*) and the "bitter or severe actions" (*temala uṇṇa*) in which the hostile army is shattered and countless soldiers slain, are too much of a formula to lay claim in all their details to historical credence. Every encounter whether important or unimportant, is described very neatly in the same way. ⁶The capture of the relief was certainly an important moral success. But the main object of the whole enterprise, as it is alleged in 74. 40 ff. was not

- 19 Now to make the town Mahānāgahula which had been
 inhabited by former kings, a royal capital¹ by the Great King
 20 were sent forth the Damijādhikārin Rakkha and Rakkha the
 Chief of the chamberlains, and they having equipped a great
 21 army, set forth full of lust for battle. The Chief of the
 chamberlains Rakkha hereupon sent off the Kesadhātu by name
 22 Devaśāpa, who dwelt in Pañcayojana, with a great army, and
 after destroying numbers of foes there, he being experienced
 23 in the art of war, smote the enemy who after throwing up
 many entrenchments at the village of Gimbhatittha, in order
 to make it the royal capital, had taken up their stand there,
 so utterly that nought but the tidings of them remained.
 24 Then to allow the exhausted army to recover from the combats,
 the hero tarried a few days on the spot².
 25 Thereupon the enemy gathered together and driven by
 their heavy grief, they took grave counsel (together) as follows:
 26 "The power of the Ruler of men Parakkama, which is like

achieved. Cf. below v. 149 ff. Parakkama's troops were unable to pass the Battala line. The King realises that and develops an entirely new plan of campaign, an attack from the north-west, with Dakkhinadesa as base.

¹ A curious expression meaning about the same as "to bring into his power". For the idea must be that Parakkama now risks a direct advance against the capital of Rohana. But perhaps we have to do with an old corruption of the text? Note that the *pāda* *tate kāṭṭha vāṇathanāṇa* is immediately repeated in 22 c.

² The military expeditions of the two Rakkhas dealt with in detail by Cameron in his Notes on Ceylon Topography in the Twelfth Century, II, are quite intelligible as regards their plan and course. That of the Kuṇḍukināyaka Rakkha is first spoken of. His task was to penetrate from Dakkhinadesa along the south-west and the south coast as far as Mahānāgahula situated at the mouth of the Valuvaganga (cf. note to 58, 40). Before he begins the advance he secures his left flank by the expedition which starts from Pañcayojana, now Paden-Korale, east of Kalutara (cf. note to 67, 11). The hostilities then begin at Gimbhatittha, now Gintola, a few miles west of Galle. Rakkha had apparently penetrated as far as this place from the frontier of Dakkhinadesa as which we may regard the Kaluganga, without encountering resistance. The rebels who were about to fortify Gimbhatittha as a residence for Sugala were evidently completely surprised.

to the fire at the destruction of the world, is hard to subdue
 even by the kings in the whole of Jambudīpa. Even the Lord 27
 of men Gajabāhu and the Ruler Maṇabharapa, these two lion-
 like kings, skilled in war, who prepared a great army and 28
 spent much money, though they fought day and night in
 divers ways, when they heard the sound of his drum of triumph 29
 were scattered afar. They became as glowworms at the rising
 of the sun, and since tortured by fear, they were not even 30
 able to stay in their own country, they seeing no other way
 of escape, sought refuge with (the god of the dead) King Yama.
 Save the wilderness, there is for us no other protection. In 31
 every way our land is furnished with mountain wildernesses
 and the like. Therefore let us at all inaccessible places throw 32
 up many entrenchments, make all the well-known highways
 impassable, lay down many robbers' paths, and when then our 33
 land has been made impassable let us gather ourselves together
 and open battle." Herewith the rebels being all of one 34
 accord, marched to the mouth of the Gāla river¹ full of
 the lust of battle. When the Chief of the chamberlains 35
 heard thereof, he marched thither, fought a great battle with
 them and put them to flight. The army which had been 36
 shattered in the battle joined from all sides with the foe who
 had his position at Mahavālukagāma². The Chief of the 37
 chamberlains Rakkha gave his army time to breathe; then he
 marched farther in order to fight the foe at Mahavālukagāma.
 He shattered all the enemy and made the battlefield (bloody) 38
 as the world of the Nāgas³ when afflicted by the Garuḍas⁴.

¹ W. is probably right in identifying the Gālanadi with the Gānganga at whose mouth at Gintoto the troops of Rakkha had according to v. 21 halted. Gāla can scarcely have anything to do with the name of the town of Galle. It is a question, whether we should not keep to the MSS. reading of *gālanagāmanakhodāraya*.

² Now Veligama halfway between Galle and Dondra. It appears that the main body of the hostile army had its position at this place. When its vanguard had been beaten by Rakkha near the mouth of the Gāla river the whole army concentrated at Veligama.

³ P. *garuḍa* is the skr. *garuḍa*. This in the singular is in the first place the name of a mythical griffin-like bird which is regarded as Viṣṇu's

39 He drove them thence as a panther many gazelles and the
 40 victory gained, halted there himself with large forces. Then
 the Chief of the chamberlains who was himself versed in the
 consideration of advantage and disadvantage, while he sojourned
 41 in Vālukagāma, reflected thus: "These foes perish of a truth
 in great numbers, like moths who know not the danger of
 42 the fire and are burnt therein. But when they have perished
 the land will become like to a wilderness. And they know
 43 not the great-heartedness of our King. From now onwards
 we must grant the foes who surrender, freedom from punish-
 44 ment and give them protection". Hereupon he sent to some
 of the inhabitants of the province the message: "All those who
 45 would preserve their lives, let them come to me." Now when
 the merchants who dwelt in the port of Vālukagāma¹ to whom
 46 their life and their money were dear, heard that, they came
 in great numbers and (with them) other of the inhabitants
 from all sides to the Chief of the chamberlains Rakkha and
 47 presented themselves to him, tortured with fear. Hereupon
 he sent his soldiers forth and made them several times fight
 an action with the foe at different places such as Devanagara
 48 and at Kammūragāma, at Mahāpamūlagāma and at the village
 of Mānakapittṭhi, at the ford called Nilavāla and at the village
 49 named Kadaltipatta². He remained victor at all these places
 50 and received graciously all who came to him. Now all the

steed. At the Pāli stage the word in the plural serves as designation of a whole group of such birds. They are the deadly enemies of the serpent spirits called Nāgas. See note to 41. 80.

¹ It is interesting to learn that Veligama was at that time (12th c.) a not unimportant trading-centre, thanks probably to the spacious and sheltered bay on which it lies.

² The progress of the Kañcukūṇḍayaka along the coast is easy to follow. Devanagara is the modern Devudara (found at the southern point of the island. Kammūragāma the village Kanburugamawa halfway between Veligama and Matara which last we recognise in Nilavālaṭṭha, since it lies near the mouth of the Nilavaganga. The name Matara means "great ford". The remaining names can no longer be identified. What is striking is the sequence of the narrative, since Devanagara could only be occupied after the capture of Kammūragāma and Nilavālaṭṭha.

rebels made the resolve: "We shall not permit the all too 51
mighty army of the foe after crossing the river at the place
Mahākhetta, to fight (with us)". They set forth and them-
selves full of fury, reached the bank of the river. When the 52
Chief of the chamberlains heard of this event he sent forth
his army to march thither to fight with the foe. Thereupon 53
the best soldiers of the two parties fought a severe action in
the middle of the river. Now raged between the two armies 54
a terrible battle like to that of the gods with the Dānavas¹
who rose from the ocean. While now the great warriors 55
stood in battle with the hostile army, they reflected thus:
"An indecisive battle with these people is the same as a defeat, 56
If not to speak of our Lord, the Chief of the chamberlains
hears such tidings, that means a great humiliation. Let us 57
therefore break in pieces the foe like small sugar canes, fling 58
them into the water of the river and make them food for the
fish and the turtle, otherwise it is we who shall still their
hunger." They fought an exceeding terrible battle like the 59
monkeys who leapt over the ocean² in the combat between
Rāma and Rāvaṇa. They caused the swift river to flow with 60
flesh and blood and set forth with strong forces to take Dighālī³.
The warriors marched thither and rooted out the host of their 61
foes as elephants a banana grove into which they have broken.

¹ The Dānavas are demon-like creatures, asuras, enemies of the Devas. This passage refers to the fight described in the Mahābhārata I. 5. 19, in which the gods after getting hold of the amṛta conquer the demons who then withdrew below the ground and into the sea. Cf. Hockley, *Epic Mythology*, p. 48; H. Jacson, *Mahābhārata*, p. 5.

² Refers to the battle described in the Rāmāyaṇa VI. 24.

³ It is not easy to establish the locality of these battles. It is clear that Mahākhetta (v. 50) and Dighālī must be situated close together. Commerson looks for them (cf. note to 72. 63) on the Nīlavalganga north of Matara. But since Bakṣha has already taken Devanagara, he must stand on the left bank of this river. We must thus assume that the rebels were trying to turn Bakṣha's left flank and that he was therefore forced to give up the advance eastwards and to make a change of front northwards. The identification of Dighālī³ with Dikvella is difficult to maintain, since the river is absent upon and at which the fights described must have taken place.

- 62 There shattered, the enemy gathered together again at the
 place called Suvappamalaya¹ and began the combat anew.
 63 Then the Chief of the chamberlains also sent thither numbers
 of soldiers. There hailed down an uninterrupted rain of arrows
 64 and after ascertaining through spies a passage leading through
 the forest, they penetrated the path pointed out by them,
 65 slew many soldiers who had sought shelter in the various
 entrenchments and cleansed Suvappamalaya also from the briers
 66 (of the rebels). Hereupon the Chief of the chamberlains who
 was himself on the way to Mālāvaratthali, sent to the soldiers
 67 who had marched to Suvappamalaya the (following) message:
 "I am on the march to the village of Mālāvaratthali; set ye
 68 forth also on the way thither." When the people heard that,
 they did so, and he took them all with him and betook him-
 self to Mālāvaratthali².
 69 The war-skilled Daniññhikārin Rakkha by name, betook
 70 himself at the head of a strong force to Doṇivagga³. When

¹ Conze says: "Suvappamalaya is Kammalēkaṇḍa situated northwest of Kīraṇṇa, or the range which includes this hill and divides West Giraṇa Putta from Mutura district". Kīraṇṇa lies NNE. from Mutura about 20 miles distant.

² It is clear from the passage that the march to Suvappamalaya was only the lateral expedition of a division detached from the main army. I do not believe therefore that Mālāvaratthali should be looked for as in the line of march after Suvappamalaya. It lay rather on that followed by the Kaṭṭenkināyaka in his advance. As this was directed towards Mahānāgala, thus in the direction of the lower course of the Vālvaganga (see note to 58.30). I should look for Mālāvaratthali farther south, somewhere between Viraketiya and Tangalla.

³ We may assume that the narrative here goes back somewhat in time and that the advance of the second Rakkha in Doṇivagga took place simultaneously with that of the first Rakkha in Gindulittā or very soon after. Parakkhamabāhu's plan of campaign was evidently to advance from two sides against Mahānāgala, the capital of Rāhuga, from the west and the north-west. Doṇivagga is the depression at Pelmadulla-Opanake, about twelve miles east of Ratnapura. The name is preserved in that of the small river Doṇavaka which flows through the depression. As there is considerable rice cultivation in this region it is particularly suited for the gathering of an army.

the numerous rebels heard tidings thereof, they gave true
 tidings of the situation to the Laṅkāpura Rakkha who was 71
 in the town called Mahānāgahula and sent an urgent message
 to come hither immediately. They thought: the road leading 72
 from Doṇivagga to Navayojana is very difficult, therefore let
 us hinder the (direct) passage into our province from there 73
 at the difficult places¹, and with great fury they set about
 beginning hostilities. The war-skilled Damiḍḍhikārin Rakkha 74
 wished now before the beginning of the war on the part of
 the enemy, to strike a decisive blow² and in his last for 75
 fighting, sent off many soldiers and the Kesadhāta Loka and
 the Saṅkhanāyaka Nātha by name and other officers. These 76
 fought a great battle and won a great victory. The shattered 77
 foe flung into confusion by great terrors, gathered again at
 the place Guratattṭhakalañcha. Now the Damiḍḍhikārin Rakkha 78
 again sent forth his great army to take away this place also³.

¹ The passage offers difficulties. What is now called Navadan Kerala (= Navayojana; cf. note to 72. 60) is mainly the region of Palnadukula. Formerly however, Navayojana, as Connesen points out, seems to have been of greater extent. I am inclined to think that it embraced in medieval times the whole region east and south-east of Paudu Korle, i.e. Kukul Kerala, Hinduṇṇ Pattu, Moravuk Korale. It was in this territory that the combats described in 72. 60-64 took place. Kūlagiriḥḥappa also mentioned there is probably only a part of Navayojana. The purport of our passage seems to me to be this: the rebels have no fear of being threatened from the west, from Navayojana, as in that case Rakkha would first have to cross the Rakama mountains. He will, they thought, avoid this difficult line of march, but is more likely to advance along the direct road (*raṭṭhapaṇṇama*). This would be more or less the road leading now from Madampe south-eastward to Ambalantota at the mouth of the Valuvaganga. It was here at the places fit for resistance that the rebels believed the defence should be organised. We shall see in the sequel that Rakkha later on nevertheless risked the march over the mountains.

² P. *maḥḥabḥirga*, see note to 63. 30.

³ The name Guratattṭhakalañcha suggests the Atakalan Korale. With this is designated the name of the district in which Madampe lies. It is quite intelligible that Rakkha wishes to gain a footing here, in order to secure for himself access to the road leading to Mahānāgahula. The Col. Ed. reads *Guratattṭhakalañcha* as against the MSS. It is a risky thing however, to change names just in order to get a particular meaning.

79 The brave warriors arose, broke through many entrenchments,
 even broke through the main fortifications which were provid-
 80 ed with numerous gates and reached the place which the foe
 was occupying. They took whom they could alive, sent many
 81 other foes straight into the jaws of death, put to flight the
 others who found no further support, and cleansed this place
 82 also from the briers (of the foe). Then they returned (to
 Rakkha), and he showed them befitting favours.

83 Now in order to protect the enemy whom the king's
 majesty had turned to ashes, by the application of kindness,
 84 even as a cloud (shelters) the forest set on fire by the glow
 of the summer sun, the prudent Damsiādhikāriṇ returned to
 85 Doṇivagga¹. He appointed to every district that he had
 captured, the appropriate people, took those who had sub-
 mitted to his dominion² under his dominion and purged this
 86 district also³. The enemy who after throwing up entrench-
 ments, had taken up their position at Pāḡadapjakaṇvāṭṭa⁴,
 87 renewed the fight with strong forces. The Damsiādhikāriṇ,
 well skilled in the game of war, thereupon sent thither also
 88 many soldiers with their officers. The brave warriors went
 forth and with the rain of arrows which they let rain⁵, with
 89 the rattle of the drums and the clash of swords they were
 like to the flashing march of a storm cloud that appears out

¹ The fact that Rakkha returns to Doṇivagga and that now like his namesake, (Jb. 41ff.) he seeks to win over the rebels by kindness shows that he has not achieved his object. The breach planned along the main road to Mahānāḡahula has not succeeded, the advance has been checked at a certain place.

² I should expect *soce gāntā* rather than *soce jante* (cf. 77. 19 and note).

³ Probably Doṇivagga. It is to be assumed that the revolt broke out also in Rakkha's rear.

⁴ The place cannot be identified with certainty. If what is meant is the place Dandara lying between Kāḡavatta and Opanaka, the rebels had advanced very near to Rakkha's base. Later on Pāḡadapjakaṇvāṭṭa becomes Rakkha's headquarters (cf. 78. 145b).

⁵ P. *rassitā* is instr. sg. for *rasitāntā*; in the same way *vinattāntā* stands in d for *vinattāntāna*.

of season. Through delight in their own heroism¹ chasing
 away the weariness of combat, they celebrated the goddess 90
 of heroes with their drums of victory. When they thereupon
 heard that numbers of the foe had built a stronghold at the 91
 place called Tambagāma and had taken their stand there, the
 heroes of tried valour were minded to show that nothing but
 heroic action pleased them, marched by night thither and invaded 92
 (the place), through the sound of their war drums challenging
 the foe to fight. But when the rebels heard the clatter of the 93
 drums they thought a thunderbolt had fallen on their heads
 and in the greatest panic some fled while others perished. 94
 But those (victors) burned down the fortification so that nought
 but ashes remained and returned with strong forces to Pū- 95
 gadapāvaya². The Damiḍadhikārin Rakkhā called back his
 own troops and sent forth to subdue the enemy who lurked 96
 here and there in their district, the four-membered army with
 its officers. This army cut down at Bodhāvasta, at Bhimsāla- 97
 vanagāma³ and at Atarunāmahabodhikkhandha numbers of
 the enemy, fought also a night action and returned thence.

Now the Damiḍadhikārin marched at the head of strong 98
 forces to the place called Sūkaraḍibheripāsāṇa⁴. Without 99

¹ P. *etvassāvaṇḍa*. Again an allusion to the Indian *rasa* doctrine. See note to 72. 94.

² Again it is the case of a direct attack on Mahānagabula, but which again did not lead to a break through. Tambagāma is without doubt the village of Tambagamava lying about 8 miles SSE. of Mudampe near the road leading to Ambalantota from which it is separated by the Rakvanaganga. The village gives its name to the district Tambagam Pattana. (Census Ceylon, 1921, II, p. 490.)

³ The Col. Ed. reads here *Hindāvanagāwaka*. In the writing this form is hardly distinguishable from the form which I have adopted. In any case this Hindāvanagāma could have nothing to do with the place of that name mentioned 74. 162; 75. 7, 11, 17, which was situated at Kiriagāma not far from Battala.

⁴ In this name are combined two neighbouring places, Sūkaraḍi and Bheripāsāṇa. The first is the present Urubokka, the second Berapanaṭara. We owe these identifications to Cassanese. I had them also from the principal of the Dharmasākhā in Ratnapura, Uwaroca Ratanasinga, with whom I discussed the passages of the *Mhva* in ques-

disregarding in any way the orders of the ruler of men
 (Parakkamabāhu) he restored the people who without being
 100 hostile, had hidden themselves here and there, to their district
 as before. And after he had placed the proper officials in the
 101 district (thus) won, he set forth at the head of a fearsome,
 strong army and reached the village named Sinātālathali¹.
 102 Now the many rebels lurking in various places², summoned
 103 hither the army of the inhabitants of the country. Thus in
 possession of large forces, they then also summoned the Laṅkā-
 pura Rakkha whom they had themselves made commander-
 in-chief and who at the head of many hundreds of warriors
 104 filled the world with the sound of his drums and kettledrums,

tion. The two places are only about two miles distant from one another
 in the Moravak Korale south of Pēnādulla-Madampē, on the other side
 of the Rakvama mountain range. I believe Rakkha's tactics were some-
 what like this: The general has realised that a break through along
 the highway (now Madampē-Tumbagamuttā-Āmbalantotal) is impossible.
 He tries it now with an outflanking manoeuvre. With this object he
 crosses the mountain range to the south of Rakvama in order to attack
 the enemy from Moravak Korale (= Navapajana) that is just from the
 side where the rebels thought themselves safeguarded by the difficulty
 of the ground (see note to v. 73). The passage was without doubt the
 Hulutota pass which forms a natural saddle between the Galkanda
 and the Kurulukanda. It seems to me not improbable that it was al-
 ready used in mediaeval times. After the crossing of the Hulutota pass
 Rakkha had however another parallel chain to traverse. It may be as-
 sumed that for this he made use of the deepest depression at Hutkanda
 over which in the future the road will run which is to men the Hulutota
 road from the south (Deniyaya). It is here that the footpath now runs
 which joins Rakvama with Deniyaya. Cosens' comparison of the
 Mahāhodhikkhanda mentioned in v. 97, with Hutkanda has now greater
 significance. It must be assumed that the expedition described in v. 96-97
 had the character of a reconnaissance.

¹ Ratanawati told me of a village Hintalgada in Moravak Korale
 but I cannot find the name either in the list of place names in the
 Census (vol. II) or on the map.

² Evidently as sentries on the look-out. Verses 102 and 103 show
 what surprise and terror the appearance of Rakkha in Moravak Korale
 caused among the rebels. First the militia are called out to help and
 then the commander-in-chief himself who according to v. 70, was at
 that time in Mahānigalaha.

and so advanced to Nadibhaṇḍagāma¹. When the Damaḍḍhi- 105
 kārīn heard of this undertaking, the prudent one summoned
 his soldiers and held with them the following speech: "Here 106
 shall ye now show your devotion to your Lord (the king)
 and I shall be witness to your heroism. Think not: this is 107
 bad ground, the foe are very dauntless, but believe without
 doubting in the winning of the victory on the battlefield 108
 through the majesty of our Lord and Master. But go first
 and occupy the right place for the battle." Thereupon these 109
 set forth with great determination and occupied full of daring,
 a position near Mahāsettagāma² in order to fight. Now the 110
 warriors on both sides hung themselves on to the battlefield.
 With the sparks born of their arms as they beat against each
 other, starting the whole firmament as it were by day, and 111
 with the outpouring of their rain of arrows filling all regions
 of the heavens, they began the battle, letting their battle-cry
 sound forth. But the Damaḍḍhikārīn, the mighty one, won 112
 the head of the Laṇḍakāpura Rakkha together with his heroism.
 Then did the rebels melt away irretrievably as the tide of 113
 the waters of the ocean when it has passed its shores³. The
 battlefield there was full of crows, vultures and the like, but
 the Damaḍḍhikārīn who had won the victory by combat held 114
 high festival and surrounded by the divisions of his army,
 he the highly-famed took possession of the town of Mahāsa-
 gūhula⁴.

Now the Chief of the chamberlains Rakkha marched forth 116
 from Mahāvaṇṭṭhali⁵ and betook himself in haste to the town

¹ Cassinotto has recognised this in the present Obada (Sinh. *o. aga* is always rendered by *uḍḍi*). As Obada lies below Urahekka, about nine miles distant as the crow flies, on the river of that name in West Girona, it proves that Rakkha in his advance followed the valley of the Urahekka-aya.

² We may assume that the place where the decisive battle took place was not far from Obada.

³ The rebels dispersed as the surf of the sea disperses on the shore.

⁴ In this section the MSS. give the name as *Mahāsettagūhula*, otherwise *-āula* or *-ula*.

⁵ See above v. 68.

117 Mahānāgahula. He sought out the Dandādhikārin and the
 latter discerning and aware of the favorable as of the un-
 118 favorable occasion, took counsel with him as follows: "In
 accordance with the commands of our Lord we have taken
 the town of Mahānāgahula, yet still there are many foes left
 119 alive. These robbed of all resources, have withdrawn to
 Khaṇḍavagga. But that our soldiers just after they have
 120 gained the victory, should march in haste thither pleaseth me
 not. Where our Lord sets his foot there is our refuge." For
 121 that reason they remained on the spot¹, and while they let
 the people who without being enemies had hidden themselves
 here and there, come to them and appointed each to his own
 district again, they spent the time even there in the town of
 122 Mahānāgahula. But the many rebels who had betaken them-
 selves to Khaṇḍavagga, stirred up the inhabitants of the
 123 district with the wish to renew the war. They gathered
 themselves all together at the place called Khaṇḍavagga. The
 124 Dandādhikārin thought that now was the right time for the
 contest, he advanced from the town of Mahānāgahula and began
 125 a fearful battle in Bakagalla²-Uddharāpi. The skilful (general)
 bent them all and then returned. Several of the enemy came
 126 hereupon to Supghahledakagāma; but the general Sūkara-
 bhātudeva took his soldiers and came thirsting for the fight to

¹ The word *ettha* here is curious, especially in conjunction with *takk' eva* in 121 c. The final words of Rakkha's speech are also obscure. Possibly we have to do with a corruption of the text. I believe that the words *tasmiṃ ettha assaṅga* belonged originally to the *anāṭṭa* recta and that after that something with which the speech ended and which made the foregoing sentence more intelligible has been lost.

² Chemsarov successfully identifies Bakagalla with the present Kog-gala (sinh. *koka* "crane" is rendered by p. *baka* which has the same meaning) which is situated only 5 miles North of Ambalantota, that is about the same distance NE. of the ancient Mahānāgahula. This proves the fact that even the capture of the capital does not discourage the rebels. They withdraw just so far as to place the Velaroganga between themselves and the enemy and renew hostilities. The actions which follow (vv. 125—140) are only so many attempts on Mahānāgahula. Though in single skirmishes Parakkamba's troops are victorious, no lasting success is achieved.

Mahāgāma¹. Now the Damiṭṭhikārin himself called his soldiers together and sent them first to Saṃghabhedakagāma. The brave heroes betook² themselves now to the battlefield and after they had in the fire of the majesty of the illustrious Ruler of men destroyed numbers of the foe, they returned to the town of Mahānāgabhula and held there in fitting manner high festival. But in order also to get the general (Sūkarabhātu) into his power, the Damiṭṭhikārin sent off the Laṅkāpura Deva and many other soldiers to fight against him. They betook themselves to the battlefield and with arrows sent unceasingly covering the whole heaven and raising their thundering³ battle-ery they dashed forward to the battlefield, slew the general and shattered the foe. Then these brave warriors too came to Mahāgāma⁴ with the sound of their victorious drums making joyful the Damiṭṭhikārin. Thereupon an elder brother of the Laṅkāpura Rakkha who had seized the leadership of the army, gathered together the many foes whom death had spared and marched for a combat such a rebels fight⁴, to the town of Mahānāgabhula⁵. The Damiṭṭhikārin now also sent soldiers thither, they shattered him after slaying many of the enemy. The shattered soldiers came to a place called Karavakagalla. The Damiṭṭhikārin Rakkha marched from the town Mahānāgabhula, shattered them all and returned. Now there came together from all sides to Mahāgāma the Lokagalla Vikkama by name and many other foes in order to fight with the Malapottthakin Maṇa. But in this fight

¹ For Sūkandhātudeva see 74. 127ff. Where Saṃghabhedakagāma lies is uncertain. Mahāgāma is doubtless Magama in the territory of Tissamahārāma.

² P. *gajjanta*. The comparison which it is impossible for us to render sufficiently exactly, is borrowed from the storm. The mass of the arrows are the cloud darkening the heavens, the battle-ery is the thunder.

³ One expects here Mahānāgabhula instead of Mahāgāma and on the other hand in v. 135 instead of Mahānāgabhula rather Mahāgāma. Have we not to do here with a mistake of the compiler's?

⁴ P. *coraguddhaga*, corresponding more or less to our guerilla warfare.

⁵ Cf. above note to v. 133.

along with the life of the foe the Mūlapotthakākin Māna by name speedily won the victory.

- 141 Now the Damaññadhikārin took counsel with the dignitaries:
 "When we see the destruction of the foe in every single fight
 142 and the panic of those fleeing hither and thither, then we
 think the enemy has lost the courage for renewing the war
 and yet one does not perceive that they are wholly rooted
 143 out. Let us give up the middle of the province and when
 here and there hidden (rebels) have come into the middle of
 the province, defeat them!" With that the prudent one, the
 144 highly-famed returned to Pāṇḍanāgarāṭṭa. But the rebels who
 had not seen through his plan, streamed together from every-
 where out of the wilderness into the middle of the province.
 145 When the Damaññadhikārin received true tidings of these events,
 he started thence at the head of his men, fought with the
 146 numbers of foes at the village of Bodhiñvūṭṭa, as well as
 with the foe everywhere else — at the place called Sūkarālibheri-
 147 pāsāṇa and at the stronghold called Madhuttala — great battles
 148 and robbed them of their life. Then he penetrated to the
 middle of the province, sent his army also thither in various
 149 directions and rooted them out all and sundry. Hereupon he
 received a message which came to him from the leaders stand-

¹ In consideration of the sequel I should assume that *rajitāna* is subordinate to the principal verb *amārasāra* rather than to the part. *aññāsa*. Rakkha's plan is clear and proves successful. By *rajjhamañña* is meant the agricultural country on the right bank of the Valavegungā with Mahānāgabhūta. That is it is true, in his power, but the rebels have withdrawn into the inaccessible wilderness surrounding it on all sides. In order now to entice them into the open country where he hopes to defeat them decisively, he ostensibly abandons the captured territory and withdraws to his original base near Doḍḍavagga. For it is here we must look for Pāṇḍanāgarāṭṭa (cf. above v. 86, 85). This explains also why in the following combats with the rebels we are in fact taken in by Rakkha's manoeuvre, the former names Bodhiñvūṭṭa (v. 97) and Sūkarālibheripāsāṇa (v. 98) recur. The Madhuttala named along with them must also be situated near Sūkarāli = Uruḍḍakka. All these places are situated on the border of the *rajjhamañña* into which he finally penetrates to annihilate the enemy.

ing in Hayaḷagāma and marched to Kumbagāma¹. Thereupon 150
 the general stationed in Hayaḷagāma by name Mañju, and
 the two generals called Kittī and Bhūta came surrounded by 151
 numbers of heroic officers, to the same place, holding high
 festival of joy. The general by name Mañju², hereupon, 152
 showing honour to the Damiḍādhikārin Rakkha, spoke the
 following words: "So long as the many foes which have 153
 broken away from your country and are hidden in the various
 inaccessible places have not got a footing, let us slay them 154
 all, while the enemy who has sought refuge in the wilderness
 of Aṭṭhasalussaka and the Queen Sugala we will take captive³. 155
 But if the many foes who sojourn in the wilderness are hard
 for you to overcome, we shall send off soldiers." The Damiḍādhī- 156
 kārīn agreed with these words. He advanced in haste with
 his army into the region of the Vananadi⁴ and soon came near 157
 to the foe who in order to reach the mountain wilderness,
 had speedily betaken themselves to Mālīvarattihālī. When they 158
 heard that Rakkha was on the march⁵, they withdrew, ter-

¹ We have seen above in v. 19 that the generals Mañju, Kittī and Bhūta after vain attempts to reach Mahāgāma by Ginttasālā, halt at Hayaḷagāma. Now they try to get into touch with Rakkha. As Hayaḷagāma cannot have been far from Batāla, we may look for Kumbagāma somewhere on the road leading along the southern base of the mountains. ² Cf. note to 74. 129.

³ Aṭṭhasalussaka (cf. note to 61. 24) is the territory east of the Valavoganga. Thus Mañju and his generals undertake the operations in eastern Rohaya, Rakkha those in the western part of the province.

⁴ There is scarcely a doubt that with Vananadi is meant the Valavoganga. The gen. parassa must be = parissa. A causative form is impossible since the object belonging to it is wanting. *Saka* *sevayā* agrees only with a *paratā*. But perhaps we might render *vananadi-paranā* *parassa* by: "he advanced along the V." That would make excellent sense. The rebels have evidently occupied Mahānāgabhūta after Rakkha's withdrawal. In order now to cut them off from communication with eastern Rohaya, Rakkha marches from Kumbagāma down the Vananadi. His plan succeeds. The rebels turn westward by way of Mālīvarattihālī (see note to v. 66) to the mountains of Dvādasasakka, the present district of Gīruva (note to 61. 22).

⁵ That is in further pursuit of them.

tured by fear, into the great forest and sought refuge on the
 159 Mahāpabbata. The Dambādhihārīn surrounded the mountain,
 fought a great battle with them and utterly destroyed them.
 160 Then after occupying Drādasasahassaka thus set free from the
 briars (of the rebels), he considered what should be done with
 161 the many foes taken alive and had many hundreds of the
 162 enemy impaled in villages and market-towns. Likewise round
 about the village of Mahānāgahula the mighty one had hun-
 163 ders of the foe impaled, several too hanged on the gallows
 and burnt to ashes and after taking up his abode in the vil-
 164 lage of Mahānāgahula, he had under a favorable constellation
 the drums of government of the illustrious Ruler of men
 165 beaten in villages and market-towns. After sending a messenger
 announcing these events to the Ruler of men and receiving
 166 from the Great King a mark of honour, he took up his abode,
 the discerning, the highly-famed (general), in that same Drā-
 dasasahassaka, pondering over the needful measures.

167 All the chief dignitaries¹ in Kumbhagāma reflected (thus):
 168 "From the time that we set forth to war in Rohana the sol-
 diers sent forth by us have here and there in great battles
 169 covered the earth with the bones of the foe, and even all the
 brave warriors who dwell in Jambudīpa would not be able to
 170 withstand these soldiers. Why then should we henceforward
 think to carry on war with the foe hidden here and there
 171 through fear? Queen Sugula is the cause of these people
 172 becoming rebels and has led them into the wilderness². There-
 fore we must get the Queen alive into our power." With such
 resolve the discerning (generals) marched from Kumbhagāma
 173 and came to Hariakirāta. After they had there in various
 places posted good soldiers, known as courageous people, in
 174 the necessary numbers, they advanced thence fully armed to
 Kapharāja and when at the place called Vanagāma, they

¹ The narrative now deals with the operations in eastern Rohana which we may imagine as taking place simultaneously with the events related in vv. 156-166.

² Owing to the presence of the obj. *te* the part. pres. *pacasāsi* must be taken in a causative sense (see Chāyā, ed. I, Introduction p. XIV).

caught sight of the hostile army with whom was the Queen, 175
 they fought there a great (and) fearful battle. With the sound
 of their drums of victory cleaving open, as it were, the earth,
 they seized the Queen and all her treasures of many a kind¹. 176
 Having appointed for the guarding of the treasure the necessary
 chamberlains, they brought the war game begun there to an 177
 end and after covering the earth with the hands and feet and
 heads of the foe and taking those alive to whom this had to 178
 happen, they made the province of Rohaṇa everywhere free
 from the briars (of the rebels).

Now by some kind of wile, taking with them a few sol- 179
 diers, the three Phālākūlas who were near the end of their
 life, and the two Laṅkāpuras by name Taddhigūṇa and Pabbata, 180
 had escaped out of the hand of the foe² and were in flight
 tortured by fear. But the two brothers, the generals³ and 181
 the Laṅkāpura known by the name of Kaḍakkoda, as well as
 many other officers with their soldiers, having reached Ud- 182
 dhanadvāragāma⁴, shattered them in a great battle and then
 reached Nigrodhamāragalla⁵. Hereupon the great dignitaries 183
 with their officers pursued the enemy, sent the head of the
 Phālākūla to the highest dignitaries⁶, captured the Laṅkāpura 184

¹ The place where the capture of Sāgaḍā took place is not yet determined. The name Valagama or Valagama to which the P. *Valagama* would correspond, occurs frequently in Ceylon. A Valagama is situated in the Bintenna Patṭu. It is however very doubtful if this can be the one meant.

² The enemies from whom Phālākūla and the others had escaped were of course the troops of Parakkambhāṭṭa.

³ For the *śālāra* *daṇḍavāḍḍa* and note to 70. 279. They are mentioned here for the last time.

⁴ See note to 61. 16. Uddhanadvāragāma was the capital of eastern Rohaṇa (Aṭṭasahasakā).

⁵ Verses 179—182 form one sentence. The subjects are in v. 181. The principal verb is *upāgamaṃ* to which the gerunds *samvāpanta*, *pabbhāṇḍitvā* are subordinate. The accusatives in v. 180 are governed by *pabbhāṇḍitvā* as objects. As attributes they have the *pass. part. pūḍāgante* to which *maṇḍitā* and *gahetvā* are again subordinate.

⁶ That is Maṇḍa together with Dhṛita and Kitti who had not personally taken part in the pursuit of the Phālākūlas.

Pabbata by name, alive and destroyed the foe so utterly that nought but the tidings of them remained¹.

185 Thereupon the clever Adhikārin Mañja² made the following
 186 proposal: "From the time when we began to conquer this
 187 Rohaṇa we have never — apart from³ the boundless terror-
 inspiring destruction of our enemies in battle through the
 188 majesty of our Lord — treated the foe with sternness so as
 to teach the people what evil results treason to the king brings
 189 about. Therefore those deserving of harshness let us treat
 harshly and let us be ever kind to those who deserve kindness,
 190 and in this way in accord with the commands of our Lord
 and Master, win them over to ourselves." All agreed with
 191 zeal to his proposal. They caused many foes to whom severity
 was due, to be brought before them, and at villages and market-
 192 towns they had numbers of stakes set up on which they im-
 paled many hundreds of the enemy. Many other foes they
 193 had hanged on the gallows and burnt and showed forth in
 every way the majesty — hard to subdue, scarcely to be sur-
 passed, arousing astonishment — of the Ruler of men Pa-
 rakkama-bhūta. Then while they showed due grace to those
 who were accessible to kindness and were worthy of being
 treated with kindness, they brought peace to the province, as
 clouds in the rainy season to a forest burnt by fire.

194 When the Ruler of men Parakkama heard tidings of these
 events he sent an exceeding gracious message of the following
 195 content: "In the first place send hither all the dignitaries
 196 taken alive and the Queen Sugala. The burden of the whole
 administration there is to be given over to the Adhikārin
 Bhūta. Then along with the whole of the four-membered army
 197 sent forth from here, preceded by the numerous bhikkhu
 community dwelling there, after leaving the necessary garrison
 198 in the various districts, under a constellation regarded as fa-

¹ I prefer to join the two pādas *karissas* as far as *ayuttatā* with v. 184 instead of with v. 185. *Sabbasas* is to be taken in an adverbial sense as emphasising *sabbathā*.

² See note to 74. 129.

³ I take the gen. *vittrāna* in this sense in this passage.

vorable, the whole of the dignitaries shall assemble and present themselves before me."

The dignitaries all carried out his orders without omitting 199 anything. They marched from Rohaya and reached at the 200 head of their large army, Pulatthinagara. Accompanied by the dwellers in Pulatthinagara, who played music, shouted with joy, clapped their hands in applause, waved cloths a 201 thousandfold again and again and let their cries of victory resound — they drew near to the superb royal palace and cleans- 202 ed their heads with the blossom dust of the foot-lotus of the 203 illustrious King of kings enthroned (there) in splendour.

Thus had this Ruler of men, pursuing the path of politi- 204 cal wisdom and of virtue, with exceeding terrible majesty¹, more powerful than a forest conflagration, of keen understanding, together with his heroes made Rohaya free from the briers of the foe.

Here ends the seventy-fifth chapter, called 'The Conquest of Rohaya', in the Mahāvaṃsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The word that I here translate by "majesty" is the P. *tejo*. As this has the original meaning of "glow", the comparison with the forest conflagration has also a linguistic connection. The compound must be separated thus: *atara-dakhaṇa-aggatara-nibbhaṇa-tejo*.

Chapter LXXVI

ACCOUNT OF THE CAPTURE OF THE TOWN OF RĀJINĀ

- 1 While now the Monarch gifted with insight, day and night
 strove unweariedly for the furtherance of the laity and of the
 2 Order, there banded together in the eighth year of the reign
 of the illustrious Ruler of men all the inhabitants of the pro-
 3 vince of Rohana and stirred up by an all too foolhardy vil-
 lain¹, they revolted anew, to cruel destruction foredoomed.
 4 When King Parakkamabāhu heard of these events he sent
 5 once more a great army with dignitaries thither; and as he
 fought at all the villages and market-towns named aforesaid
 6 ever renewed battles and made the enemy as fuel for the fire
 of his own majesty, he shortly freed the whole province of
 Rohana from the briers (of the rebels).
 7 In the sixteenth year of this King of kings, in the pro-
 8 vince immediately bordering on Mahātittha² several people
 dwelling in that province, who were near the end of their
 life³, stirred up a revolt and began the war which seemed to
 9 them the better (lot)⁴. Thither also the (prince) gifted with
 discernment, sent a four-membered army and destroyed the
 foe so that they became as dust.
 10 Between the countries of Lankā and Rūmanā⁵ there had
 never been a dissension since they were inhabited by people

¹ I incline to take *kenapi pāpakamma* as referring to a person, *pāpakamma* thus to be taken like the skr. *pāpakarma* (cf. BR. s. v. as a bahuvrīhi compound).

² See note to 48. 81.

³ The fate to which they are doomed tempts them to the foolish revolt.

⁴ Better (*locus*) than subjection to Parakkamabāhu's dominion.

⁵ That is Pegu in Lower Burma.

who held the true faith. The rulers of the island of Laṅkā 11
 and the monarchs of Rāmañña were both in like manner true
 disciples of the Sugata¹. Hence all former monarchs in both 12
 countries in deeply-rooted trust, filled with friendly feeling²
 were wont to send each other many costly gifts and in this 13
 way for a long time to maintain intercourse without dissension.
 Also with King Parakkambāhu the Monarch of Rāmañña 14
 kept up friendly relations even as former rulers who had for
 a long time held firmly to him. But once upon a time the 15
 deluded one hearkened to the words of slanderers, of certain
 messengers who came back from our land, and deprived the 16
 envoys of the Sovereign of Laṅkā who came into his own
 country, of the maintenance formerly granted. Furthermore 17
 he issued the order that elephants which had (hitherto) been
 sold by many (traders) to foreign countries³ were no longer
 to be sold. Further with evil intent he made the restriction 18
 that elephants which had formerly been sold there for a
 hundred or a thousand silver nikkhālas⁴ must (henceforth) be 19
 sold for two or three thousand⁵. He also did away with the 20
 age-old custom of presenting an elephant to every vessel in
 which gifts⁶ were conveyed. When he caught sight of a letter 21

¹ P. *parivāsasugata*. Cf. skr. *sugata* from *su* + *gata*, a frequent name of the Buddha which designates him as the guide on the path of salvation. R. O. FAIRER in his translation of the Dīghanikāya renders *sugata* by "he who completes the path".

² *Deḥasamāpāṇḍerikkambhā* and *saṁhā* are attributes of *bhāpā*, and the insts. *cūṭṭha* *hira* (this last for *āstā*) belongs to *saṁhā*.

³ We see that that Burma in the Middle Ages traded in elephants with foreign countries.

⁴ An unknown coin. The word is without doubt connected with the P. *nikkā* or *vekkā* — skr. *niśa* which likewise denotes a weight and a coin.

⁵ VV. 18, 19 seem to be in contradiction to v. 17. I think however that in v. 17 the emphasis is to be placed on *vekkātha* *vekkā*. It is the free trade in elephants that according to v. 17 the king makes an end of, putting in its place a royal monopoly. This is immediately followed by an enormous rise in prices.

⁶ Evidently from foreign sovereigns, in the first place the king of Laṅkā with whom according to v. 13 such exchange of gifts had fre-

written on gold, addressed to himself, he under the pretext
 22 that they were envoys sent to Kamboja¹, or saying something
 of that kind, had the envoys of the Sovereign of Laṅkā after
 taking from them all their goods and chattels, thrown into a
 23 fortress in the Malaya country². And although he learned
 exactly how his own envoy Tapassin by name, had had every
 24 distinction conferred on him by the Ruler of Laṅkā, he ne-
 vertheless bereft of all political wisdom, took everything away
 from the envoys of the Monarch of Laṅkā: their money, their
 25 elephants and their vessels, had blocks of wood fastened to
 their feet to their greatest torture, and employed them in the
 26 work of sprinkling water in the prisons. When once upon a
 time a prince of Jambudīpa Kassapa by name, sent costly gifts
 27 along with a letter on gold, he forbade his people to land and
 in an insulting manner made them take the letter back to their
 28 town. One day he had the Sihala envoys summoned to him
 and declared to them: "Henceforth no vessel from the Sihala
 29 country shall be sent to my kingdom. Give us now in writ-
 ing the declaration that if (messengers) from there are again
 sent to us, in case we should slay the envoys who have come
 30 here, no blame of any kind will attach to us³. If ye give
 not the declaration ye shall not have permission to return
 31 home." After he had made them sign this, so that in the
 event of a transgression they should not return again to their
 32 country⁴, he took the paper from their hand. The teacher

quently taken place. The King of Rāmañña does not put an end to the intercourse but alters it in a way which shows unfriendliness.

¹ Name of Western Siam.

² Malaya denotes as in Ceylon and in Southern India (see 76. 196) the mountainous regions of the country.

³ In the original direct discourse: "if . . . are sent here . . . in case ye slay . . . no blame will attach to you".

⁴ The passage is doubtful. I believe that *sa-saṅga-māgamaṇa* is meant to express the intended result. The prince wishes by means of the signature to have the possibility of ridding himself of all undesirable people from Laṅkā. W's translation fails because it assumes *agga* instead of *amāgama*.

Vāḡissara and the scholar Dhammakitti¹ he sent off in a leaky vessel into the open sea. Once upon a time he took from the hands of the messengers the gifts and goods which the Ruler of Laṅkā had sent in order to buy elephants, with the promise that he would give them fourteen elephants and silver money², but he told merely lies and gave them nothing. Further they seized by force a princess whom the Ruler of Laṅkā had sent to Kamboja land.

When King Parakkamabāhu heard of these many insults committed by that (prince), he thought with the greatest indignation: "Where in the whole of Jambudīpa is there a king who would be capable of treating my envoys in such a manner?" He summoned his ministers and spake: "Either the capture or the slaying of the king of Arimaddana³ must be effected." Hereupon there spake a distinguished official of the public accounts, the *Damīḡādhikārin* by name Ādicca, with clasped hands — he wished himself to undertake the enterprise — to the King thus: "It is not necessary to entrust the chief dignitaries with this task. If I do not stray a single step from the path of thy order it will be for me, if I undertake the task — even should I be quite alone — in very truth not difficult to carry out in successful fashion the commands of my lord whose commands are hardly to be transgressed." When the King heard that he was content. He placed under him the troop leaders who were to be sent and commanded him to depart speedily. Then the highly-famed one gave the order without delay to make ready ships of various kinds, many hundreds in number. Now all the country round about the

¹ These were evidently the envoys from which the written declaration had been wrong. They reached home in spite of the leaky ship; otherwise their death would without doubt have been mentioned. They escaped it as by a miracle.

² In the original again the or, *metā*: "We shall give you &c." The goods are therefore paid partly in cash partly with elephants.

³ For this capital of Burma see M. Bous, *Sūsanavarga*, Dissertation, p. 20 and *passim*.

⁴ P. *gejetāḡḡe* stands for *gejetāḡḡi alom*.

coast was one great workshop fully occupied with the build-
 46 ing of the ships taken in hand. When within five months he
 had had all the ships well built, he assembled them in haste
 47 at the port of Pallavavmika. Then endowed with vast royal
 power¹, he had provisions supplied² for a whole year such as
 48 rice and the like and abundant weapons of war, such as armour
 and the like; further gokappaka arrows³ of iron with sharp
 points, many hundred thousand in number for defence against
 49 elephants, also different kinds of medicines, preserved in cow
 horns for the healing of venomous wounds caused by poisoned
 50 arrows, as well as all kinds of remedies for curing the poison
 of infected water in the many swampy stretches of country;
 51 also iron pincers for extracting arrow-heads which are difficult
 to move when they have pierced deeply and the shaft has
 52 broken, lastly also skilful physicians and serving women —
 53 everything in complete fashion⁴. After he versed as none
 other in the right measures, had made a strong force —
 54 numbering many hundreds of thousands — embark, the Ruler
 sent all the ships off on one day loaded with all kinds of arms
 55 and filled with capable soldiers. Now when this assemblage
 of ships all at the same time⁵ sailed forth in the midst of
 56 the ocean it looked like a swimming island. Subdued by
 adverse winds some of these ships went down, some drifted
 57 on to foreign shores. Numbers of trusty warriors who had
 embarked in one of the vessels landed on the Crows' island⁶.
 58 They fought a battle there, captured several of the inhabitants

¹ P. *maharājiddhivasyanto* in v. 52 d.

² P. *paṭipādesi* in v. 52 c.

³ *Gokarna* in Skt. also means a particular type of arrow. The elephants (*paṇḍa*) against which they are to serve as defence (*paṇḍa*) are of course the war elephants of the enemy. The MSS. are more favourable to the form of the word *gokappaka* which might easily be a synonym for *gokarnaka*.

⁴ *Amāṇa* is associated as adverb with *paṭipādesi* and refers to everything that has gone before.

⁵ So I understand the P. *sumam*.

⁶ P. *Kakudipa*. Perhaps the name of one of the Andaman Islands?

of the island alive, brought them then to the King of Laṅkā
and presented them to him. Warriors of great fighting strength 59
who sailed on five vessels landed on the territory of Rāmañña
in the port called Kusumi¹. These doughty soldiers with the 60
Nagaragiri Kittī at the head, equipped with armour and weapons,
slew from their landing-place the troops belonging to the Rā- 61
mañña country, many thousands of them in terrible combat and
while they, like to rutting elephants, hewed down around many 62
coco palms and other trees and set fire to the villages, they laid
waste a great part of the kingdom. But the ship on which the 63
Damiḍdhikārin Ādicca commanded, landed in the territory (of
Rāmañña) at the port of Pappālama, and while at once the 64
people with the Damiḍdhikārin at the head, fought a grue-
some, fearful, foe-destroying battle and captured alive many 65
people living in the country, they plunged the Rāmañña king-
dom into sore confusion. Thereupon the Silalas with terrible 66
courage, fearful with their swords, burst into the town of
Ukkama and slew the Monarch of the Rāmaṇas. When they had 67
subdued the Rāmaṇas and brought their country into their
power, the great heroes² mounted a splendid white elephant.
They rode round the town free from all fear turning the right 68
side towards it and thereupon made known by beat of drum
the supremacy of the Sovereign of Laṅkā³.

¹ Evidently the Kusima(tittā) frequently mentioned in the *Sāmaṇavaṇṇa*.

² Probably Ādicca and Kittī are meant.

³ The Burmese chronicles have nothing to say about such a catastrophe having overtaken their country. The description in the *Mahāvāṇṇa* is without doubt very much exaggerated. The fact of a successful campaign against Rāmañña is, however, confirmed by the important inscription of Deṇanagala in the Kegalla district, Galboda Korale, Meda Pattuva, whose significance H. C. F. Bell was the first to recognise (Report on the Kegalla District, ASD, 1892, p. 73 ff.). According to this inscription — one of *Parakkamaśāhī* I. — the war against Aramāyṇ was determined on in the 12th year of the King's reign. The reigning king of Aramāyṇ at that time is called Bhuvanādittā. The inscription also mentions the town of Kusumi (cf. v. 59) and tells finally of the granting of land to Riti-Navaragiri (= Rittinagaragiri v. 60) evidently

69 Then overwhelmed by fear the people in the Rāmañña
land, seeing no other protection, gathered together and held
70 counsel. With the instructions: "Year by year must we from
now onwards send elephants in any amount as tribute from
71 our property — in order that the Monarch of Laṅkā may not
72 lay on us intolerable (burdens), ye must influence him¹ and
73 thereby at all times full of pity, have mercy on us all" —
they sent in haste their messengers with letters in their hand
to the bhikkhu community² dwelling in the island of Laṅkā.
74 Through the friendly words of the community living in the
three fraternities, the Ruler of Laṅkā was moved to kindness,
75 and while the Ramanas sent him yearly numbers of elephants,
they made anew with the Laṅkā Ruler who kept his treaties
faithfully, a pact of friendship.

76 Now the Paṇḍu king by name Parakkama, in the town of
Madhurā³, when his capital was besieged by the war-loving,
77 hostile king named Kulasekhara who had come thither with
an army, had found in the territory of Jambudīpa no king
78 with whom he might have taken refuge. He sent messengers
to the Monarch of Laṅkā with the message: "O Thou with
79 whom I may take refuge, thy two feet shall be for me who

as reward for his services. The *Damīṭṭhikārin* *Adicca* is not mentioned. He appears to have died soon after the campaign, as he does not occur again in the *Cūḷavaṇṇa*.

¹ Thus I translate the phrase *amāsāmaṇṇe* *caḍ*.

² The sense of the passage is on the whole clear. The Ramanas try through the medium of the Church to obtain favorable terms of peace from Parakkumbāhu. The details offer difficulties. Line 71a b is hopelessly corrupt. Since the MSS. all agree, the corruption must be traced to the archetype. The emendation tried by S. and R. is hardly successful. Three words *acchiddam*, *amāhāram*, . . . *āsisam* seem certain. Verses 71c to 72d if translated literally would be rendered by: "we all must be taken pity on (*āgātibbā*) by you, reverent masters (*ānandareṭṭhī*), in that ye so persuade (*vedantakī* *tassa amāsa-māsa*) the King that he does not have done (to us) (*kāretā*) what is heavy to be borne."

³ For the South Indian people called Paṇḍu and their capital of Madhurā (now Madurai) in the south of the province of Madras, see 50.12 and note. V. A. Smith, *Early Hist. of India*, p. 306.

am a moth in the fire of the majesty of my foe, a cage of diamond". When the sovereign of Laṅkā heard their speech, he spake thus: "If the distress of him who has placed him- 80 self under my protection be not removed, how would my name of Parakkamabāhu¹ be fitting? He who trusts in me is hard 81 to vanquish by a foe, be he who he may. From what foe among the brutes is the hare in peril who has fled to the moon?² General Laṅkāpura, slay Kulasekhara, establish the Paṇḍu 82 king in his realm and then return." The general by name 83 Laṅkāpura, a very courageous man, versed in the means of war, a forest fire for the wide(-spreading) wilderness of the 84 foe, received with the words "Be it so!" the King's command like a wreath upon his head and accompanied by many war- skilled officers, he marched at the head of an army invincible 85 in battle and came to Mahātitha.

King Kulasekhara had (in the meantime) slain the Paṇḍu 86 king with his wife and children and captured the town Madhurā by name. Laṅkāpura received from the Great king who had 87 heard of these events, anew the order to conquer the kingdom and make it over to a scion of the house of Parakkama³. He set forth for the port Talajilla⁴ by name on the opposite coast. He embarked his great army on many hundreds of 88

¹ The name means "man of courage, possessed of courageous arms". Parakkamabāhu's campaign against Southern India is confirmed by Cōla inscriptions (Inscr. of Arakham near Kāñcī) according to which the result for the Śiṅha troops was not so brilliant as the Mhes. would have us believe. After initial successes they were forced to retire. Cf. for further details V. A. Smith, *Early History of India*, p. 840; H. W. Codrington, *Short History of Ceylon*, p. 62, 74. To the name Kulasekhara corresponds Kulaśekhga in Indian inscriptions (30. VII, p. 170 ff.).

² The Hindu thinks he sees the picture of a hare in the disk of the full moon, just as we speak of a "man in the moon". The moon is therefore called in P. *vaśa* = skr. *vaśa*, from *vaśa* = *vaśa* "hare".

³ Instead of the names Laṅkāpura and Parakkama the original has pronouns.

⁴ The MSS. have all *Talajilla* or *Talayilla*, in v. 92 only the first form. The Col. Ed. reads *Talabilla* with the variant *Talacilla*, I do not know with what authority.

ships, started off and sailed a day and a night on the back
 89 of the ocean. When he caught sight of the coast, since a
 hostile army was standing there, he made all his troops put
 90 on their armour on board. As the ships had to lie in deep
 water¹ and because with a landing just at this spot, the
 91 armour of the whole army would have been wet through, he
 made the troops get into hundreds of boats of small size².
 Then when the rain of arrows from the Daniḷas standing on
 92 the coast, came flying, he had shields fashioned of leather set
 up in front of the people (as protection) against the arrows
 and so landed in the Paṇḍu kingdom at the port called Ta-
 93 laḍilla. After putting to flight the Daniḷas at the port and
 capturing the harbour, he took up a position there and fought
 94 with vast forces four battles. When the five officers, Vaḍa-
 valattirukka-nāḷāyāra³, Kuṇḍayamutta-rāyara, Villava-rāyara⁴,
 95 Añcukoṭṭa-nāḷāyāra and Narasiḥadeva by name, advanced to
 96 fight⁵, he fought also with these, slew many Daniḷas, took
 97 away their horses, put to flight the great army and occupied
 Rāṁissara⁶. He fought with them while he was posted there,

¹ P. *agiddhe sampannambhāḍanta*. The meaning is this. The coast was so flat that the ships could not lie close to the shore. They had to turn (*paṇḍu-vi-vatti*) at some distance in deep water (*agiddhe*) and embark the troops in boats (see the following note).

² P. *akudagānāca*. *Doṇa* must be taken here in the sense of a particular measure of volume, otherwise *akā* would be unintelligible. Skr. *doṇa* means "boat" as also a measure of volume.

³ According to O. Seneviratne (private letter 22 XII 23) *vāḍaḷaṭṭa* is derived from the popular Deavidina *vāḍa* "land, district" and of "man" (Cameron *etc.* "soldier"). A Nāḷāyāra would thus be the leader of the troops of a particular district.

⁴ *Rāyara* is a title which according to O. Seneviratne, corresponds to skr. *rājāraṇy*, Camrose *rayura*.

⁵ Of the five officers four are also mentioned several times later on; Kuṇḍayamutta, 76. 177; Villava, 76. 169 ff.; Añcukoṭṭa 76. 228, 191, 239, 247, 300; Narasiḥadeva, 76. 174). Only the first mentioned does not occur again. It is significant that Añcukoṭṭa occurs as a place name in 76. 235, the Nāḷāyāra probably taking his name from the locality. See also note to c. 160.

⁶ Skr. *Rāṁasāraṇa*, situated on a sandy island which joins the Indian mainland with Adam's Bridge, with a famous temple often described but belonging to a later period (15th to 16th cent.).

five combats and after fighting nine battles¹ he fought² in
 the tenth against the six officers Sīlamegha, Narataṅgabrahma- 98
 mahārāja, Haṅkiya-rājara, Añcukoṭṭa-rājara, Phajodhiya-rājara 99
 by name and him called Paṇasiyurāja³, as well as the five 100
 officers named above who had advanced with great forces. He
 bore away the victory, seized many horses⁴, slew the Damiḥas 101
 and penetrated from Kūmissara a distance of four gāvatas⁵
 to Kundukūha which lies between the two seas. The many 102
 Damiḥas who had fled through fear, took refuge in the forest;
 he captured several of them and had them impaled there.
 Some of these, at the command of the Ruler of Laṅkā who 103
 thought to have all the cetiyas formerly destroyed by the
 Damiḥas rebuilt by them, he had brought to Laṅkā and the 104
 work of restoration begun on the Ratanavāluka-cetiya⁶. The 105
 Sovereign of Laṅkā had the thūpa which had been destroyed
 by the Damiḥas restored, and in order at the close to celebrate
 the festival of the crowning ornament⁷, he betook himself 106
 with his ministers and the court to Anurādhapura and assembled

¹ That is besides the five combats the four mentioned in v. 93.

² The verb governing the accusative in vv. 93—100 is *gacchamyāto* in v. 100c which is treated as in 35. 46, as a transitive verb.

³ In the Col. Ed. the names *Narataṅgabrahma mahārājacharya* in 98 and *Paṇasiyurājacharya* are changed contrary to all the MSS. into *Narataṅgabrahma rājacharya* and *Phajodhiyārājacharya*. Apparently the editors wanted to avoid the wrong close of the verse **rājacharya*, but in v. 95 we have just as wrong a **śeṣacharya* which is not corrected in Col. Ed. Mentioned again later are Sīlamegha (ca) 76. 238, 299; 77. 90 and Haṅkiya 76. 121 C. For Añcukoṭṭa see above.

⁴ The organisation of the Damiḥa army evidently differed materially from that of the Sīhas in the greater number of its cavalry. In all accounts of victories gained (see already above v. 96) horses are always mentioned as the principal booty.

⁵ That is about 8 miles. Kundukūha was situated on the tongue of land jutting out from the continent to the island of Rāmaśvara.

⁶ Name of the Mahāthūpa in Anurādhapura corresponding to what is now known as the Ratanavāli. It is used here for the first time. The allied designation *Hemavāli-cetiya* occurs already in 51. 62.

⁷ *P. thūpākāśaḥ*. By *thūpākā* is understood the pointed cone resting on the cube-like structure which forms the apex or finial of the thūpa.

107 the great bhikkhu community on the island of Laṅkā. He
 provided the community with the four articles of use and
 when the fourteenth day¹ had arrived he had made known in
 108 the town by beat of drum: "The town shall be decorated;
 and provided with perfumes, flowers and other offerings shall
 the people come to the place of the Mahāthūpa." After he
 had then on the day of the full moon performed in right
 109 manner all the old customs, he himself came as the shadows
 grew longer, from the royal palace². In divine beauty he was
 adorned with costly ornaments, with crown, necklace³, bracelets
 110 and the like, (all) richly set with jewels. In front of him went
 the ladies of the court many hundreds in number, with the
 111 grace of heavenly nymphs, their bodies decorated, and there
 followed him⁴ numbers of distinguished officers with richly
 112 decorated garments and resplendent in bright clothing. With
 the mass of the elephants and horses gleaming with their
 golden harness, doing reverence⁵ to the cetiya with a gift of
 113 lamps distributed over their bodies, and with the burden of
 the mass of human beings he pressed as it were, the earth
 together. With umbrellas, whisks and banners he veiled in
 114 a sense the countenance of the firmament. With the sound
 of the manifold instruments of music he cleft asunder the
 mountain ravines, with the splendour of his majesty he comple-
 115 tely bewitched the eyes of the laity⁶ and with the beams of

¹ That is the full-moon day.

² This is the final sentence, taken up from v. 116 a b. In 116 d we have the finite verb *offhiṇsi* of the whole sentence beginning with v. 107 which I have split up into its component parts, translating the participles and gerunds by principal verbs.

³ P. *maṇā* means like *skṛ*, *maṇā* also necklace, neck-chain.

⁴ In v. 110 and 111 *parakkhuto* and *uucchā* are in opposition.

⁵ W. seems not to have taken account of the feminine form *pāṇenāhi*. It proves that the part. must be referred to *kaṭṭhiassaphaṭṭhi*. It is thus the elephants and the horses not "worshippers" who wore the lamps. These were probably fastened to the bodies of the animals (*saṅgaṅgaṭṭha*) by means of ribbons or by a framework.

⁶ Of "tears of joy" there is nothing in the text: *harasphuray* is a duplication of intensity.

the golden utensils, chests, banners, vessels, fans, jars and the like he steeped the place in radiant glory¹. Thus on he came 116 and took his place with the splendour of the King of the gods in the court of the cetiya. Many hundreds of bhikkhus who 117 had come hither, surrounded the cetiya, closing it round, as it were, with a railing of coral². The King then had the 118 golden point placed on the thūpa and showed the world there-with the beauty of the Kelāsa mountain with the sun on its summit. On this day too there reigned in the town also dur- 119 ing the night great brightness with the lamp festival of the King and because of the point placed upon the thūpa. When 120 thus the Monarch Parakkamabāhu had celebrated the great festival of the sacred thūpa, he betook himself again to Pulatthinagara.

But the general (Laṅkāpura) had a strong camp called 121 Parakkasapura built at Kundukūla, and as he wished to make it last long, he erected three high walls of stone, two thou- 122 sand, four hundred cubits long³ and twelve gate towers, and a 123 building with a half square⁴ and three trenches in such a way that the waters flowed from ocean to ocean⁵. While he tarried 124 in this stronghold he subdued officers like Kaṇḍakudiyarāja⁶ by name, Coḷagaṅga and others. Since in this way the power 125 of the Siḥalas waxed from day to day, King Kulasekhara sent again Sundarapapḍurāja⁷ and Papḍurāja by name and 126

¹ P. *piṇḍarāṇaṃ kareva* "making ruddy, light-coloured".

² P. *parāḷasandibhāya*. Here *andibh* has again clearly the meaning of railing. Cf. note to 79. 28. The coral colour is supplied by the reddish yellow colour of the monks' robes.

³ As *catana* means the same as *hatta* (see 87. 172) that is roughly about 1½ ft. thus the wall was 3000 ft. in extent.

⁴ See note to 78. 22. Here there were evidently as W. supposes, barracks for the soldiers.

⁵ The fortifications were spread right across the whole of the peninsula and thus safeguarded it and the camp from the mainland. *Tattha* belongs of course to *dhātaveṇa parikkhatagayaṃ* and *gatha* (*quadrant*) refers to *palāṭṭa*.

⁶ We have to read here and in v. 120 *So Kaṇḍakudiyā*²; *so* refers each time to Laṅkāpura. Cf. note to 76. 170.

⁷ Is mentioned again 76. 174.

127 many other officers with troops to drive them thence. Laṅkā-
 128 pura fought with them three combats, put them to flight and
 129 took the village called Carukkaṭṭa. And he set out from there
 129 and fought with these same officers as well as with the Damiḷa
 129 Ālavandapperūmāla¹ a great battle, carried away the victory
 130 and captured the villages by name Koḷuvura and Maruthūpa.
 130 In the district Kancakuḍiya and in the district named Koḷuru
 131 the general subdued the soldiers called Maruvana². In the
 131 district of Viraṅga the mighty (general) plundered many vil-
 132 lages and market towns such as Kuṇappanallura and others,
 132 and after subduing the powerful officer called Māḷava-rāyara³
 133 and thousands of Damiḷas, he took up his abode there.
 133 Thereupon he returned and betook himself to Parakkamapura
 134 to satisfy his troops by the distribution of food and pay⁴. On
 134 the march thither he gave battle to Ālavanda who had his
 135 position at the village called Vaṭṭali and slew him.

135 Since now the powerful king Kuḷasekhara — who possess-
 135 ed the courage of a lion, whose great army was war-tried,
 136 who well understood the expedients of war — although he
 136 had sent forth his great dignitaries with big army and train
 137 had not been able to win the victory, he himself set forth
 137 to fight. Māḷava-cakkavattin, Māḷava-rāyara by name, Pa-
 138 rittikkunḍiyara⁵ and Tondamināraya by name; Tavarādhipati-

¹ Is mentioned again 76.134, 145, 223, 232.

² This is probably the caste or rather tribe of the Marūvar living in the district of Madura (See Imperial Gazetteer of India s. v. Madurai, where with the Vellalar and the Kallar (= Kallars in 76.246) they are characteristic. They seem to be descended from the aborigines and were known in early times as fearless soldiers.

³ Cf. below in v. 137 Māḷava-cakkavattin and Māḷava-rāyara. The first name again in 76.235, 265, 274, 284; 71.27. the second 76.210, 267 f. Māḷava is the name of a tribe. See Epigraphia Indica VII, Appendix, no. 10, 64, 409.

⁴ A veiled allusion to certain difficulties with which Laṅkāpura was faced during his advance. Note too that the place Vaṭṭali named in v. 134 is later on again occupied by him (see v. 169) and that only after severe fighting.

⁵ For Māḷava see note to 76.132. Parittikkunḍiyāra is again mention-

velāra, Virapperaya-rāyara, Seṅkuṇḍiya-rāyara and Nigaladha-
rāyara by name, Karummaḷatta-rāyara and Nakula-rāyara, 139
Puṅkuṇḍa-nāḷālvāra and Karamba-rāyara by name, Kuṇḍiyūra 140
and Athalayūra-nāḷālvāra¹ by name, Kaṅgayara, the two
Virugaṅgas, Mura-rāyara, Alattūru-nāḷālvāra, the three Maṅga- 141
ya-rāyaras, Kaḷaraṇḍiya-nāḷālvāra and Keṇḍasiḥumuttura —
these and other officers, as well as those named above he 142
took with him, further the remaining troops in the province
of the Paṇḍa King Parakkama, the whole forces of his mother's 143
brothers in the two Koṅga districts and the whole of his own
forces in the kingdom of Tiruṇaveli². Also Niccavinodavāpava- 144
rāyara³, Paṭṭi-rāyara, Tūṅkuttara-rāyara and Tompiya-rāyara
by name, Aḷavandapperūmāja, him called Coḷakonāra as well 145
as Tūṅipperūmāla and Aḷakūya-rāyara by name, him called 146
Mānūḷanarāṇumalīrāja, Avandiya-rāyara, Muṇayadha⁴-rāyara
by name and the Daṇḍa Viṭṭāra; also these officers with vast 147
army and train he took with him and marched near to Pa-

ed in 76. 221. As regards the other names mentioned in 137--141,
Tomlamūṣṭiya occurs again in 76. 315, 77. 1 ff., Toraṇḍilipati again in
76. 316, 77. 67; Virapperaya again in 76. 316, 77. 6 ff., Seṅkuṇḍiya 76. 221,
77. 7, 35; Nigaladha again 77. 16 ff.; Karummaḷatta again 76. 216; Puṅ-
kuṇḍa again 76. 240, 278 ff., 77. 57, 92; Athalayūra again 76. 260, 77. 27;
Kaṅgayara again 76. 260, 316, 77. 15; Virugaṅga again 76. 131, 179 ff.;
Mura again 76. 216; Alattūru again 76. 184, 214 ff., 306; Maṅgaya again
77. 7, 38 (cf. note to 76. 220); Kaḷaraṇḍiya again 76. 267, 316, 77. 10 ff.;
Keṇḍasiḥumuttura again 77. 7. Nakula, Karumba and Kuṇḍiyūra do not
occur again.

¹ The Col. Ed. has contrary to the MSS. *ṭāḷālvāra.

² Now Tinnevely, the district filling out the extreme south-east
corner of the Indian peninsula. The correct form of the name is
Tinnelvēli. See Imp. Gazetteer of India s. v.; W.'s note to the passage.
The two Koṅga districts are according to 76. 238, Tūṅkoṅga and
Vudakoṅga.

³ Of the officers named here Niccavinodavāyana occurs again in 77. 76.
For Aḷavandapperūmāja see note to 76. 128; a Coḷakonāra is mentioned
again 76. 163, 181, 188, 77. 77, 86. Tūṅipperūmāla 76. 190; Muṇayadha
77. 40. The other names are only mentioned here.

⁴ Again the Col. Ed. changes the name, contrary to the MSS. into
Mundiyā.

148 rakkamapura. "Only when I shall have cut off the heads of
 the Sihulas shall this time my sacrifice to the gods in holy
 149 Rāmissara take place!" Letting such lion-like cry sound
 forth, he occupied a strong encampment at the village of Erukūṭṭa
 150 and Iḍḍaḷissara. Now in order to destroy the strong encamp-
 ment of Parakkamapura, Kulasekhara sent forth a great army
 from the land side and another embarked in numbers of ships
 151 from the ocean. When thus the mighty force coming from dif-
 ferent sides began the fight it was as if two seas overflowed their
 152 shores. Laṅkāpura made his great army put on their armour,
 advanced from his strong encampment and began the battle
 153 with the others. But the army of the Damiḷas suffered fight-
 ing in the battle (heavy loss by) sword blows and arrow shots.
 154 It weakened, turned tail and withdrew to its own stronghold.
 In this way it fought in the offensive three and fifty actions.
 155 But when King Kulasekhara saw this disaster in every combat,
 156 he himself set forth and sent out his troops to fight. Laṅkā-
 pura had all the gates opened and placing his army like a
 157 great mountain in front of him, he came forth. He slew in
 combat numbers of Damiḷas¹, took away their horses, gained
 the victory and pressed forward in pursuit as far as Kurum-
 158 bāṇḍanukaḷi. While he was beginning here to build a strong
 encampment², Kulasekhara gathered together his great army
 159 which had been shattered in the fight, took also his picked
 troops³ whom he cherished as his life, marched hither himself
 160 and opened light awaking terror among the foe. With thou-
 sands of fish, namely the (glittering) swords, with hundreds
 of waves, namely the horses, with the mass of the waters,
 namely the infantry, with the lines of surf namely the um-
 161 brellas⁴, with the flowing of the streams⁵, namely the arrows,

¹ Of course we must read *Damiḷa 'arce*.

² Loc. nba. It must be supplemented by *tena*. "When by him (Laṅkāpura) was begun the building of a strong encampment."

³ P. *sārabhāṭṭay mahāseṇam*. By *sāra* is meant the duramen (heart-wood) of a tree.

⁴ The white umbrellas are the badges of the officers.

⁵ P. *āpayāvipātana*. What is meant are the streams flowing into

with the clamorous din, namely the drums, the whole battle-
 field was terror-striking like the ocean. When thus the great
 battle was fought, the Sīhahas endowed with great courage,
 stifled the twitching in their arms¹. They slew Villava-rāyana
 by name and Ceḷakamūra and the mighty officer, Yādhava-
 rāyana, many hundreds of soldiers and officers of the king;
 also they wounded the horse on which King Kulasekhara was
 riding. Kulasekhara with his army turned to flee in order
 therewith to give the Sīhahas, as it were, occasion for yet
 more furious sword strokes. When in flight he fled, he not
 only surrendered his courage but also his throne, his umbrella,
 his ornaments and all else. Laṅkāpura marched to the fortress
 called Erukkavēru where his enemy King Kulasekhara had
 resided, burned it down and then after erecting a new strong-
 hold, Laṅkāpura² tarried there some time. Then he set forth
 and marched to Vaḍali³. Thence he advanced further and
 hereupon took Deviyāpattana by force. Then he betook him-
 self to Siriyavula and after completely vanquishing in bitter
 combat the well-armed Khuddakancakunḍa-rāyana⁴ commanding
 the stronghold named Koluvukkottu, he put to flight in battle
 numbers of dignitaries of King Kulasekhara, captured also
 this strong place and burned down seven and twenty large
 villages in (the district) Dantika. Hereupon he fought with

the ocean. The comparison of the combat to the raging sea is described exactly in accordance with the rules of Indian poetics.

¹ They had abundant opportunity of satisfying their thirst for fighting.

² The first two names occur already in 76. 94, 145, but are also mentioned again later on (Villava 76. 178, 185; & Ceḷakamūra 76. 178, 181 and 189, 17. 17 and 84, also a Yādhava 76. 178, 177). Cf. note to 76. 180. Yādhava is a South Indian clan name. See Hl. var. Appendix. nr. 391, 332, 393 etc.

³ All the MSS. have here *laṅkāraṭṭu* which should be adopted on principle in the text. W. supposes it might be a corruption of *laṅkāraṭṭu*. Not impossible.

⁴ See above note to v. 183.

⁵ The name is *Caḷḷakamūra* "The small Kaṇḍakunḍa" in 76. 185 ff. 217 ff. The name is most closely connected with that of the district *Kaṇḍakunḍa* 76. 190, this again with the proper name *Kaṇḍakunḍarāja*, 76. 191.

173 the *Damila Paṇḍiyāpādāra*¹ dwelling in *Koṭavukkoṭṭa* who was
 of terrible courage, with both *Colakonūras*, with the officer
 174 *Yādhava-rāyara* and with *Villava-rāyara*, with the *Damila*
Kālīnga-rāyara with *Sundarapaṇḍa-rāyara*, with *Narasimhadevara*
 175 and with *Paṇḍiya-rāyara* as well as with the (officers) in the
 village of the *bṛāhmanas*, shattered them and slew many
 176 *Damilas*. He took (as booty) many horses and armed with
 troop and train, took up a position at the place named
 177 *Kuṇḍayanamkoṭṭa*. He brought into his power the three *Damila*
 officers, *Kuṇḍayanamta-rāyara*, *Kaḍḍiya-rāyara* and *Yādhava-*
 178 *rāyara* and took up a position at that place, well understand-
 ing right places. Further the great hero brought into his
 179 power *Paṇḍiya-rāyara* in the fortress of *Vikkamucolapperu*
 180 and the three, *Paṇḍimapaḍala-nāḍa*²*rāra*, *Vīraṅga-rāyara* and
Kaṅgakoṇḍapperayara, who were in *Kāmūnakkkoṭṭa* and advanced
 to *Maruthukoṭṭa* with the object of fighting a decisive battle³.

¹ Only occurs here. For *Colakonūra* see note to 76.144, for *Yādhava* note to 76.163, for *Villava* *Idēma*; for *Sundarapaṇḍa* note to 76.126. *Kālīnga* is mentioned again 76.214 ff., 77.40.

² Verses 170-180 form one sentence. The principal verb is *pāyēsi* (170c), subordinate to it are the gerunds in 170-172 and the gerunds and pres. part. in 175-6 as well as those in 178 and 180a. The nominatives in 172c-174d, in 177a-c and in 178c-179c are independent of the construction of the sentence and are summed up with *hi* (*īre-ecchi* 175a, *hi* *śāmrata* *īyā* 177cd, *īre-ete* *īyā* 179d). Note how in the account of the contests in Southern India the names of the *Damila* officers repeat themselves. Only once in this passage are *Kaḍḍiya*, *Paṇḍimapaḍala* and *Paṇḍiyāpādāra* mentioned, as well as *Kaṅgakoṇḍapperayara*, with which *Kaṅgakoṇḍakulappa* 77.75 may be compared. *Paṇḍiya-rāyara* is mentioned twice in this passage but not otherwise, *Yādhava* here in v. 176 and 177, before in v. 163. In v. 163 a *Colakonūra*, a *Villava* and a *Yādhava* are mentioned as having fallen. Possibly these may often be place names as above in the case of *Añcukoṭṭa* (see v. 236) rather than names of persons, *Villava-rāyara* meaning for instance, the *rāyara* of *Villava* (see note to 77.9). *Kuṇḍayanamta* and *Narasimhadeva* occur already in 76.91-96, *Vīraṅga* already in 76.131, 140 and and later repeatedly (76.181 ff.). *Sundarapaṇḍa* 76.126. It is expressly stated that there are two *Colakonūras* (76.173). It is the same below with *Tondriṅa* (181). The same with *Ahuttirunāḍāpādāra* (184, 214) and with *Vīraṅga* (110). In v. 141 three *Maṅḡya-rāyara* are mentioned.

There he gave the Coḷakonāra, the other Tondriya, the officer 181
 Sattāṇḍāra, the Daṁḍa Viragaṅgara, Kuttāṇḍāra and others a 182
 severe combat. He robbed Tondriya of his life, took his horses 183
 away from him, slew many Daṁḍas and occupied besides the
 fortress known by the name of Kaṇḍakopḍāna. Then he set 184
 from there, took up a position at the place named Paṇḍu,
 fought there with the two Alattūra-nāḍālvēras, with Paṇḍriya-
 rāyara, Villava-rāyara and Cullakaṇḍakopḍa-rāyara¹ a great 185
 battle, shattered them and captured Paṇḍirakkotṭa. Then he 186
 turned and betook himself to Kaṇḍakopḍāna² where he had
 stood formerly. Hereupon he marched to Vāḷakkotṭa³ to fight 187
 there, fought there against Kaṇḍadevamūḍava-rāyara, against the
 two Viragaṅgaras and the Daṁḍa Coḷakonāra a great battle, 188
 shattered them all and slew numbers of Daṁḍas, seized from 189
 them many horses and captured with this fortress (Vāḷakkotṭa)
 also (the fortress) Neṭṭūru⁴. He himself took up a position
 there, brought Kuttāṇḍāra⁵, Viragaṅga and Tāṅḍipperūṁḍa 190
 and the Daṁḍas dependent in him, many hundreds in number,
 as well as Ilāṅkiya and Aṇḍukotṭa-rāyara under his influence, 191
 gave them earrings and other ornaments. But on Ilāṅkiya- 192
 rāyara he conferred the well-known and coveted title of Rā-
 jāvasiḥajaṅga-Silāmegha⁶.

Meanwhile Laṅkāpara learned that the very youngest son of 193
 the Paṇḍu King Parakkama, Prince Virapaṇḍu by name, at the 194
 murder of his unhappy royal father — who had fallen with wife
 and child into the power of the enemy — by some wife or other 195

¹ See above v. 179 and note.

² W. translates *parakkadā* wrongly by "he proceeded to . . ." Its meaning is far rather "he returned to . . ." Cf. skr. *prati-ā-vat*. Evidently the attack on Paṇḍu had not the wished-for success.

³ The text here is very corrupt, but the name Vāḷakkotṭa is assured.

⁴ W. suggests, though doubtfully, Nellore. That is quite impossible. Nellore lies north of Madras. The scene of the combats described lay between Ramiswaram and Maḍḍurū. Cf. v. 197.

⁵ Cf. above v. 182.

⁶ The gerund *dated* in 1921 shows that the sentence here is not finished. The principal verb is *peresi* in 196a. For the title Rājāvasiḥajaṅga see note to 73. 91 c d pp. 10, n. 31.

had been saved from the hands of the foe and now, since through fear he dared not come near, was sojourning in the province of
 196 Malaya¹. He (Laṅkāpura) sent a messenger to him: "I have here
 in war again and again completely vanquished Kulasekhara
 197 together with his dignitaries and am now standing, after capturing a part of the realm, not far from Madhurā at a distance
 198 of two or three *gāvutas*². But my Master who had in view the protection of thy royal father, has since the murder of
 199 this Ruler by his foes, at the tidings of this, given me the following charge: 'he has placed himself under my protection, if now he has been slain by the hostile king, ye shall now
 200 slay the latter and make over the realm of the Paṇḍu King
 201 Parakkama to a scion of his house, if such there be'. Therefore come without fear in haste hither, and take over the dominion in thy father's kingdom." Thus ran the friendly
 202 message in accord with the truth³. When the Prince heard of this matter in the right manner, he betook himself to him
 203 without delay. Hereupon Laṅkāpura sent a letter to Laṅkā to the Great king with the news that the prince had arrived
 204 destitute. When the Great king had attentively heard this report, he sent joyfully many golden and silver vessels worthy
 205 to eat from, as well as many gold and silver lamp-stands and exquisite garments from his own stock, worthy to clothe
 206 himself with, earrings and chains and bangles set with jewels and the like as a gladdening gift. And the Prince accepted the whole of the heart-ravishing gift reverently making obeisance in the direction in which the King was.
 208 Hereupon Laṅkāpura fought with great might against Kapḍadevanāṭṭura-rāyara in Muṇḍikkāra, drove him from this
 209 place and brought the Damilas into his power in the two

¹ As in Ceylon and Pegu (76. 32) also in Southern India name for the mountainous country. Cf. the name of the Malayālis who live in the districts of Arcot and Salem, that is in the mountains west of Pondicherry.

² About four to six miles. See note to 73. 154.

³ The words *ti vāṭṭa saccaya neta vāṭṭa* in v. 201 d refer to *duṭṭa* *paṇḍu* in v. 96, comprehending the contents of the message.

and Seakunḍi-rāyana and many other war-skilled Damiḷas,
 222 officers from the immediate retinue of King Kulasekhara:
 223 Kāliṅga-rāyana, Tennavanappalla-rāyana and Ājavandapperūmāla¹,
 all people hard to vanquish who after equipping their army,
 224 came to the place Pāṇpata by name, their heart full of fury
 225 and firmly determined this time to conquer the foe. When
 Laṅkāpura heard of the matter he, the expert, sent officers
 226 thither with a big army and train. They marched thither,
 invested the fortress from all sides, burned down a score of
 227 large villages near the stronghold and after making their
 report, sent a messenger to Laṅkāpura to ask if they were
 228 to take the fortress or not. At such tidings Laṅkāpura once
 more sent forth a great army and gave the charge to capture
 229 the fortress. When now they received the command sent to
 230 them, they began all of them to open a fearful fight. There
 raged between the two armies a battle — hardly bearable,
 awful, exasperating — like to the raging of the storm at
 231 the destruction of the world. Damiḷas thousands in number
 they deprived of life, besides that the Tennavanappalla-rāyana
 232 from the immediate retinue of the King. When Ājavandappe-
 rūmāla after receiving a wound, took flight, they slew the
 horse he had mounted and seized this and many other steeds,
 233 and while they brought joyous laughter to the lotus counte-
 nance of the goddess of fortune of heroes, the Siḥalas slatter-
 234 ed with a lion's courage the army of the Damiḷas. After
 Laṅkāpura had taken possession of Pāṇpata he later on brought
 the troops standing there over to his side.
 235 Laṅkāpura betook himself thereupon to Anivalakkikoṭṭa²
 236 and subdued Mūjava-cakkarattin in Añcukoṭṭa. After he had
 in like manner captured Toṇḍi and Pāsa³, he advanced to
 Kurundāṅkunḍiya to clear the region lying northwards of the

¹ Kāliṅga above 72. 176 note; Ājavandapperūmāla 76. 128, 232, Tennavanappalla falls in battle according to v. 231.

² Probably the same as above in v. 212, Anivalakkkoṭṭa. The place is repeatedly mentioned below v. 276 ff. Cf. note to v. 238.

³ The two places must have lain very near together since their names 77. 91 are formed into the compound Toṇḍipāsa.

enemy. After he had there subdued *Vaḷuṭṭhi-rāyaṇa*, he bestowed on him as a gift of favour, a golden bracelet and the like. Then he marched thence and betook himself to *Tirivekambam*¹. Here he subdued *Silāmeghara*, *Kanasiya-rāyaṇa* and *Aṇcukoṭṭa-nāḷālvāra*² and showed them all marks of favour as before (to *Vaḷuṭṭhi*). Thereupon the great hero whose word was to be trusted³, sent a message to *Puṇkondā-nāḷālvāra*⁴ in order to bring him under his influence. But when the latter without showing himself, went to *Semponmūri*, *Laṅkāpura* betook himself thither in order to capture *Semponmūri*. To capture this fortress a *Coḷa* army had once upon a time marched hither and could not take it in spite of a four days' fight. This inaccessible stronghold the *Sihalas* with their lion-like courage, captured⁵ without allowing more time than half a day to pass. After they had broken through two outerwalls and four gate-towers, they penetrated like singly marching elephants⁶ into the interior of the fortress, slew there the *Damilas*, many thousands in number, and conquered thus in a moment the stronghold *Semponmūri*. Thereupon (came) the troop of the *Kallaras*, the *Maravaras*⁷, as also the *Gajilalas* and the *Kuntavaras*, the army of *Vallakkattāra* and the troop of *Ūcena*, as also the mighty army in the district of *Aṇcukoṭṭa*: these exceeding brave, hai-

¹ Is also mentioned in v. 206 and 270 in close connection with *Kaṇḍāṅkoppāṇi* or *Anivāṇṇikī*.

² *Kanasiya* is only mentioned here. For the two others see above notes to v. 95 and 99.

³ *P. succasaṃdha*. This is specially stressed. Evidently *Laṅkāpura* had guaranteed *Puṇkondā*'s safety. *Puṇkondā* nevertheless does not risk preventing himself in *Laṅkāpura*, as he distrusts his promises.

⁴ See note to 76. 187.

⁵ *Daggaṇa* must be supplemented by the verb *gāḍṇam* from v. 245 c.

⁶ W. "one by one like unto so many elephants." I think however, that we must take *paṇḍakūṭṭhāṇa* in the same sense as 72. 248 ("solitary elephants, rogue elephants"). Cf. the note.

⁷ Cf. above note to 76. 193. The troops mentioned in v. 246-7 are those belonging to particular tribes or those drawn from the men of certain districts who are capable of bearing arms.

headed forces of the Damiḷas, numbering some fifty to sixty
 249 thousand, surrounded thereupon the fortress occupied by the
 Siḥalas and opened at once a most embittered fight. Then
 250 the Laṅkāpura Deva¹ and the Laṅkāgiri Sora opened the gate
 251 by the southern tower, accompanied by their troops (and)
 with a courage scarcely to be surpassed, robbed Damiḷas thou-
 252 sands of them, of their life, shattered with lion-like courage
 the unruly Damiḷa army come from that direction hitherward,
 253 as lions a herd of elephants. From the southern door there
 broke forth at this moment the general Gokappa and the
 254 Kesadhātu Loka by name, slew many soldiers of the enemy
 on the battlefield and shattered to the last man the hostile
 255 forces which remained over from the slaughter. From the
 northern tower-gate came the mighty Kesadhātu Kitti and
 the officer named Jagadvijaya for which scarce any man was
 256 a match. The heroes shattered in no time the Damiḷa army
 257 after robbing many Damiḷa warriors of their life. Thus the
 Siḥalas destroyed at once in a moment the whole forces of
 258 the Damiḷas, put them to flight, captured many steeds and
 found themselves — the victory gained, famous by reason of
 many deeds of heroism — again together in the fortress fur-
 259 named under the name of Senponmāri. Thereupon he subdued²
 the Kuntavaras, the soldiery of the Kallacus, the army of the
 260 Goḷihahas and the troop of the Maravaras, the army of the
 Vallakkuttāra and the following of Ūcena, the Athalayūru-
 261 nāḷāḷvāra and Kaṇḍayara³ and their shattered army, the
 dwellers in Tūlayūruṇṇū, the army in Kaṭṭhayinūḍu and the
 262 dwellers of Athalayūruṇṇū and those of Kākaṇṇūḍu⁴: all
 these Damiḷa forces all that lay (in a line) from the village
 263 of Uellāra up to the frontier of the Coḷa region he brought
 264 into his power and bestowed on them favours as before. He
 accepted the gifts which were brought him by the Vessas and

¹ Already mentioned in 75.136. Cf. further 76.310 ff.

² I anticipate here the finite verb *vassāṃ vassā* occurring in v. 269 b.

³ For these two names see note to 76.157.

⁴ The names of districts (*udḍḍa*) in v. 261, 262 do not occur otherwise.

the Yavanas¹ and distinguished these people also by countless marks of favour. To Mājava-cakkavattin who placed himself 265 under his protection he restored Semponnūri and appointed him to his (former) post. Then he set forth from there 266 and came again to Tirivekambama and starting hence he reached Kurundakuppi².

Now Kaṣṣarapḍi-nāḍiālvūra had in battle with great forces 267 wrested Muṇḍikkūra³ from Mājava-rāyara. Then seeing no 268 other aid, Mājava-rāyara approached Laṅkāpura: "be then my protection". Laṅkāpura at once summoned his best 269 officers, the two Kesadhātus, known to the people as Kitti and Loka, and the general Gokaṣṣa and charged them as 270 their commander, to open hostilities and restore Muṇḍikkūra to Mājava-rāyara. These betook themselves to the spot, began 271 a combat hard to withstand, drove the foe from Muṇḍikkūra, slew many Damiḷas and after they had placed Mājava-rāyara 272 once more in his former position, they returned thence to Laṅkāpura.

Another officer, Puṇḍikopḍa-nāḍiālvūra⁴ by name, betook 273 himself to the place called Siriyavala, fought while there a 274 great battle with Mājava-cakkavattin, put him to flight and took the village known by the name of Jayaṇḍikopḍama and 275 immediately after that Semponnūri itself. When the hero Laṅkāpura, best of steadfast men, heard of this event, he set 276 forth himself at once from the fortress Anivalakki and advanced, in order to take Semponnūri, to Tirivekambama⁵. When 277 Puṇḍikopḍa-nāḍiālvūra learned of this event, he left Semponnūri and betook himself from there to Siriyavala. Thereupon the hero 278

¹ E. *Yavana* = skr. *yavāya* is the name of the third caste. *Yavana* does not necessarily mean the Greeks (Ionians) but all westerns living in India, more especially those of Arabian origin. See E. R. Ayrton, *Ceylon Notes and Queries*, I, 1913, p. VIII.

² See note to 76. 238.

³ Cf. 76. 210—211. For Kaṣṣarapḍi note to 76. 137.

⁴ See above note to 76. 137.

⁵ The continued recurrence of place names previously mentioned (cf. 76. 170; 76. 241, 259; 76. 212, 235; 76. 238, 266) shows again that all these contests were waged within a fairly circumscribed area.

Laṅkāpura marched to Semponmāri and when now Paṅkondā-
 279 nāḍāyāra came thither with the intent to surrender, but
 without presenting himself, betook himself again to the place
 Siriyavala, Laṅkāpura also marched to the village of Siriyavala
 280 and began from all sides an embittered combat. Now Paṅkondā-
 281 nāḍāyāra sent the following message: "I will submit to thee,
 if safety is vouchsafed me, since I am mastered by great fear;
 282 if not, I dare not come." At the tidings of this Laṅkāpura
 who was himself free from fear, sent a return message with
 283 the purport that he should come. At the message of the
 hero Laṅkāpura whose word was to be relied on, the former
 284 free of all dread, betook himself to him. Thereupon Laṅkā-
 pura bestowed on him many favours, summoned also Māḍu-
 285 ra-cakkavattin to him, reconciled the two and after he had
 placed them both in their former positions, the great hero
 286 betook himself to Neṭṭūru. The two villages which had been
 laid waste, Kūjesihambāḷa and Vajugāma by name he rebuilt
 287 and after he had dammed up two tanks in Siriyavala and
 two tanks also in Perumpalaya, he had the tilling of the fields
 taken in hand.

288 The Ruler Kulasekhara took the troops in Tirigaveli¹, as
 well as the troops of the two brothers of his mother in Ten-
 289 koṅgu and Vajakoṅgu², and versed in the various expedients
 of statecraft, such as the distribution of honours and the like,
 he made deserters of many Damiḷas who had already been
 290 subdued and began now, equipped with forces to march forth
 to battle. When the prudent Laṅkāpura heard trustworthy
 291 tidings of this he destroyed the traitorous Damiḷas root and
 branch, true to the command of his Lord whose task it was
 to subdue the miscreants.

292 Thereupon there came sent by the Great king to cover
 his rear, the hero Jagadvijaya³ by name whose courage ex-
 293 ceeded that of the whole world, accompanied by many foot

¹ See 76. 143 with the note.

² Cf. 77. 43.

³ As he is already mentioned in v. 255 in the struggle for Sempon-
 māri, it may be assumed that Laṅkāpura had sent him to Laṅkā for
 reinforcements.

soldiers and steeds to Anivalakki after crossing the ocean. The far-famed Laṅkāpura likewise left Neṭṭūru and betook 294 himself to Anivalakki. He sought out the newly-arrived (Jagadvijaya), embraced him and having conversed with him 295 in heartfelt and friendly manner, the foe-crusher returned to Neṭṭūru. Setting forth from there, he came, having knowledge 296 of the right places, to the place known by the name of Mundramaddhānu and took up far-fame for his courage, his position there. At the place called Kijakoṭṭa and at the place 297 by name Maṅgalama¹ he fought with the Damiṇas, slew many soldiers, took such foes as one was obliged to seize, alive and 298 captured many horses which had been left on the battlefield. Then he set forth from there, came to Orattiyūrutombana and 299 endowed with a surplus of invincible courage, he fought with Pūṅkoṭṭa-nāḷāyāra, Silameghara and Aṅcukoṭṭa-nāḷāyāra² 300 a great (and) terrible battle. After cutting down many Damiṇas he betook himself to Śiriyavala, burned down the two-storeyed palace of Pūṅkoṭṭa-nāḷāyāra who had not submitted 302 to him and marched from the place Tirikkānappera farther. The general Jagadvijaya now advanced from Anivalakki to 303 Neṭṭūru, set forth from there and shattered, himself un- 304 approachable³, the fortresses called Madhurammāpattina, Pāttanallūru and Sorapaḷakkoṭṭa. Returned to Neṭṭūru he tarried 305 there and brought the two Aḷattūru-nāḷāyāras and Collakāṇṇa-kupḍa-rāyara⁴ to submission. When once the hero with great 306 forces came to Pāttanallūru, he sent to Laṅkāpura the following message: "Thou must come with greatest haste to the 307 river called Vayiga; I must needs see thee, there is something to report." When the hero Laṅkāpura received these 308 tidings, he set off with all speed thence and began the march with large forces. The hostile army which was standing at 309

¹ Cf. below note to 77. 58.

² The three named here belonged to those chieftains who having submitted to Laṅkāpura (v. 280 ff., v. 239) had since deserted (v. 239).

³ Pūṅ on *duṣṭe-duggama*, the latter referring to the subject. The skr. *duṣṭa* is an epithet of Śiva.

⁴ See above v. 240 and note.

310 the place called Tirippāṭuru, saddled its numerous horses, came
 311 hither and halfway began to fight a terrible combat with the
 312 Laṅkāpura Deva and the other heroes who were present
 313 in the battle. Thereupon the heroes dispersed the great
 314 army even as the beams of the sun spreading forth (disperse)
 315 the mass of the darkness. Thus did Laṅkāpura whose bravery
 316 was as the fire of the last day, capture in a moment
 317 Tirippāṭuru and took up his abode there. The officer by name
 318 Jagadvijaya, versed in good counsel, shattered the great army
 319 of Daniḷas dwelling in Punnattākoṭṭa, capable of starting a
 320 battle on the battlefield, brought the fortress into his power
 321 and halted there.

322 King Kuḷasekhara in his exceeding fury took Tuvārādhi-
 323 pativeḷāra, as well as Topḍamānara, Viraṇṇaṇṇaṇṇa and
 324 Niṇṇaṇṇaṇṇa, made his many soldiers ready for battle and betook
 325 himself, his loins girt for battle, to Rājina. The great general
 326 of terrible courage charged his terrible army to give battle
 327 to Laṅkāpura. The hero Laṅkāpura thereupon, expert in
 328 affairs, explained the affair to Jagadvijaya: "In order together
 329 with me to put to flight the Monarch Kuḷasekhara, thou must
 330 so as to attack from the one side, make thy troops ready for
 331 battle and come hither with all haste." After he had sent
 332 him a message of such purport and had at the same time
 333 equipped his own strong army, he set forth from there and
 334 fought a great battle with the Daniḷas. They were van-
 335 quished, withdrew at once to Rājina, closed the tower-gates
 336 with the small and the great gates and the Daniḷas
 337 now with their Monarch kept to the centre of the town.
 338 Thereupon the heroes at the head, the general Gokanṇa, the
 339 Kesadhātu named Loka and the Laṅkāpura Deva, who had
 340 arrived at the west gate, began to tear down the walls and
 341 to blow up the tower-gates. The Laṅkāpura Deva and the
 342 general Gokanṇa after shattering walls and tower-gates, pene-

¹ Niṇṇaṇṇa is mentioned again in the sequel (77. 69). As regards the other names see note to 76. 137.

trated within. But the haughty Kesadhatu, the mighty Loka 327
 by name, thought: by the way the others went I go not;
 he slew numbers of heroic warriors, brought down many steeds, 328
 blew up the southern gate and at once penetrated within.
 Thereupon Kulasekhara fled, his heart overwhelmed with fear, 329
 no longer even master of the clothes he wore, by the postern
 of the eastern tower-gate¹ which he had had opened, and 330
 by a lucky chance he escaped out of the hands of his foes.
 These all cut down numbers of soldiers of the Damilas, took 331
 away many horses and much treasure of many a kind, and 332
 shaking their garments, dancing around, clapping their hands
 and rejoicing, they celebrated the festival of victory. There- 333
 upon Lakṣmīpura and the general Jagadvijaya entered Rājīnā
 along with the other heroes.

Thus thrives ever more and more the state of those who 334
 have done good, who are endowed with a keen understanding,
 who understand statecraft and moral discipline, whose riches
 are their terrible majesty, whose manliness fails not, even as
 the moon in the light half of the month (waxes) from day
 to day.

Here ends the seventy-sixth chapter, called «Account of
 the Capture of the Town of Rājīnā», in the Mahāvamsa,
 compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The loc. *gopure* stands for the gen. *gopurassa*; *pācāśāśāśā gopure*
 means the same as *pācāśāśāśā gopurāśāśāśā*.

CHAPTER LXXVII

THE CONQUEST OF THE PANDU KINGDOM

1 The Monarch Kulasekhara who had fled thence through fear
 found again a firm footing in 'Toḍḍamāna's' mountain fortress.
 2 The forces of Viramukkara and other (soldiers) from Kakkola,
 3 the forces of Madhuraddhamakkāra¹ came to Rājīnā, related
 the whole story of King Kulasekhara and persuaded Laṅkā-
 4 pura to betake himself at once to Madhurā. Thereupon Laṅkā-
 pura and the general Jāgadvijaya (equipped with great luck,
 5 set forth for the town of Madhurā, gave over to the Prince
 Virapaṇḍu the dwelling of his royal father, which was his
 6 birthplace, and took up their abode in the town. They had
 summoned to them the three Virapperayaras: him called
 Sirivallabha, Rājā Nārāyaṇa, and him called Parakkamaapaṇḍu,
 7 (further) the officer Maṇḍaya-rāyara and Seṅkuṇḍi-rāyara, the
 8 other Virapperayara Keraśasamuttara² and bestowed on them
 ornaments and the like. To Coḷagaṅgara who had submitted,
 9 they made over the supreme direction of the district Paritti-
 kkuṇḍi³ formerly administered by him, and restored him to his
 10 former position. Kaḷavaṇḍiya-nāḍālvāra⁴ came indeed with the
 intention of submitting⁵, but when he had entered Madhurā,

¹ Cf. above 76. 137.

² Evidently local troops which had voluntarily submitted to the victor.

³ Virapperayara is clearly a title here. Cf. 76. 138 and 316. Of the other names Maṇḍaya is mentioned 76. 141, 77. 35, Seṅkuṇḍi 76. 138 (q. v.) and Keraśasamuttara 76. 141.

⁴ Coḷagaṅgara is mentioned 76. 124. The place name Parittikkunḍi is met with in Parittikkunḍiyāra 75. 137 and 221.

⁵ See 76. 141.

⁶ P. case *hessay* as or. recta. Cf. a similar phrase 75. 85.

he thought: I fear to let myself be seen, and returned without 11
 presenting himself, to his place. Thereupon Laṅkāpura march-
 ed into his district to take it. The unrivalled one, equipped 12
 with great power and courage, offered him battle, defeated
 him and captured Aḷagūnagiri. Kaḷavaḍḍiya-nāḷālvāra and 13
 another named Śuraḍeva submitted and besought the general
 for (the restoration of) his district; at his request Laṅkāpura 14
 handed over to him the district. Then the far-famed betook
 himself to the district of Kurumba-rāyara and after he had 15
 also subdued Kurumba-rāyara and likewise brought Kaṅḡayara
 in Niyama into his power, the hero betook himself later to 16
 the place called Tiripputtūru in order to make subject to
 himself also Niḡaḷadha-rāyara¹.

Niḡaḷadha-rāyara gathered together his own army, took 17
 with him also the Coja officers, Akalaṅka-nāḷālvāra and
 Kaṅcamba-rāyara, Malayappa-rāyara and Kiccūratṭarayara² as 18
 well as their numerous troops and the many horses in their 19
 possession, marched thence and began a combat hard to
 withstand. But the army of the Siḡhalas transformed the 20
 hostile host together with steeds and infantry — stretching 21
 three gāvutas wide³ from Tiripputtūru to Ponnamarāvati, along
 the highway between the two places — into a single mass
 of flesh. After it had shattered these vast forces it came to 22
 Ponnamarāvati, burned down the three-storeyed palace built
 there, and after setting fire to many other houses and well- 23
 filled granaries of rice, the hero (Laṅkāpura) in order to rob
 the inhabitants of their fear, had the drums beaten, took the 24
 people who were settled in the district under his own dominion
 and returned to Madhurā⁴.

¹ Of the names mentioned in vv. 19—25 those of Śuraḍeva and Kurumba do not otherwise occur. For Kaḷavaḍḍiya see 70. 141, for Kaṅḡayara see 70. 140, for Niḡaḷadha 76. 138.

² Akalaṅka, Malayappa and Kiccūratṭarayara are mentioned again later (77. 55 ff.)

³ The front extended thus over a distance of something like six miles (cf. 73. 164 and note).

⁴ The subject changes in this sentence. In the principal sentence

25 Now the Monarch (Parakkamabāhu) whose commands stand
firm, sent the order to hold the festival of the coronation for
26 Prince Virapapāṇa. When Laṅkāpura heard of this command
of the King's which could not be gainsaid, he set about mak-
27 ing the preparations for the consecration. He then charged the
28 Lambakappaś Māḷava-cakkavattin, Māḷava-rāyara and Athala-
yēru-nāḷāḷvāra to carry out the duties of the Lambakappaś¹.
had then as one whose commands are scarcely to be evaded,
29 the drums beaten in the kingdom and gathered together all
the officers in the Paṇḍu realm at the head of their own
30 troops and adorned with all their ornaments. Then in a temple
of the deities to the north of the palace of former kings,
31 adorned with the drums of victory captured aforetime, the
highly-famed one carried out the consecration of the Prince
and made him in accord with tradition, walk round the town,
his right side turned towards it.

32 Meanwhile the Ruler Kulasekhara who had fled to the
mountain fortress of Topḍamāna, had brought Topḍamāna
33 round to his side. He took his army as well as his own
troops, and together with Aṇḇjivisaṃmiddha, a man of terrible
34 courage, he set forth from that hill fortress and reached the
important stronghold called Maṅḡḷama into which he entered.
35 With Maṇḇaya-rāyara and Sēṅkuḇḍiya-rāyara who had sub-
36 mitted to the Siḥalas² he fought a great battle; he captured
their fortress and took up a position there. When Laṅkāpura
heard of the matter and how it had happened, he thought:
37 "Only when I shall have driven the hostile Ruler from this

(v. 24) *vira* is the subject and *āpāṇa* the finite verb. The gerunds occurring in vv. 21-23 have as subject *śeṇā Siḥalādāṭṭa*. They are thus again treated as absolute locatives. Cūḷava. ed. I. Introd., p. XVI.

¹ We learn two things from this passage: that a Lambakappa clan existed also in Southern India and that the members of this clan performed particular functions at the festival of the king's consecration. For the three names see notes to 76. 132 and 137.

² Thus according to 77. 7. It must be assumed that the Topḍamāna named in v. 32 who figures in 76. 315 as one of Kulasekhara's followers, had submitted to the Siḥalas, but under Kulasekhara's influence had again deserted them.

place and cleansed this district so rich in mountain and forest
 strongholds shall I return." He left the town of Madhurā, 38
 put up a stronghold near Maṅgalamkoṭṭā¹ and took up his
 position there. With mighty forces they fought a great battle 39
 with the three brothers of the wife of Toṇḍamāna: Kallakka- 40
 veḷāra, Muṇḍayadha-rāyara and Kāliṅga-rāyara², captured the 41
 fortress, slew many Damiḷas and after later on taking Sivali-
 patturu also the highly-famed ones³ took up a position there. 42
 Thereupon the hostile Monarch Kulasekhara gathered together
 the troops standing in Tiripaveḷi⁴, sent also to the two brothers 43
 of his mother a message and took the troops in Tenkoṅgu
 and Vajakoṅgu⁵ and after the great general had brought 44
 this whole army together, he gave the order to halt at the
 fortress called Sāntaneri. Now Laṅkāpura and the general 45
 Jagadvijaya immediately set forth on the way to take this strong-
 hold. To bar the way to the enemy Kulasekhara versed in the 46
 right-expedients, had the great tank pierced. When the hero 47
 Laṅkāpura heard tidings of this he said: "When one goes forth
 to fight a decisive battle with the foe the sight of a pierced 48
 tank on the way is not good." So the mighty one immediately
 had it dammed up again. Thereupon he advanced with great 49
 forces and courage against yonder strong fortress, fought a
 bitter fight, broke quickly into it, slew him called Kallakka- 50
 veḷāra and many other Damiḷas and captured numbers of horses
 of the Damiḷas. Then they pressed forward into the two vil- 51
 lages belonging to Toṇḍamāna, called Tirimalakke and Kattala,
 burned down the village called Tirimalakke so that nought 52

¹ Of course the same as the fortress Maṅgalama mentioned in v. 34, and which also occurs in 76.297.

² For the two last names cf. 76.146 and 76.174 ff. The first occurs again 77.56.

³ Instead of the sing. (*Laṅkāpura* v. 86) the new sentence (from v. 39 a b) has the plur. What is meant are Laṅkāpura and his generals. Sivalipatturu is the present Srivillipattur (cf. also W.) in the Tirunelveli District not far from the borders of Travancore.

⁴ See 76.143 and 298 and notes.

⁵ See 76.288.

but its name remained, because it was there that the Paṇḍu
 53 king Parakkama had been murdered¹. Then he set forth from
 there and after reaching the village Coḷakulantaka the highly-
 54 famed one tarried there for some time². King Kulasekhara
 now took the two brothers of his mother, also the troops of
 55 the twain and their many horses, further Akalaṅka-nāḍḍivāra,
 56 and Pallava-nāyara, Malayappa-nāyara, Kaṇḍamba-nāyara and
 Kiccāraitarayara who was endowed with great power and
 courage, and with all these Coḷa officers and their numerous
 57 army as also with Kaḷavṇḍiṇya-nāḍḍivāra and his troops and
 58 with Puṅkopa-nāḍḍivāra³ at the head of his army, the mighty
 one came himself to the place called Palāṅkoṭṭa and ordered
 59 his great army to Paṇḍunāḍḍikoṭṭina and the place called
 Uriyeri⁴, this time firmly determined on the vanquishing of
 60 the foe. Thereupon Lankāpura and the general Jagadvijaya
 61 went forth from the village of Coḷakulantaka to battle. They
 so planned it that the hostile army which had occupied the two
 great fortresses⁵, were disinclined for giving battle in the open
 62 field, had then a great entrenchment made at the village of
 Uriyeri above the tank and took up a position there during
 63 the night. But the hostile army which had occupied the two
 fortresses, dispersed and went thither where the Ruler Ku-

¹ W.'s happy suggestion of *ettha hatu* is certainly correct. I may remark that all the MSS. have *ettha gato*; *etthagato* as read by the Cal. Ed. occurs nowhere.

² There is a change again in number, this time from the plur. (*pa-cipphā*) in v. 51 c to the sing. (*nissāḍḍha*) in 53 c.

³ For Akalaṅka see 57. 17, for Malayappa 77. 18, for Kaḷavṇḍiṇya 76. 141 and Puṅkopa 76. 139. All these names occur again later. The same with Pallava and Kaṇḍamba who have so far not been mentioned.

⁴ The locatives *Paṇḍunāḍḍikoṭṭina* and *Uriyerichayē thāne* are directly dependent on *niyāpeti*. The skr. *niyāpāṭi* is also used with the locative of that to which anyone is determined or commanded. In 73. 297 we have the same as in this passage *Kṛṣṇaṇḍine niyāpetā*. Cf. further 77. 62. It is therefore quite unnecessary to change *phāne* into *phāṇa* as is done by the Cal. Ed. — Palāṅkoṭṭa (see also W.) is the present Palnukottai in the Tinnevely District.

⁵ That is Paṇḍunāḍḍikoṭṭina and Uriyeri.

Issekkhara was standing. Now Laṅkāpura and the general 64
 Jagadvijaya well discriminating between favorable and un-
 favorable places, marched to Palaṅkoṭṭa. The heroes fought 65
 a terrible battle with the hostile sovereign, slew many warriors
 captured many steeds, put the Monarch Kulasekhara at once 66
 to flight and took Palaṅkoṭṭa. Then they set forth from there,
 came into the domain of him called Tavarāthipativēḷṭra and 67
 received the horses and elephants supplied by him¹. But when 68
 they heard: the Monarch Kulasekhara has come to Madhurā²,
 they in order to drive him from this place, hereupon marched 69
 to Adharattēṭṭi, subdued there Nigaya-rāyara and showed him
 many marks of favour. Now when they again set forth from 70
 this place the Ruler Kulasekhara smitten with fear, betook
 himself to the Cōla country. Hereupon Laṅkāpura charged 71
 the dignitary by name Jagadvijaya, to take up a position at
 the place called Pāṭṭapallūra. He himself went at the head 72
 of his troops to Tirikkāṁpēra. But King Kulasekhara had
 meanwhile by various entreaties won over the Cōla King to 73
 his side and at the command of this king he took the army
 and the many horses of him called Pallava-rāyara, also 74
 him called Iṇḍapada together with Toḇḇamāna, the rāyara
 called Rājaraṅgaḷappa, further Kaṅḡakeṇḍakaḷappa-rāyara, as 75
 well as the Nakāraṇiḷḷapa-rāyara, the hero Niccavinodayarāya-
 rāyara, Narasiḷḷapadma and Sekirapadma-rāyara, Rājōḇḇa- 77
 brahmamahārāja and Mādhuva-rāyara . . . as also Cōḷakēṇḇa,
 Janūbrāhmamahārāja and Cōḷatirikka-rāyara — these troop 78
 leaders in Uccuṅkuṭṭu he took with him, with these he took also 79
 Niyārāya and Kappiṇṇimpekula, further Mādhuva-rāyara and
 Kaṇḡaveḷḷi, further Koṅḡamaṅḡala-nāḍḷvāra, Akulaṅka-nāḍḷ- 80
 vāra and Kaṇḡamba-rāyara, as also Kīḷamaṅḡala-nāḍḷvāra,
 Viśāḷamutta-rāyara³ and their many horses and sent them to 81

¹ The context shows that Tavarāthipativēḷṭra (for whom see 76. 138, 315) had submitted voluntarily.

² The fact that Kulasekhara can dare to attack Madhurā which was formerly (see v. 38) in Laṅkāpura's hands, shows that so far he had suffered no overwhelming defeat. He even succeeds in enlisting the Cōla in his cause.

³ Of the numerous names mentioned here six occur earlier: Pallava

82 Toṇḍi and Pāsa¹. When Laṅkāpura heard of the matter he
 was minded to so destroy them that only their name should
 remain. The hero ordered the general Jagadvijaya by name
 to Madhurā, he himself then set forth from Tirikkānappera
 83 and marched to the town of Kileṇilaya situated on the borders
 of Madhurā. Now the mighty Coja army opened the great
 84 combat. For a distance of four gāvutas² he filled the road
 with corpses, he also slew many soldiers who had flung them-
 85 selves into the sea and dyed the water of the ocean ruddy
 with the blood of the foe³. He took (as booty) many horses
 86 and captured many Damiḷas alive — Rājindabrahmanabārāja and
 Nandipadmarā⁴, Narasīhapadmara and Coḷakonūra — and again
 87 with great forces, burned to the ground Vaḍamaṇnekkunḍi,
 88 Maṇnekkunḍi and Maṇcakkunḍi. Then having laid waste by
 fire a strip of the Coja country seven gāvutas in extent⁵ and
 89 thus quelled the Cojas, he returned thence, and when he came
 to the village called Velaiḱkunḍi under the dominion of
 Nigaladhā-rāyara⁶, he sent to him the message to appear
 90 before him. But as Nigaladhā-rāyara was at that time under
 the sovereignty of King Kulasekhara he took the Monarch
 91 Kulasekhara, as well as Silāmeghara, and Akalaṅka-*maḱḱavāra*
 and Kaṇḱamba-rāyara, Malayappa-rāyara and Viśālamuttā-

77.55, Toṇḍamūna 76.137, Niccuvinedavāḱḱava 76.144, Coḷakonūra 76.145, Akalaṅka 77.17, Kaṇḱamba 77.55. Cf. the accompanying notes. The name Mādha-rāyara is twice mentioned. Three occur later: Narasīhapadmara 77.86, Rājindabrahma 77.86, and Viśālamuttā 77.91. Cf. with Kaṇḱakonḱakalappa, Kaṇḱakonḱapperaṇṇa 76.180 note; with Kileṇnigala-māḱḱavāra, the name of the district Kileṇnigala in 76.209; and with Kaṇḱaveṭṭi the name of Narasīha's capital Kaṇḱaveṭṭi in 47.7.

¹ P. *Toṇḍipāṇṇa*. Cf. note in 76.236.

² About 8 miles.

³ The description is extraordinary. From what has gone before the battle must have taken place in the neighbourhood of Madhurā, therefore not near the sea.

⁴ Nandipadmarā is not mentioned in the list given in v. 13 ff.

⁵ About 14 miles.

⁶ For Nigaladhā cf. 76.138, 77.10 f.

rāyara, Kaṭavapḍi-nūḷālvāra and the troops of Tiriṇaveḷi, and 92
 Puṅkūṇḍa-nūḷālvāra, and with mighty forces he came to
 Pennamarāvati¹ to fight a decisive battle. When Laṅkāpura 93
 received tidings of these events he set forth with great forces
 from Velankūṇḍi to vanquish the hostile ruler. The hostile 94
 army which advancing from five sides², began the battle he
 shattered in a moment with fearsome courage, slew Dhanilas 95
 thousands in number, took (as booty) many horses and put the
 Ruler Kuṭasekhara to flight. Nigaladha-rāyara thereupon sent 96
 in his terror the message: "Thou shalt have the whole of
 my treasures and my many horses, and shalt pardon my of- 97
 fence, but thou must by no means prepare my destruction³."
 When Laṅkāpura heard that he sent a return message: "Thy 98
 treasures and thy horses are of no use to me, fear not and 99
 come in person and present thyself". When he heard that,
 he came to seek out Laṅkāpura. When the latter saw him 100
 he showed him favour, assigned him the province and gave
 him abundant money with which to rebuild his palace which
 had been burned down. Then the far-famed one started forth, 101
 came to Niyama and freed the whole province from the briers
 (of the enemy). He introduced into the country everywhere 102
 for trade kaṭipayams which were stamped with the name of
 the Ruler Parakkama. To Prince Vīrapaṇḍa he made over 103

¹ According to 77. 20 ff., Laṅkāpura had already fought with Nigaladha for Pennamarāvati. In the list enumerated in v. 73 ff. the following of Nigaladha's allies are not mentioned: Siṅḡapūghara (cf. note to 76. 99), Maṇayappa (77. 18, 50), Kaṭavapḍi (76. 141) and Puṅkūṇḍa (76. 119). For Tiriṇaveḷi see 76. 143. — Vv. 81—83 form in the original one sentence. The subject however, changes. The subject belonging to all the gerunds in 81—83 (up to *paṇḍitāra*) is *Laṅkāpura*, from v. 80 onwards it is *va* (Nigaladha-rāyara). We must therefore again assume that the preceding gerunds are treated as locative absolutes (Colura, ed. I. Intro., p. XVI) S. and B. try to overcome the difficulty by emendation, they change *paṇḍitāra* (v. 81 c) into *paṇḍitāra*.

² W. refers *agayama* to the subject (*Laṅkāpura*) *Māmarikkama* but it is really subordinate to *parattita* in *parattitāvaṇḍāḥkayamaṇḍitāra*.

³ The text is corrupt. I have tried to help matters by a conjectural rendering (*vinḍayama*) which seems to me not quite so far-fetched as the emendations of the Col. Ed.

the government and sent with speed to Sthala the many horses, men and elephants captured from the Cola country and from the Payḍu land¹.

104 Now King Parakkambāhu that lion among royal princes,
founded in memory of the conquest of the Payḍu country the
105 splendid village Paṇḍurijaya by name, which prospered through
all time. But to the Brahmans he whose joy was in giving,
gave an alms.

106 Parakkambāhu, the first in the race of rulers of the earth,
whose mind was endowed with discrimination between what
was statesmanlike and what was unstatesmanlike, who was
an abode of every virtue, gifted with the gracious beauty of
the god of love ruled a long time alone over the ocean-
bounded earth.

Here ends the seventy-seventh chapter, called "The Conquest of the Payḍu Kingdom", in the *Mahāvamsa*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The narrative ends abruptly. One is faced by a series of questions which remain unanswered. What becomes of Kulasekham? What of the great coalition of South Indian princes Cola and Payḍas described in v. 72 of whom at the most only a few individuals were conquered? Does Viṅpaṇḍu succeed in maintaining his power? Since Kulasekhara did not fall in battle he will scarcely have left his rival in peace. What is Lañkāpurn's after fate? It is curious that his return to Ceylon is never mentioned and that there is no word of the distinctions bestowed on him by Parakkambāhu. It is pretty clear that the chronicler has concealed the failure which overtook the expedition after its initial success. The ideal figure of Parakkama which he has in mind, must not be dimmed by association with any misfortune. South Indian inscriptions relate that Lañkāpurn was defeated and that his head with those of his officers was nailed to the gates of Madhurā. In the 4th year of Kulottuṅga Cola III (1181-2) Viṅpaṇḍu was driven out and the Sinhalese troops finally defeated. H. W. Conze, *op. cit.*, p. 62. See also note to 76. 80.

CHAPTER LXXVII

THE BUILDING OF VIHĀRAS

Now after the sovereign of Laṅkā, Purakkamabhāṣa who 1
had received consecration as king, who was experienced in 2
statecraft, had thus made peaceful the land of Laṅkā, he 3
cherished, full of zeal, the wish to further the advancement
of the Order of the Master for which he had striven when
attaining the royal dignity, since it was a most excellent
mérit. Since he perceived that the few loyal bhikkhus — apart 3
from the maintenance of wives and children and so forth by
the community in the villages belonging to the community, in 4
which they saw their sole duty, beyond which there was
none — did not wish to have ceremonies in common, nor even to
see one another¹, he desired even before the purification of 5

¹ The sentence is difficult. I think the meaning is this that the
attitude of the few loyal bhikkhus (*susīla loci bhikkhava*) who would
not bear of intercourse and of common action with the others, shows
the evil conditions existing in the Saṅgha. The *assasā bhikkhava* were
in the majority, the *susīla* were isolated. As regards the construction
of the sentence, I believe that *puttadārāḍḍipasaṃaya* is governed by
thapetrā (4a) and *ekakamavāṇiṇa dāsaṃaya pi* by *śāśvatāḥkante*. By
saṃghagāma are meant the villages in which the men were active
as *śramika*. Wives and children of the *ārāmiṇā* were supported by the
monastery and this was the only duty from which the *susīla bhikkhava*
did not absolve themselves and the one which brought them into con-
tact with the others. W's version according to which the priests had
only thought of the feeding of their (former) wives and children I
consider impossible. The text reads: *saṃghassa puttadārāḍḍipasaṃaya*.
But one cannot say that the Saṅgha has children and wives. Only the
individual bhikkhu has these. Thus the gen. *saṃghassa* does not belong
to *puttadārāḍḍi* but to *pasaṃaya*. Note too the *add*. This refers to sick

the Order¹, for the purpose of furthering the Order of the Victor, to achieve unity² among the bhikkhus of the three fraternities. Even as the Ruler of men Dhammāsoka (with) Moggaliputtatissa, so he entrusted the Grand therā Mahākassapa by name, with the task — an experienced man who knew the Tipiṭaka and was exceedingly well versed in the Vinaya, a light of the race of theras, conciliatory, long since consecrated. He made the therā Nāyapāla in Anurādhapura together with his pupils and the bhikkhus in the province of Sapara³ come to Pulatthinagara, further together with the therā Moggallāna, the therā Nāgindapalliya and all the other bhikkhus in the province of the Yuvārāja⁴, as well as those belonging to the three fraternities in Rohaya after he had placed at their head the distinguished therā Nanda who dwell

people and those incapable of work who must of course also be looked after in the *sanghagāma* of the monastery.

¹ P. *śāśa* is used as a proposition and governs the following accusative.

² An account of the church reforms of Parakkamabāhu is found already in 13. 12-22. That this should be followed by a second detailed account is probably due to the fact that the compiler of the *Cūḷavamsa* had two different sources both of which he employed for his narrative. In a similar way the building activities of the king are dealt with twice over (in 71. 23 ff. and 72. 28 ff.). As regards the reform of the Order I have already referred in the note to 73. 22 to the Gal-vihāra inscription of Parakkama and to certain similarities in form between it and the account of the *Cūḷava*. A further similarity occurs in the second narrative (72. 21 ff.). The name of the Grand therā Mahākassapa is mentioned as spokesman in the negotiations in which capacity he is also mentioned in the inscription. Then too in both sources a parallel is drawn between King Dhammāsoka and the head of the Third Council, Moggallāna (Māva, 5, 228 ff.) on the one hand, and Parakkamabāhu and Mahākassapa on the other. According to the inscription, Mahākassapa was an inmate of the Uḍumbaragiri-vihāra, that is Dinubulāgala, now Gunner's Quoin Hill on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga about 5 miles SSE. of Malagastota near Palanantota. Cf. WICKRAMASEKERA, *EE. II*, 184 ff.; the same, *Catal. of Sinhalese Mus. in the Brit. Museum*, p. XV.

³ Apparently the present province of Sabaragamuwa.

⁴ That is in Dakkhinapadesa. The bhikkhus mentioned in vv. 8-10 are not named in the inscription.

in the Sānastara monastery. Hereupon the Ruler sent a summons 11
to the bhikkhus dwelling in the Mahāvihāra for (bringing
about) the mutual concord.

Since the shamelessness had passed all bounds and the 12
schism had lasted a long time, many bhikkhus would hear
nothing of conciliation. Many began departing to foreign lands, 13
others left the Order, some wished for a sitting in the secret
court of justice¹. Hereupon one approached the great (and) 14
exceedingly difficult task: conciliation seemed as difficult as
the hurling of the Sineru² mountain. But the Ruler, impartial, 15
firm in his resolves and just, encouraged the bhikkhus and
with great pains persuaded them to agree. He had the single 16
points in dispute as they arose settled by the bhikkhus among
whom Mahākassapa was the oldest. He was himself present 17
as protector of the court together with those lions among
teachers who knew the three Piṭakas, and while according to 18
precept he led those bhikkhus capable of being cured to puri-
fication, he established harmony among the bhikkhus of the
Mahāvihāra. But the undisciplined he excluded from the Order, 19
and that they might not by striving after gain do harm to
the Order, he assigned them lucrative positions. After he had 20
thus with great pains purified the Mahāvihāra, he set about
bringing the bhikkhus of the Abhayagiri — who since the 21
time of Abhaya³ had formed a separate group — as well as

¹ I have kept as much as possible to the reading of the MSS. and believe that *brahmacāryasamvāpāda* denotes a secret judicial process in contrast to the official *dhammasamvāsa* of the Order (see note to 30.57). For the meaning "hidden, concealed" for *brah* cf. *Mhva.* 75.153 where however, it is combined with a loc., as well as *brahmacārika*, 47.3, "leading a solitary, hidden life". The Col. Ed. reads *iccham eke sāmāgamaṃ pi na vinicchayamvāpāde* and W. translates accordingly: "and many wished not even to sit (with their brethren) in the hall of judgement".

² Cf. note to 64.43. One may compare *sineruḍḍhipānaya* with *sakkharākkhapaṇa* "the hurling of stones" as an accomplishment, *sippa*, *JuCa.* I. 418³⁰.

³ *Vaṭṭagāmaṇi Abhaya*. The story of the separation of the monks of the Abhayagiri-vihāra from those of the Mahāvihāra is related in *Mhva.* 33.95 ff.

the inmates of the Jetavana — who had separated themselves
 22 from the days of the Ruler of men Mahāsena¹, (they) who
 gave out as Buddha's word the *Vetulla-Piṭaka*² and the like
 which were no words of Buddha and who had turned away
 23 from religious duties — into concord with the inmates of the
 Mahāvihāra who were rich in all virtues, even as glass stones
 24 with jewels. But as they lacked inward virtue as moral
 discipline and the like, they came even through the influence
 of the Great community and of the King to no joyful ac-
 25 ceptance of the Buddha teaching. And while the just King
 together with people versed in the right method held the
 trial, he found not a single member of the Order that had
 26 kept himself unspoiled³. He caused many ascetics to be received
 as *sāmaṇeras*, the undisciplined he dismissed and gave them
 27 lucrative positions. While thus within a short time achieving
 purification and unity, he with great pains established again
 the community as it had been in Buddha's time.

28 Every year he brought the Great community to the river
 bank⁴, made them take up their abode in a garden there
 29 while he with his dignitaries paid them respect. Then after
 firmly anchoring ships in the stream he had a charming
 30 *maṇḍapa* of beautiful proportions erected on them. Then
 when he had given to the *bhikkhus* costly robes and all
 kinds of articles of use, the wise Prince made them hold the
 ceremony of admission into the Order⁵.

¹ See *Mhvs.* 37. 92 ff.

² For the heretical *Vetullavāda* to which the *Dharmapala* monks living in the Abhayagiri monastery adhered, see *Mhvs.* 36. 11. 110 ff. and 37. 1 ff.; *Nik. s.*, p. 12. A. M. Hocart, *Mem. ASL.* I, 1924, p. 16 ff.

³ *P. paṭatatto*, lit. "with the original self (being, character)". In *Vin.* I. 286¹² the word means "In the original condition, restored, cured"; In *JūCo.* I. 236²⁹ it has a similar meaning to that in our passage as attribute of *bhikkhu* along with *sthaṇṇa vipassanāya gatajanyatā*.

⁴ On the bank of the Mahaveliganga.

⁵ Even to-day the monks in Ceylon in order to be quite undisturbed, are fond of performing their rites in a pavilion built on piles in a sheet of water about a stone's throw from the bank.

Now for the bhikkhus increased in this manner to many 31
hundreds the King was desirous of building in goodly fashion
large viharas, suitable for dwelling in. He (therefore) founded 32
the great monastery by name Jetavana¹, making as it were
visible to the eye the beauty of the Jetavana (in Sāvattihī²).
For the theras dwelling there in the sacred district, firmly 33
persevering in discipline, he built eight costly pāsādas, three
storeys high. For the thera named Sāriputta who persevered 34
firmly in discipline, he erected a vast (and) glorious pāsāda
with rooms, terraces and chambers. Also nine incomparable, 35
three-storeyed image houses (he built) furnished with all
appurtenances³ and diversely adorned with images. For the 36
seventy-five parivenas (he built) as many long pāsādas with
charming figures (painted), two storeys high; (further) one 37
hundred and seventy-eight small pāsādas, thirty-four gate-towers
and two houses for books; huts, grottos, halls and many 38
sleeping-houses with ornaments of flowers and creepers and
with figures of gods, Brahmas and the like. Creating out of 39
brick and stucco an elixir for the eyes⁴ (he built) the Tivāṅka
house for the Tivāṅka image⁵, shimmering with rows of figures 40

¹ What is meant here is without doubt the group of monastic buildings within the city to the north of the citadel, on the so-called Quadrangle. Cf. above all H. C. F. Bua, *Rep. ASC*, 1903 (= LXV, 1908), p. 6 ff., as well as A. M. Hocutt, *Mem. ASC*, II, 1906, p. 4 ff.

² The monastery was like its namesake in Anurādhapura, called after the celebrated park in Sāvattihī which Anāthapiṇḍika presented to the Buddha and the Order. See *Okamoto, Buddha*, p. 166; H. Kern, *Manual of Indian Buddhism*, p. 28.

³ For *paripattas* as substantives in the meaning of 'equipment, articles of clothing or of general use', cf. *Mhs.* 29. 22. The alteration by the Col. Ed. into *sattatimatte* I cannot approve of. The numeral adj. is *sattas* in *maṇḍapapattisamante*—as is proved by all the MSS.—which Sand B likewise felt obliged to alter. The Col. Ed. treats the text too arbitrarily. I believe that *paripattas* here means all the ornaments and garments belonging to a Buddha image with which it is decked out on festive occasions. Cf. note to 38. 64 (towards the end) and to 38. 56.

⁴ The beauty of the building acted on the eyes like an elixir (*roga-gana*). In my edition I have joined the sentence to the preceding. But I think now that it belongs to the following one.

⁵ It is difficult to say what is meant by *tivāṅka* in *t-ghara* and

41 of lions, kinnaras¹, geese and the like, with many diversely
 perforated balustrades² and with railings. (Further he built) a
 beautiful round temple wholly of stone for the Tooth Relic³,
 adorned with glorious pillars, staircases and outer walls⁴ and
 42 so forth. (Further he built) three sermon halls, a cetiya⁵,
 43 eight long cloisters and a refectory of (great) length and
 breadth, eighty-five fire-houses covered with bricks and one
 hundred and seventy-eight privies.

ś-paṭṭi. Mr. PARANAVITANE, the epigraphist of the ASC, (letter of 25-4-28) assumes that the term means the same as *trībhaṅga*. This is the name given in Indian iconography to a statue with "three hands", that is in the posture in which Viṣṇu or the Nāgas are often represented. He refers to *Selaḥhinisandesa* 68, where there is a mention of Ti-vaṅka images in the Kelani-vihāra and believes that this passage in the *Miva* refers to these very statues in Kelaniya. It cannot be a Buddha image which is meant in this case. It seems to me certain that the *tirāṅkagāra* of our passage refers to a building in Palatthinagara and in the Jetavanavihāra. But cf. note to 85. 65. The most likely seems to be the Heṭṭi-dā-gā, an image-house on the Quadrangle with three Buddha figures (cf. HODGKIN, l. l., p. 5) or that building known as the Thāpārāma also situated there. The first seems however, to be a work of Nissanka-Malla (80. 19 and note), while the other belongs to the time before Parakkamaśāhu. The expression *tirāṅka* remains however in both cases inexplicable.

¹ Mythical beings represented with human bodies and heads of horses. I may remark that W. Jones v. 40 to the following as description of the *dātthadāntagāra*.

² P. *jāṭakavāṭa*, lit. net-enclosure.

³ Without doubt the Vajra-dā-gā situated on the Quadrangle opposite the Heṭṭi-dā-gā. HODGKIN, l. l., p. 21 ff. and Rep. ASC. 1904, p. 5 ff. HODGKIN, l. l., p. 4. It is a circular building consisting of two concentric terraces. On the upper terrace was a cetiya in which the relic was preserved. In an inscription on the outer stairs Nissanka Malla boasts that he has had the building made. It is however evidently a case of restoration. The outer staircase is indeed of later origin.

⁴ I take *śāl* "outer wall" to mean the railings leading round the terraces.

⁵ There is no śāṭya in the domain of the Jetavanam. One must assume therefore that the terraced tower Sat-mahal-pāsāda on the Quadrangle was built as a cetiya. It could not serve as a dwelling, for it is as massive as a dagoba with nothing but a tunnel-like circular passage in the basement.

After he had thus by cleansing the Order, cleansed the 44
inward impurity of the bhikkhus, in order to cleanse the
outward impurity, that one might be able to bathe in
great heat he had eight bath-houses of stone erected, named 45
Vatṭaṇṇāṇakotṭha, Gūhāṇṇāṇakotṭha, Padumaṇṇāṇakotṭha,
Bhaddaṇṇāṇakotṭha¹ and so forth, adorned with pillars, 46
staircases and railings. There also the Great king had many
walls built. Thus there were in Jetavana in all five hundred 47
and twenty buildings. With the distribution of abundant
articles of use, he made the community take up its abode there.

Further the Prince had built there the Ālāhana-pariveṇa² 48
which had all the distinguishing marks (belonging to such a
building), being not too far away and the like, and which
was universally acknowledged as beautiful. There he built for 49
the *thera* a splendid *pāsāda* with rooms and terraces, with a
choice of various apartments, embellished by turrets, three
storeys high. Further forty long *pāsādas* and as many privies, 50
eight small *pāsādas* and six gate-towers, thirty-four fire-houses 51
and two larger outer walls, the *Subbhaddā-cetiya* and the
*Rūpayāsi-cetiya*³; besides that a charming image house of five 52
storeys for which — as it was adorned with ornaments of
flowers and creepers and with figures of gods and Brahmas 53
and embellished with buildings, with turrets, grottoes, apartments

¹ The "round bathing-house", "cave-", "lotus-b.-h." and the "bathing-house of happiness". The temple on the Quadrangle popularly known as the *Thūpārāma* is not mentioned among the buildings of the Jetavana, probably because it already belonged to the time before Parakkamabāhu. *Udara*, I. I, p. 5.

² H. W. Conze is certainly right when he says that the description in the *Mhv.* proceeds from south to north. In chap. 73 the secular buildings in the citadel and its immediate neighbourhood are mentioned. In chap. 78 follow the monastic foundations joining it on the north. The *Ālāhana-pariveṇa* is therefore probably the group of buildings lying outside of the city which is now popularly but wrongly called the *Jetavanārāma*.

³ To the group of buildings which we assume formed the *Ālāhana-pariveṇa* there belonged in fact several *stūpas*. The largest of these is popularly known as the *Kiri-velera*. More to south lies the *Baṅkoṭ Dugoba*. This has, however, nothing to do with the *Ālāhana-pariveṇa*.

54 and halls¹ — the name of Laṅkātilaka was befitting². In this (temple) he had erected a standing image which was an elixir for the eyes³, which had the size of the living Buddha⁴, 55 which (likewise) was called Laṅkātilaka. (He) also (built) the twelve-storeyed Upasatha-house which bore the name of Baddhasimāpāsāda, which was furnished with numbers of 56 turrets, with buildings containing apartments and halls and with cells as dwelling-places⁵. To determine the boundary⁶

but is identical with the Hatanūvalī-etiya built or completed by Nissanka Malla (80. 26). The *Mhva.* expressly states that this King adorned it with a *suraggaṭṭhāpākā*, "with a golden pointed cone". The name *Hantot* means "golden point".

¹ The buildings form the immediate surroundings of the temple enriching its beauty.

² The name still sticks to the image house of the *Ālāhana* group. It is proved besides by an inscription on the building itself in which Parakkamabāhu is named as its builder. See H. C. P. Bell, Rep. ASC. 1910—11 (= X. 1914) p. 26 ff. Lately an exact description of the plan of the building has been given by A. M. Hocart, Mem. ASC. II, 1926, p. 11 ff. This plan agrees on the whole with that of the *Thūpārāma* (see above note to v. 45). As regards the name of the temple, *Laṅkā* means "a patch of coloured stuffs worn on the forehead as ornament... or as emblem of a sect" (EBR.); at the end of a compound it means "ornament of something", here therefore "ornament of the island of Laṅkā". — The construction of the sentence is as follows: *gaṇṭhi* in v. 53a stands for the loc. *gaṇṭhi* (*paṭivāgeṇa*) and to this then belong the locatives *ṭṭapini* and *sabbāṇi* in v. 52.

³ See above note to v. 49.

⁴ According to Bell's calculation (I. I., p. 50) the statue in the Laṅkātilaka temple when intact, measured 41 ft. in height (roughly 12.5 m.).

⁵ It is generally supposed that the remains of this building are to be found in the so-called "priory" situated in the domain of *Ālāhana-parivega* and remarkable for its quantity of small and narrow cells (*paṭivāgeṇa* "cage"!); Cf. H. C. P. Bell, Rep. ASC. 1911—12 (= III. 1915) p. 31 ff.

⁶ P. *baṇḍhāpetura* *saḍḍam* *stambam*. By *stamb* is meant the boundary line enclosing the monastic buildings within which alone ecclesiastical acts could legally be performed. The regulations for establishing such a *stamb* are to be found in the *Vinaya*, *Mahāvagga* 2, 6 ff. (= I. 106 ff.). Cf. with our passage *Mhva.* 15. 138—194, where it is related of King

there the King betook himself, adorned with all his ornaments, with the dignitaries and the ladies of the court, with a vast 57 army and with his train in the splendour of the King of the gods, to the great vihāra. At the invitation of the Great community of whom Mahākassapa was the oldest, the 58 Monarch — with the tune of songs of praise, with the sound of musical instruments and the noise of the shouts of greeting filling the four regions of the heavens, surrounded by many people bearing golden and other jars and baskets and many 59 banners and umbrellas — took with great solemnity the golden plough before which was harnessed the elephant of state and went forth ploughing the furrow¹. To remove² all scruples 61 regarding landmarks formerly drawn at this spot, the bhikkhu community took up a position at different points, after previously by a solemn act, bound to bring full success, removing in due order the ancient landmarks³ and made known to the King the landmarks along the furrow (which he ploughed). The King drew three partial boundaries and a main boundary. 63 The boundary stones set up in the eight regions of the heavens, east and so forth, were distant (measured) with a staff five cubits in length⁴ from the Laṅkātilaka temple forty- 64

Devānampiyatissa how he draws in person the sword of the Mahāvihāra, just as Parakkamabāhu that of the Ajābhaya-pariveśa. The two descriptions have a considerable resemblance to each other even in the wording (cf. 78. 56-7 with 15. 159; 78. 68 with App. B, v. 6 of my edition of the old Mahāvamsa). This may be due either to the stereotyped character of all these descriptions or to Dhammakitti's conscious borrowing from the older work.

¹ Cf. *mahācchayamhi cattante . . . kasanto bhūmipa apā* with *vakata cchayapajjaya kasanto bhūmipa apā* in Mhv. App. B. (to 15. 191), v. 7 e.d. This comparison shows that *mahācchayamhi* not *mahājjayamhi*, is the right reading.

² It was strictly forbidden to encroach on an existing boundary by a new *stūpa*. The old boundary had first to be removed by a *kassamāraṇa* (v. 62 d), that is a solemn act of the community. Cf. note to 37. 56.

³ I think that the two lines of v. 62 should be reversed.

⁴ P. *pañcavathāya paṭṭhipā*. For *vatthā* see note to 37. 172. The standard of measurement had thus a length of (3 × 18 in.) roughly

four, forty-nine, thirty-eight, thirty-six, thirty-five, fifty-seven,
 65 forty-five, sixty-six staves respectively. The boundary stone
 set up in the southern region of the heavens was distant from
 66 the Gopāla rock¹ fifty-eight staves², and the boundary stone
 that was set up in the northern region of the heavens, was
 67 fifty staves from the Vijjādhara cave³. These stones served
 for the marking of the main boundary. At the Baddhasīmā-
 pāsāda there was a fixed boundary of thirty-five staves in
 68 length and breadth⁴. At the sacred space called Khapjasīmā⁵
 the boundary was fixed at fifteen staves in length and six
 69 staves in breadth⁶, and at the pāsāda of the thera the fixed
 boundary was eighteen cubits in length and twenty cubits in
 70 breadth⁷. This vihāra the King dedicated to the bhikkhus
 along with the (necessary) articles of use.

In the same way the Ruler of men had the foundations

71 ft. (= 2.55 m.). The distances were thus successively 330, 367½, 286,
 270, 262½, 427½, 337½, 405 ft. Cf. for this A. M. Hocutt, Mem. ASG. II.
 1926, p. 6-7. By "main boundary" (*mahāstambhā*) is meant that enclosing
 the whole of the buildings belonging to the Ālāhāna-parivega. Inside
 this there were according to 67 v. to 69, three smaller sections which
 were marked off by "sub-boundaries" or "part-boundaries" (*dhagastambhā*).
 This distinction corresponds to the description of the fixing of the
 boundary of the Mahāvihāra Mhv. 10, 193 which speaks of *madhāni*
 "boundary marks" pure and simple and *ānāntarānimittāni* "inner
 boundary marks".

¹ This is probably the rock lying between the Baddhasīmā-
 pāsāda and the Runkol stūpa. According to the popular idea the chasm
 served as an alode for those bhikkhus who wished to give themselves
 up to meditation.

² Therefore 435 ft.

³ That is 575 ft. from what is now called the Gal-vehera. Cf. below
 note to v. 78.

⁴ Therefore 262½ ft. > 262½ ft.

⁵ Just as the main building took its name from the fixing of the
 main boundary (*mahāstambhā*) so one of the sub-sections from that of
 the sub- or part-boundary.

⁶ Therefore 112½ ft. > 45 ft.

⁷ Thus with the cubit (*hattha*) calculated at 18 in. only about 27 ft.
 > about 30 ft.

laid of the Pacchimārāma¹. Here in the pariveśas, which 71
were twenty-two in number (there were) just as many two-
storeyed long pāsādas and twenty fire-houses, forty-one 72
two-storeyed small pāsādas as well as thirty-five privies and 73
two cloisters; one sermon hall and ten gate-buildings. He
dedicated this vihāra along with the (necessary) articles of
use also to the bhikkhus.

Likewise the Ruler of men had the Uttarārāma² built. By 74
breaking down the rock not far from the Great thūpa he
bringing into play every kind of skilled work, had three 75
grottoes made by expert craftsmen, namely the Vijaññhara
grotto, the cave with the image in sitting posture and the
grotto with the recumbent image.

The Ruler also had the Mahāthūpa³ erected which bore 76
the name of the Dānīyathūpa because it had been built by

¹ The "West Monastery". Hecaux (Mem. ASC. II, p. 6) supposes this building to be the unexcavated ruins adjoining the remains of the Ālāhana-pariveśa on the west.

² There can be no doubt that what is meant is the so-called Galvhera. The front of a rock rising about 30 ft. above the surrounding region is polished. It stretches from SW. to NE. gradually sloping away on either side. The rock is about 16 chains (roughly 320 m.) distant from the Great Thūpa situated further north. Hewn out of the rock wall just about its centre, is a grotto, 26 ft. wide, 13 ft. 9 in. deep and 9 ft. 9 in. in height. The massive rock above the cave is still some 12 to 13 ft. thick. This rock ceiling is supported on two pillars on the front side of the cave. In the background of the cave there is an image of the Buddha sitting on a throne. This cave is the *Vijaññhara-guha* of our passage. To the left of it from the spectator's point of view, there is the figure of a sitting Buddha 15 ft. high, hewn out of the solid rock. To the right, also hewn out of the solid rock, there is a colossal figure of a recumbent Buddha about 49 ft. long, at its head the upright figure of Ananda grieving over his dying master. It is probable that both the statues of the sitting and of the recumbent Buddha were originally contained in a grotto or niche made of rock and brickwork. These were the *nissimnapajimādhana* and the *nipannapajimādhana*. These figures now stand uncovered in the open air. For the whole matter cf. H. C. P. Bann, Rep. ASC. 1907 (= V. 1911), p. 7 ff.

³ The "Great stūpa" evidently borrowed its name from the Mahā-thūpa (Ruvanvehi Dagoba) in Anurādhapura. In its present state it is

77 Damūḷas who had been brought hither after the conquest of
the Paṇḍu kingdom. It had a circumference of one thousand
three hundred cubits¹ and was the largest of all thūpas, like to
78 a second Kelāsa², and (built) without the miraculous power
of arhants and without the miraculous power of the gods,
alone by kingly miraculous power.

79 Also he had built in the suburb called Rājavesibhājāga
the Isipatana-vihāra³ which was a delight for the ascetics.
80 There (there was) one relic shrine and three three-storeyed image
houses with costly images and resplendent with brightly
81 coloured painting, further a two-storeyed pāsāda whose orna-
ments called forth delight, two long pāsādas and four gate-
82 buildings, eight small pāsādas, a sermon house, a cloister as
83 well as eight fire-houses and six privies, a fine bathing-house
wholly of stone, a boundary wall and a garden which belonged
to the bhikkhu community.

84 Furthermore in the suburb of Sīhapura the Ruler (gifted)
85 with a lion's courage had the Kusināra-vihāra erected. There
(there was) a relic shrine, three image houses of three storeys,
86 six long pāsādas, a sermon hall, a cloister, sixteen small
pāsādas, three gate-buildings, eleven privies and six fire-houses.

87 In the suburb called Vijita King Parakkambāhu also

a great heap of mounds overgrown with jungle, looking like a natural
hill over which run the paths of the wild elephant. The name of
Damūḷathūpa has been preserved to the present day in the name
Damaḷamahaseya which is however, erroneously given to another
building (see note to v. 85).

¹ P. *ratana* = *hatta* = roughly 18 inches according to FLERT, JRAS.
1912, p. 237. The circumference was therefore roughly 1950 ft. The
circumference of the Mahāthūpa in Anurādhapura is 925 ft. (PARKER,
Ancient Ceylon, p. 286, 306), that of the Abhayagiri 1115 ft.

² See note to 68. 41.

³ For the three suburbs and their monasteries cf. the earlier
account in 73, 154-5. It does not quite agree with ours. If we follow
it, the monasteries would be distributed thus: Rājavesibhājāga:
Vajjirama—Rājakulantaka (= Sīhapura): Isipatana—Vijita: Kusināra,
so far as importance can be attached to the order in which they are
given.

built the *Veḷuvana-vihāra*¹. Therein (there were) three three- 88
storeyed image houses with beautiful images, gleaming with
brightly coloured paintings, a *thūpa* and a cloister, a two- 89
storeyed *pāsāda*, four gate-buildings, four long *pāsādas* and
eight small *pāsādas*, one refectory and one sermon hall, further 90
seven fire-houses and twelve privies. *Gāyala* on *gāvuta*² (along 91
the road) the *Ituler* of men had *vihāras*³ erected, furnished
with charming image temples, with gate-buildings, outer
walls and sermon halls. For such *bhikkhus* as loved solitude 92
and had taken upon them the whole of the duties of the
ascetic, he had the *Kapila-vihāra* built as a good abode.
There (there was) a costly two-storeyed *pāsāda*, four long 93
cloisters and four long two-storeyed *pāsādas*, further a dwelling- 94
house of brick with diverse coloured painting and adorned
with turrets, built in honour of the sage *Kapila*, four small 95
pāsādas and three privies. Also these *vihāras* he dedicated
along with the (necessary) articles of use to the *bhikkhus*.

Now in order to rebuild the *vihāras* in *Anurādhapura* 96
formerly destroyed by the *Daniḷas* and which many kings
had not restored because it was so difficult, he sent an official 97
and completed the three *thūpas* aforetime destroyed by the
Daniḷas, the *Ratanavāluka-thūpa*⁴ one hundred and twenty

¹ Some distance to the north of the Great *thūpa* there lies an image temple similar in plan to the *Thūpārāma* and the *Laṅkāśīlaka*, famous for the fresco paintings on its inner walls. I was told there that the priests frequently called this temple the *Veḷuvana*. If one could trust this tradition we should have a clue to the position of the *Vijita* suburb. See however, A. M. Hocutt's objections, *Memo. ASC.* II. 1936, p. 6. He calls the structure "the Northern Temple". The popular name of the building is *Demaṇṇamahaseya* which however originally must have belonged to the *Mahāthūpa* or *Daniḷathūpa*. I am also inclined to regard the *Potṭal-vihāra* situated to the south of the city, as one of the suburb monasteries of *Pulasthinagara*. According to an inscription discovered there (*Wissenschaftsblatt*, EZ. II. 239 ff.) it was originally built by *Parakkambāhāri*, and it would be curious if such an important structure were not to be mentioned at all in the *Mūv.* Cf. on the subject H. C. P. Bell, *Rep. ASC.* 1896 = XX. 1910, p. 14 ff.

² Cf. for this 73. 161 f. and note.

³ Lit.: *Gāyuta-vihāressa*.

⁴ = *Mahāthūpa*. Cf. note to 76. 191. There are four *thūpas* mention-

98 cubits high, the Jetavana-thūpa one hundred and forty cubits
high, the Abhayagiri-thūpa one hundred and sixty cubits high,
99 as well as the great Maricavaṭṭi-thūpa¹ eighty cubits high. These
100 were (all) overgrown with great trees, bears and panthers
dwelt there and the ground of the jungle scarce offered a
101 foothold by reason of the heaps of bricks and earth. After
having the forest hewn down and (the thūpas) built in the
proper fashion, and faced with stucco, he also cleared the
courtyard of the eetiya.

102 The Lohapāsāda destroyed by the Coḷas — which measured
in every direction one hundred cubits², one hundred in length
and breadth³ and as much in height, which was adorned with
103 many hundreds of apartments, with fine turrets and with rows
of cells⁴ and which had several storeys, whose embellishment
104 called forth admiration — the Ruler of men restored by raising
105 again its thousand and six hundred pillars⁵. Sixty large
pāsādas (like) the one named Sopanupuppha, as also the
106 destroyed pāsāda called Mahindasena he had renewed, also
boundary walls and numbers of pariveṇas, and after erecting
a house for alms he celebrated a great festival for the offering
107 of alms. In the ancient pariveṇas, the Thūpācūṇa and others,
he saw to the restoration of whatever was decayed or had

ed in the text, not three, and it looks as if the Maricavaṭṭi had been added later.

¹ Taking the four stūpas in the order of their size left above note to v. 77f we have for the Abhayagiri 240 ft., for the Jetavana 210 ft., for the Mahāthūpa 180 ft. and for the Maricavaṭṭi 120 ft. According to SUMNER, *Architectural Remains of Anurādhapura*, p. 52, 47, 27 in his time the height of the three first thūpas lying in ruins was: 1) Abhayagiri (wrongly called Jetavana by Sum.) 215 ft., 2) Jetavana (by Sum. Abhayagiri) 232 ft., 3) Ruwanveli (= Mahāthūpa) 193 ft. The Maricavaṭṭi-thūpa measured then (p. 20) over 80 ft. It is now restored.

² = 150 ft. The surface area of the Lohapāsāda is in reality rather more than 231 × 232 ft., as is proved by the pillars still standing in the basement, P. M. HENSLER, *The Buried Cities of Ceylon*, p. 29.

³ So I understand *hetthasattāware* in contrast to *nevaṇa tatthakam*.

⁴ P. *śikṣapāṭṭana* "lion's cage". The cells of the Bodhisattva-pāsāda are also called *paṭṭāra* in v. 56.

⁵ That is in fact the number of the foundation pillars still standing.

fallen in. On the Cetiyagiri¹ he had sixty-four thūpas rebuilt 108
and had restored on the old buildings whatever was decayed
or had fallen in.

What sensible man when he has thus realised that the 109
pure-minded, even if they live in the greatest happiness, find
their supremest bliss in meritorious works — would grow
weary in the works of virtue which procure every happiness
in the world?

Here ends the seventy-eighth chapter, called 'The Building
of Vihāras', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy
and emotion of the pious.

¹ The Mihintale mountain. See note to 38. 76.



Chapter LXXIX

THE LAYING OUT OF GARDENS AND THE LIKE

1 As the King wished to make all articles (of food) needed
 by the townspeople easily attainable, he laid out gardens at
 2 different places. He who was the delight of his subjects, laid
 out the garden called Nandana which was adorned with
 3 hundreds of trees bearing fruit and blossom. The King planted
 coco palms, mango and bread-fruit trees, areka and Palmyra
 4 palms and other trees, a hundred thousand of each kind and
 laid out in this way with great pains a large garden destined
 for the community, which because the name was appropriate,
 5 was known generally as the Lakkhuyyāna. For the bathing
 of the bhikkhus in the hot season he had two charming ponds
 6 made there beneath hollow rocks. The Monarch also laid out
 the Dipayyāna¹ resplendent in beauty which was to be glorified
 7 by his own continual presence during the day; further the
 Mahāmeghavantyyāna, the Cittaletāraṇa, the garden called
 8 Missoka and that called Rājānārāyaṇa; the garden called Laṅkā-
 tilaka and the garden called Tīlokanandana, that called Vā-
 9 narākara and that called Nayanussava; the garden Manohara
 by name and the Nimmitapāra, the Jaṅghābhāra and the
 10 Paṇṇavaddhana by name; the garden of the name of Saṃ-
 sārāphala and that called Phūrusaka, that called Sālipota and
 11 that called Somamūtha; the Thānakoṭṭaka and the Uttarakuru
 by name, that called Bhurukaccha and that called Pulacceri;
 12 the gardens called Kijākara, Paṇḍarāvana and Rāmissara, as
 well as the Sūmisuptesuyyāna, the Cintāmasuyyāna and the
 Pacaruyyāna.

¹ See above 73. 96 ff. 113 ff.

In Rājaraṭṭha the King had ninety-nine new thūpas built 13
in many villages and market towns. On seventy-three relic 14
shrines the Ruler¹ had what was decayed or fallen in
repaired and the coating renewed. He restored six thousand 15
one hundred decayed image houses and built three hundred
new image houses. He had four hundred and seventy-six 16
divers kinds of images made and ninety-one Bodhi Trees planted.
For the community hailing from the four regions of the 17
heavens he had built as an abode for them when coming and
going two hundred and thirty dwellings. He erected fifty-six 18
sermon halls, nine cloisters, as well as one hundred and forty-
four gate-buildings; one hundred and ninety-two chapels with 19
altars for flowers, sixty-seven outer walls and thirteen temples
for the gods². For the bhikkhus coming from foreign lands 20
he had twelve parks (laid out) and two hundred and thirty
rest-houses³ built. Further, the Ruler saw to the restoration 21
of twenty-nine sermon halls, thirty-one grottoes and five parks; 22
likewise of fifty-one rest-houses and of seventy-nine decayed
temples to the gods.

To put away the sufferings of famine from living creatures 23
that most excellent of men had many tanks and canals made
in divers places. By damming up the Kāsagaṅgā by a great 24
barrier between the hills⁴ and bringing its mighty flood of
waters hither by means of a vast canal called the Akāsagaṅgā⁵, 25
the Ruler created that king of reservoirs continually filled
with water and known by the name of Parakkamasamudda.⁶ 26

¹ P. *devataya*, thus sanctuaries for Hindu deities. Numerous temples to Viṣṇu and Śiva were discovered in Polonnaruwa.

² P. *agantukavāsa* "house (or hut) for strangers".

³ So I understand *vaṭṭatū gīratana*. W's translation "stone wall" I consider inadmissible, since "gīti" is always "mountain" never "stone".

⁴ Skr. *Ākāśagaṅgā*, name of the Ganges river which is conceived as flowing in space until it descends to earth.

⁵ The Parakkamasamudda mentioned here is different from the reservoir of the same name named in 68. 40. This as we saw (note to the passage) is situated in Dakṣiṇapadesa and was formerly known as Paṇḍarāvāpi the corresponding name for which is now Paṇḍaravata. The Parakkamasamudda of 79. 26, which belongs to the river system of the

in which there was an island resplendent with a superb royal
 27 palace and which was like to a second ocean. He also built
 the great tank Parakkamataḷāka with a sluice¹ of a hundred
 28 cubits², and which was made fast³ by stone construction. Further
 the Ruler of men built the Mahindaṭṭaḷāka⁴ and the Ekābhavūpi

Kāraṇaigā, is described in more detail in v. 40 ff. A canal starting from its waters the Mahāmegha park. In 79. 7 this park is named immediately after the Dipasyūra in Pulatthinaṅgura among the parks laid out by Parakkamabhūta I. A sluice of the reservoir was situated according to v. 45 near the Caṇḍī gate. This name appears in 73. 161 among the gates of Pulatthinaṅgura. One must therefore look for the Parakkamasamudda of 79. 26 at Polonnaruwa and it is evidently identical with the Topasova. This was formerly far more extensive than now and was connected with the Dumbutūlavēra situated farther south. See on the whole subject A. M. Hocart CFS. G I, p. 101. In 79. 57a Parakkamasūgura is mentioned. As it was also connected with the Kāraṇaigā, its name is probably merely a variant of Parakkamasamudda. But in v. 29c Parakkamasūgura is mentioned along with the Parakkamasamudda and next to a Parakkamataḷāka. It is therefore possible that there were more than two reservoirs called after the King.

¹ That *paṇḍi* means the sluice or the outflow from the tank is clear from v. 42, 43. The *vitṭiḍḍi*, the water canals (called *ola* now in S. S. S.) start from the *paṇḍi*. In Skr. *paṇḍi* or *paṇḍi* means according to BR. a "drainage canal". The term *paṇḍi* is explained by the construction of the sluices of the old tanks in Ceylon, as described by Pānina (Ancient Ceylon, p. 373 ff.). They consist of a walled culvert of about 2-4 ft. in breadth which runs across the whole dam, and is only slightly raised above the base of the dam. To this culvert there leads on the slightly sloping inner side of the dam a square shaft also walled in. This is called in Sinhalese *bise-baṇḍa*. The shaft serves for regulating the wooden apparatus (p. 380a) "lock", see v. 69 with note) by the raising and dropping of which the culvert is wholly or partially closed or opened and thus the outflow of the water regulated or completely shut off. The shaft with the lock thus divides the culvert into an inflow and an outflow channel.

² Therefore about 150 ft. The number can only apply to the length of the culvert.

³ P. *dagga*. I believe that here we must take the adjective in the meaning of "sure, fast" which has developed out of the meaning "difficult of access". In the same way the substantive *dagga* (originally "a place difficult of access") has become "a strong place", then a "fortress".

⁴ A Mahindaṭṭaḷa was already mentioned in 12. 29 as a work of

tank, as well as the Parakkamasūgama whose flood-escape was
walled up¹; also small tanks at different places a thousand 29
four hundred and seventy-one (in number). At three hundred 30
tanks the Monarch had as many stone sluices built. Ancient 31
tanks which had burst he again dammed up in great number:
the great tank Mañihira, the Mahādārāgallaka, the tank called 32
Suvappatissa and that called Dūratissa, the Kulavāpi tank and
the one Brūhmaṇṣaggāma by name, the tanks called Nālikera- 33
mahābhamba, Rāhera, Giritūḷaka and Kumbhīlasobhita; the 34
Kāyavāpi, Padivūpi and the tank called Kaṭi, the Pattapāsāyavāpi
and the tank called Mahāyūva; the tanks with the names 35
Mahāsāmanasuttaka, Vaddhaya, Mahādatta and Kāyagāma;
the tanks Vira, Vālūhassa and Suramaṇa and the tanks called 36
Pāsūyagāma and Kūlavallī; the tank by name Kūḷalli and 37
that called Aṅgagāma, the Hīlapattakakhaṇḍa and the Maḷuga².

Aggabodhi I. If the Mahimataḷaka is identical with this, it can only
have been a restoration.

¹ P. *koṭṭhabaddhānāḷhara*. By *anāḷhara* (originally "waterfall") are
meant the flood escapes or "waste-weirs" (Parakk I. i. p. 374) serving
for the overflow of the water when the reservoir is too full. The weir
of the Parakkamasūgama is walled in (*koṭṭhabaddha*). Note that in Śrī.
koṭṭhaka may also mean an enclosing wall, and on the other hand that
the corresponding Sinhalese word *koṭṭara* (see above v. 27 note) is also used
in connection with waterworks. In Mhva. 68. 16 *Koṭṭhabaddha* is the
name of a causeway on the Rajjamaṇḍi.

² Of the tanks enumerated here six (Vālūhassa, Mahādārāgallaka,
Mahādatta, Kumbhīlasobhita, Pattapāsāya and Kāya) are mentioned in
60. 50 as having been restored by Vijayabāhu I. Cf. note to the passage.
The Mañihira is the work of Mahāsena (Mhva. 37. 47), likewise the
Suvappatissa (Wickramasingha, EZ. II. 28, called Rantisa in the Medir-
giriya inscr.) and the Mahādārāgallaka (37. 47); the Dūratissa, one of
Saddhātissa (Mhva. 33. 9); the Giritūḷaka, one of Aggabodhi II. (42. 67;
cf. note to 70. 112). Rāhera is frequently mentioned now as locality,
now as mountain apparently situated not far from Anurādhapura,
(Mhva. 21. 5; 41. 44; 44. 7), also as an irrigation canal (41. 31). Kāyagāma
was a place in Rohaya (15. 49) and Hīlapattakakhaṇḍa is in 72. 41 the
name of a ford of the Mahaveliganga. The remaining names occur
only in this passage. Of these Padivūpi (v. 34) might be identical with
the Padariya tank in the north-east corner of the North Central Pro-
vince, 40 miles from Anurādhapura. Cf. Wickramasingha, EZ. I. 202.

38 These decayed tanks the Ruler had restored to their original
 state and in the same way four hundred and sixty-seven small
 39 tanks which had been destroyed. In many tanks the King
 well aware of the right moment, had breaches (a total of)
 one thousand three hundred and ninety-five (in number)
 40 dammed up so that they were firm again. The King also
 had a canal constructed, called Gambhīrā (the deep), which
 started at the flood-escape called Makara of the Parakkama-
 41 sannudda. (He also constructed) the great canal by name
 Hemavati which branched off from the same (tank) in
 42 the direction of the Mubāmeghavarana; in the same way
 the canal known by the name of Nīlarāhīni which started
 43 from the sluice called Mālātipuppha of the same (tank) and
 the canal Salājavati by name which branched off from the
 44 Kīlākarnyyūna sluice; further the great canal called Vettavati
 which took its start from the sluice known by the name of
 45 Vettavati; the canal Tuṅgabhaidda coming from the Dakkhiṇa
 sluice and the canal Maṅgalagangā which branched off from
 the sluice called Maṅgala, as well as the canal called Campā
 46 from the sluice near the Cūḍī gate. (He built) also the
 Sarasvatī (canal) which branched off from the Toyavūpi and
 led to Puṇṇavaddhanavūpi and the Yequmati (canal) from its
 47 western side; further the (canal) Yamunā which branched off
 from the Puṇṇavaddhana tank to the west and the Sarabhā
 48 (canal) which ran northwards; also the canal called Candabhāgū
 which flowed through the centre of the Lakkhuryūna, and
 the Nannadā (canal) which branched off in the domain of the
 49 Jetavana-sihāra; further the canal named Neraṇjarī which
 flowed from that tank in a northerly direction, and the
 50 Bhagīrathī, which started from the Anotatta tank; as also
 the (canal) called Āvattagangā which branched off from there
 to the south and the Tambapayā (canal) which flowed from
 51 the Ambāla tank towards the north; the Aciravati (canal)
 which ran westwards from the Mahāvalukagangā, fitted for
 52 many a long year to prevent famine, and the Gomati (canal)
 which branching off from there flowed eastwards, and the
 53 Mālāpharavati (canal) running northwards; also the canals

flowing eastwards from the Aciravati: the Sataruddhā, Nibbhidā,
 Dhavanā and Sida; further the Kālinā canal which flowed 64
 in a southerly direction from the southern overflow of the
 vast Mayūhira tank; as also the canal called Kūveri which 65
 flowed from the Giritaṭṭaka tank to the Naddāraṇaḍḍhamān
 tank, and the Somavati canal running from the Kadhūra- 66
 raḍḍhamāna tank to the Arimaddaviṇayaggaṃa (tank). The 67
 Monarch also constructed the Godāvati canal which branched
 off from the Kūragaṅgā and flowed to the Parakkamasāgara.¹
 (Lastly) the Prince had the ruined canal called Jayagaṅgā² 68
 restored. It branched off from the Kālavāpi and flowed to
 Anurādhapura. Five hundred and thirty-four small canals he 69
 had constructed and three thousand three hundred which had
 been destroyed he restored to what they had been before. In 60
 the province of the Yutarāja (Dakkhiṇadesa) the discerning
 Sovereign had numerous works of various kinds constructed
 at numbers of places. On the site of the house where he was 61

¹ The names mentioned in vv. 40—57 show how strong was the tendency to call new buildings and the like after ancient and sacred places. Mahāmeggharasa and Jetavana are of course called respectively after the park and the monastery in Anurādhapura. Hemavati is the skr. *Haimavati*, a name of the Ganges. Śaravati and Yamunā are well known rivers in Northern India. Votavati is a tributary of the Yamunā, now called Betwa. Kālinā (v. 64) is a frequent name for the Yamunā (see RR. s. v.). Sataruddhā is the skr. *Satarddhā*, now the Ner-budda whose valley bounds the Vindhya mountains in the south. Tuṅgabhadra is the name of a river in the Dekkan, likewise Kūveri, Godāvari and quite in the south in Tinnevely, the Tamaravari. The Bhagirathī (v. 49) is the name of one of the sources of the Ganges, and the Gomati is a left tributary of the same stream. The Aciravati is so named after a river which flows past Sīrāthī = skr. *Śīrāvati*, now the Rapti. The Neraṇjari is called after the river at the sacred place where Buddha received Enlightenment (Dhammapa, Buddha, p. 129). Gaṇḍakī (v. 45) is the name of an old Indian town in Aṅga near the present Bhagalpur in Bengal. Caudrabhāgā, Śrāvasthā, Vopamati are Indian river names (RR. s. v.). Nibbhidā (v. 63) corresponds perhaps to the Nirvindhya named in Meghadūta 28. Anotatta (v. 49) which was situated in the country of the mythical Uṭarakuṇḍa was made sacred according to Vin. I. 29² by a visit of the Buddha.

² New Yedi Eln.

born in Pankhagāma¹ he erected the Sūtiḡhara-cetiya one
 62 hundred and twenty cubits high. He had twenty-two relic
 shrines erected, thirty-seven Bodhi Trees (planted), one hundred
 63 image houses, fifteen caves, twenty-one dwellings for the
 community in the four regions of the heavens and eighty-
 64 seven rest-houses for strangers. He put up chapels with altars
 for flowers, twenty-nine in number, seven sermon halls as well
 65 as five outer walls and forty-three images of divers kinds.
 66 He restored twenty-four ruined image houses. The Mahāgallaka
 tank² and the Tālaggallaka tank, the Hājini weir³, the weir
 67 called Telapakka, the weir on the Jajjara⁴ and the Vilattākhaṇḍa
 (weir) the Monarch made fast for the flourishing of the harvest
 68 in the land. Three hundred and fifty-eight damaged places
 69 in tanks and the stone sluices on thirteen tanks as well as
 one hundred and sixty locks⁵ and small tanks which were
 damaged, thirty-seven in number — these the Monarch had
 repaired.

70 Also in the province of Rohaya the King who had delight
 in meritorious works, had divers buildings erected in villages
 71 and market towns. On the site of his mother's pyre in Kluṇ-
 gāma⁶ the Monarch (erected) the Ratanāvāli-cetiya, one hundred
 72 and twenty cubits⁷ in height. Further (he founded) sixteen

¹ See note to 41. 26. The height of the tepe was roughly 180 ft.

² Cf. Mhvs. 68. 34 and 49.

³ P. *vijjhara*. See note to v. 28. What is here called *vijjhara* is probably the same as *vāṭṭasaṅgapaṭa* Mhvs. 48. 148; 68. 35, 37.

⁴ Probably an allusion to the great irrigation works described in Mhvs. 68. 16 ff. which needed repair. In the case of a river *vijjhara* means the dam (cut) built in it through which a part of the water is conducted into a lateral canal. If the river has a large volume of water, it flows over the dam and forms a "fall" like the flood-escape in a tank.

⁵ P. *deṇḍage*. I believe this is meant for the shafts and the apparatus for regulating the outflow of the water at the sluices (see note 1 to v. 27).

⁶ See note to 74. 163.

⁷ That is 180 ft. The size (*āgāma*) probably refers to the height. According to H. W. Conderon (letter of 1-4-28), the measurement of the tepe of Badālikumham gave a circumference of 926 ft. which would in fact give a height of about 180 ft.

relic shrines, seven Bodhi Trees and also vast Bodhi temples
and seventy Bodhi 'Tree terraces' and two-storeyed image 73
houses forty-three in number, two sermon halls and seventy-
five images, thirty-seven dwellings for the community from 74
the four regions of the heavens, forty-seven outer walls and
twenty gate-buildings; also fifty-nine rest-houses for guests, 75
four parks and three statues of the Maṭṭariya. After the 76
Sovereign had then built five dancing-halls, he had everything
here and there which was broken down and decayed restored.
Thirty-seven thūpas, twenty-two Bodhi Tree terraces, two 77
hundred and seventy-four large image houses, one relic temple, 78
seven temples for images in recumbent posture, forty caves
and four brick houses; four long pāsādas, and six three-storeyed 79
pāsādas, twenty-nine sermon halls and three cloisters, one 80
hundred and twenty-six dwelling-houses, one hundred and
twenty-eight houses for books and four rest-houses for guests,
twenty-four temples to the gods, one hundred and three 81
tower-gates, one hundred and twenty-six outer walls
these all the Sovereign had restored. The Ruler also made 82
fast two hundred and sixteen leaking tanks belonging to the
community, like the great Uruvelā tank and the Paṇḍukolaṃba
tank and others, further eighteen decayed sluice locks and two 83
hundred and five ruined small tanks. On ten tanks he repaired 84
the stone sluices and here and there he had forty-four canals dug².

By constructing in this way beautiful vihāras, gardens, 85
tanks and the like he adorned with these numerous (works)
the whole of Laṅkā.

Thus Parakkamabāhu, the Ruler of men, by whom were 86
performed divers and numerous kinds of meritorious works,
who continually found the highest satisfaction in the teaching

¹ P. *bodhikaṭṭhake*. Here also *kaṭṭhaka* (see above note to v. 28) is used in the sense of walling up. It is a usual custom to surround the sacred trees with a terrace, even if it consist merely of stones heaped together.

² This verse ends the first continuation of the Mahāraṇas ascribed to Dharmapāṇi. See my edition of the Colavaṇas I. Introd. p. III.

of the Master, who was endowed with extraordinary energy and discernment, carried on the government for thirty-three years¹.

Here ends the seventy-ninth chapter, called «The Laying out of Gardens and the Like», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The same number of years in Pūjāv. and Rājarañ. Rājāv. 32 years.



CHAPTER LXXX

THE SIXTEEN KINGS

Thereupon the sister's son of this Great king, the wise 1
 post sovereign King Vijayabāhu¹, became monarch in Lañkā.
 When he had received consecration as king the prudent one 2
 in his great mercy released from their misery those dwellers
 in Lañkā whom his uncle, the Sovereign Parakkama, had 3
 thrown into prison and tortured with stripes or with fetters.
 By restoring at different places to various people their village 4
 or their field he increased the joyfulness² of them all. As 5

¹ In Polonnaruwa there is an inscription of Vijayabāhu II. which supplements the account of our chronicle (*Wickramasinghe* EZ. II. 170 ff.). In it he also describes himself as sister's son of Parakkamabāhu. We know three sisters of this king, but I doubt if any of these three was the mother of Vijayabāhu II. *Wickramasinghe* thinks she was Bhaddavati, the wife of Gajabāhu, who would in fact be the most likely. But in 70. 233 (cf. below note to v. 31) we have the distinct statement that Gajabāhu had no son. This is not easy to get over. I am inclined to think that there was a fourth unnamed sister of Parakkamabāhu's married to a Kalinga prince. Then it would be intelligible (cf. below, note to v. 18) that Vijayabāhu, the son of this prince and of a sister of Parakkamabāhu, should in his turn, appoint a Kalinga prince as his successor; and that the latter should describe him as head of the clan. The inscription relates further that Vijayabāhu was in Sīmapura, the capital of Kalinga, when Parakkama summoned him to Lañkā. Parakkama's relations with the Kalinga dynasty are intelligible. He had himself Kalinga blood in his veins through his grandmother Tīkkasundarī whom Vijayabāhu I. fetched from this dynasty to secure the continuance of his house (*Mhva.* 59. 22 ff.).

² Vs. 3 and 4 show Parakkamabāhu in a curious light. According to this account, he was a severe if not cruel ruler, who made his subjects slave that he might gratify his love of splendour. Vijayabāhu II. grants an amnesty at his accession.

- Alakā for (the god) Kubera and Amarāvati for Sakka, so was
 6 Pulatthinagara for him the royal city. He himself composed
 in the Māgadha tongue a most excellent letter, sent it to the
 7 monarch living in Arimaddana¹, concluded with this beloved
 (prince) a friendly treaty as aforetime his great grandfather
 8 Vijayabāhu², and (being) highly famed, to increase the joy of
 the bhikkhus in the land of Lakka and Arimaddana, he made
 9 the Order of the Buddha lustrous. As the Ruler departed
 not from any precept of the political teaching of Manu, he
 rejoiced the people through the four heart-winning qualities.
 10 Endowed with kindness, purity and other virtues, he found
 his highest satisfaction in the triad of the jewels, Buddha and
 11 the like. Of most excellent character he, ever joyous in spirit,
 12 provided the bhikkhus with the four articles of use. Mani-
 festing great exertion, he like a wise Bodhisatta, everywhere
 13 in every way interested himself in all beings. Shunning the
 four wrongful paths³ he in his great insight, practised in the
 exercise of justice, towards good and evil favour and severity.
 14 Thus this Monarch respected by the laity and the Order, per-
 forming many meritorious works, carried on the government
 for one year⁴.
- 15 Now after a traitor, Mahinda by name, of the Kalinga
 clan⁵, who had won as his spouse a cowherd's daughter, Di-

¹ The capital of Hāmūtha (Lower Burma, Pegu). Cf. *Mhvs.* 76. 38. We see from this passage that the Māgadha tongue, that is Pāli, was the medium of international intercourse, in the same way as Latin in the Middle Ages.

² Vijayabāhu I. is called not quite correctly, the grandfather (*pātā-waha*) of Vijayabāhu II. For his relations with Hāmūtha see *Mhvs.* 60. 2 ff.

³ See note to 37. 108.

⁴ The same length of reign in the Pūjāv. In which the King's name is given as Paṇḍita-Vijayabāhu. He has the same name in the Nik. s. and Rājaraṭṭa.

⁵ W. translates "Mahinda of Kalinga" and gives a wrong colouring to the affair. The MSS. have *Kullinga* and also the Col. Ed. The clan name of the Kulinga occurs already in *Mhvs.* 19. 2. Pūjāv. calls the usurper *Kūlikasodā Mahindāpāyo* (*sodā* is *kesadāta*). Rājaraṭṭa. and

part by name, had treacherously slain the Monarch, (he) the 16
 deluded one without gaining the consent of the generals, of
 the warriors, of the indignant inhabitants of the country and 17
 of the whole of the dignitaries, carried on in most evil fashion
 the government in Laṅkā for five days.

After his murder the Uparāja of King Vijayaśāhu, born in 18
 Kāliṅga, Kīrttiśiṣāṅka by name¹, became king. After he had 19
 received royal consecration he had built in superb Paḷaṭṭhinagara
 a beautiful temple of stone for the Tooth Relic². He had the 20
 loty Ratanaśvalī-cetiya made firm and embellished the splendid

Nikaya Kilinkeśā Mhinda, and Rājāv. merely Kilinkeśā. Pajāv. and
 Rājāv. like the Milva. give him a reign of just five days.

¹ King Nissanka Malla has left many and ample inscriptions.
 Ed. Murray has edited 15 of them in the AIC (nr. 143 ff.) Wasmu-
 sasorum 18 in all, EZ. I, 121 ff., II, 76, 84, 91, 96, 98, 123, 125, 128,
 130, 134, 137, 143, 146, 148, 153, 157, 163 ff. Their contents are very
 similar. With regard to his descent we learn (for ex. in the famous
 Gulpota inscription in Polonnaruwa, EZ. II, 93 ff.) that he was born in
 the Kāliṅga country in the town of Singhapura as son of the King
 Jayagopa and the Queen Pārvatī. The Great king of Laṅkā the
 Chief of the clan (*Kaḍḍeja*) — without doubt Vijayaśāhu II. is named —
 had summoned him thither to take over the government. He had been
 at first prince and viceroy and had then ascended the throne in virtue
 of the law of succession. This right is frequently stressed in the
 inscriptions and justified by his descent from Vijaya, the first king of
 Laṅkā. Without doubt this right was much disputed and it looks as if
 the bombastic style of Nissanka Malla's inscriptions had the object of
 increasing the prestige of the new Kāliṅga dynasty in Ceylon.

² In the inscriptions (for ex. Gulpota-I, C, line 1) and the *Heṭṭa-dā-gū*
 portico inscs., I, 19; EZ. II, 93 and 118) Nissanka Malla claims to have
 built the *daḍḍa-gaya*, which was named after him, as well as the *reṭṭa-*
gaya. This last is evidently the so-called *Vaṭa-dā-gū* on the Quadrangle
 which was, however, in reality, a work of Parakkamabāhu I. and pro-
 bably only restored by Nissanka Malla. See note to 78. 41. What the
daḍḍa-gaya was and where it was situated is not certain. One is in-
 clined to think first of the *Heṭṭa-dā-gū* situated opposite the *Vaṭa-dā-gū*.
 That is according to the inscriptions on the building itself, apparently
 a work of Nissanka Malla. But in spite of its traditional title, it was
 probably not a *dā-gū*, a "relic shrine" but an "image house". Cf. the
 note to 78. 39. As *dā-gū* the *Śat-mahul-pūsāda* might merit con-
 sideration, unless this is a work of Parakkamabāhu I. (note to 78. 42).

21 structure with a golden point¹. After building the vihāra²
 adorned with a hundred pāsādas which bore his name, he
 made it over to the bhikkhu community and supported it.
 22 The Jambukola-vihāra resplendent with walls and pillars
 shimmering in gold and silver, where the floor was of red
 23 lead and the bricks of the roof were of gold, the wise (Monarch)
 had rebuilt and placed therein seventy-three golden statues of
 24 the Master³. With the four-membered army the Ruler full
 of pious devotion, went forth to the Samantakūṣa and performed
 25 there his devotions⁴, and everywhere on the island of Tambapaṇṇī⁵
 26 he had flower gardens and fruit gardens and numbers
 of houses for the community laid down⁶. While in this way

¹ The *topa* is therefore called even to-day the Rankot-Dāgoba "Golden point dagoba". It has nothing, however, to do with the Mahāthūpa in Polonnarua with which it is associated in the Index to my edition. The Rankot lies to the south of the Añjana-parivaya. The height is given in the Galpoṭa inscription C, line 2 as 80 cubits (= 120 ft.). The Rankot-Dāgoba Gal-sara inscr. (EZ. II. 131 ff.), belongs to the time at which that Dāgoba was built. The expression *kaṇṭhāpeti* "has made fast or firm" is, as a rule, employed of the restoration of old buildings.

² Not yet identified.

³ The famous cave temples of Dambul are situated about 47 miles north of Kandy on the road to Anantāthūpara. There is an inscription on the rock wall there of Nisāṅka Malla (Wakkamaśūka, EZ. I. 121 ff.) in which at the end, he boasts of having constructed or embellished these caves and of having given them the name of *Sarvagapirigūṭa*. The 73 statues set up by the king are also mentioned in the Pūṭṭhāṅka-majjala inscr. line 30 (EZ. II. 173).

⁴ The inscriptions mention repeatedly the journeys of the King to the sacred places of the Island. Adam's Peak (*Sāmasakūṭa* = Sinh. *Sāmasakūṭa*) is expressly mentioned in the inscription on the vestibule wall of the Heta-kū-gū (I. 3 EZ. II. 94).

⁵ The ancient name for Ceylon, originally of that part in particular where Vijaya landed. See Mhv. 6.47, 7.38f., 41.

⁶ In the inscriptions the King also boasts repeatedly of successful campaigns against the Gopas, Pāṇḍyas and other peoples in Southern India. It is almost impossible to disentangle the historical facts from the exaggerations. In the kingdom itself he claims to have increased the prosperity of the people by lightening taxation, by the laying out of gardens and tanks and by a generous giving of alms. He claims also to have reformed the Church. The mention of the fixing of the

day by day the Ruler accumulated many a merit, he carried on the government for nine years¹ in most excellent fashion.

His son, the King known by the name of Virabāhu², 27 hereupon ruled for one night and then fell into the power of death.

Thereupon the younger brother of that same king Kitti- 28 nissāṅka, King Vikkamabāhu³, enjoyed the royal dignity for three months. He was slain by the Ruler Coḍagaṅga, 29 a sister's son of King Nissāṅka, who carried on the government for nine months⁴. Thereupon the powerful general Kitti had 30 the eyes of this king put out, deposed him and had the government carried on for three years without mishap⁵ by 31 Lilāvati, the first mahest of the sovereign Parakkambāhu.

gāvḍa and of the setting up of gāvḍa stones is interesting (Inscr. of the vestibule wall of the Heṭṭa-dā-gō, line 12; EZ. II. 94). Mr. H.W. Coomaraswami has actually discovered a number of such gāvḍa stones with inscriptions (letter of 1-6-28). They stand along the ancient high road (Mahāgāma-Katuragama-Bullala-Medagāma-Bibile-Mahiyangana).

¹ The same number in Pāḷi, and Rājāv. These and the Rājatan. ascribe the same merit to Nissāṅka Malla as the Mhva. The Sinhalese chronicles distinguish like the inscriptions, between the temple of the Tooth Relic and the circular building. The number of the statues set up in the Dambabāhāra is given in the Pāḷi, as 72, in the Rājatan. as 63.

² In the Galpala inscr. II, line 1-2 (EZ. II. 111) he is called the son of Nissāṅka Malla. Pāḷi, also mentions that his reign only lasted one night.

³ Mentioned in the inscr. of the vestibule wall of the Heṭṭa-dā-gō line 13-14 as *āpa* "prince". Pāḷi, and Rājāv, give him the same length of reign as the Mhva.

⁴ The same in Pāḷi. In Rājāv, Coḍagaṅga is mentioned as the general who carried on the government for three years for Lilāvati. Kitti is therefore not mentioned at all here.

⁵ Pāḷi. Like the Mhva., Rājatan. and Nik., enumerates only the names Virabāhu, Vikkamabāhu, Coḍagaṅga, Lilāvati without other details. Lilāvati was the daughter of Śrīvallabha and Sugata. Coḍagaṅga (in the form of Coḍagaṅga and Vikkamabāhu (Vikkambāhu) are named as princes (*prāṇapatti*) who lived at the court of Gajabāhu (IO. 238), but were not his sons (cf. 70. 333).

32 Thereupon King Sūhasamalla of the race of Okkāka, a
 lion in courage, carried on the government for two years¹.
 33 Then having deposed this Monarch, the general Āyasmanta²,
 a man of almost unsurpassable courage, a supporter of his
 34 royal family, prudently had the government carried on with
 wise policy for six months by Kalyāṇavati, the first mahesi
 35 of Kittinissanta³. This Queen Kalyāṇavati, who was devoted
 to the Order of the Master, had a vihāra called after her,
 36 built in the village Paṇṇasālaka by name, for love of the
 village, and assigned it villages, fields, articles of use, slaves,
 37 gardens and so forth. With her consent, the general Āyasmanta,
 who administered the government in all Laṅkā, who came of
 38 the Kbandhāvura family, sent the Adhikārin Dera to charming
 Valliggāma, had a vihāra erected there⁴ and assigned to the
 39 Great community. He built the pariveṇa known by his name
 40 of Saṇḍjakularaḍḍhana⁵ and caring for its support, he assigned

¹ Pāḷi, the same. In Bāḷi, there is only mention of a king of the Okkāka family (without the name) who reigned 9 years. There is an inscription of Sūhasamalla in Polonnaruwa with the exact date of his coming to the throne in the Buddha era (WICKERMANSINGHE, EZ. II. 219 ff.), according to which F. MAX has calculated the event as occurring on Wednesday, the 23rd of August, 1200 A. D. (F. MAX, JIAS. 1909, p. 327, 331). This is the first absolutely certain date in the history of Ceylon. See F. H. MAX, JIAS. 1913, p. 518; WICKERMANSINGHE, EZ. I. 123, note 4; II. 220; H. W. COMAROV, HC., p. 67, 75.

² Pāḷi, and Bāḷi, call him Kīṇḍa Abhasevivat. This is the same general who appears in inscriptions as Lak Vijayasīṅga Senari Abhasevura Tāvarunāva (EZ. II. 112, lines 15; 226, l. 19). WICKERMANSINGHE EZ. II. 191 shows that probably Āyasmanta is the same as the Kitti mentioned in v. 30 who calls himself in an inscription Lak Vijayasīṅga Kiti Senaviyan and describes himself as the minister of Līkavati (E. MAURER, AC. Nr. 157).

³ Kalyāṇavati is mentioned in inscriptions of Nisankha Malla (for ex. EZ. II. 91, line 13 and 11, l. 2) under the form *Kalyāṇa*. A short inscription of hers is also preserved in Bopitiya (EZ. II. 190 ff.) in which she calls herself Kalyāṇavati. Pāḷi, and Bāḷi, give her a reign of 6 years.

⁴ See 80. 96.

⁵ That means "furtherer of his royal family". See v. 33. I am now inclined to believe that there and here we should read with W, *saṇḍjakularaḍḍhana* (= *saṇḍāḍḍ*) not as *r°*.

it villages and fields surrounded by parks and the like and which could scarcely be visited by a bad harvest, together with articles of use and slaves male and female. Having scrupulously separated the four castes who had become impure through mixture, he bent on doing good, had a text book compiled which had law as its subject.

Thereupon there reigned for one year¹ a royal prince Dhammāsoka by name, who on coming to the throne was aged three months. The Mahālipūda Anikāṅga came at the head of a great army from the Coḷa kingdom, slew the ruler in Puṭṭhinagara, Prince Dhammāsoka, together with the general Āyasmanta and reigned seventeen days². But the general, Vikkantacammūka, the villain, slew the Monarch Anikāṅga and had the government carried on for a year³ by the first consort of King Parakkamahāhu, Līlāvati by name, who had already reigned before.

Now came King Lokissara by name, who had been wounded in the shoulder by a spear, with a great Dumiḷa army from the opposite shore, brought the whole of Laṅkā under his sway and reigned, dwelling in Puṭṭhinagara, nine months⁴. Hereupon the general Parakkama, the best among men of decision, endowed with great power and courage, belonging to the family of the Kālanāgaras, consecrated the Mahest Līlāvati⁵ who came of the dynasty of the Sun and Moon, in the royal dignity, she who afterward shone in royal

¹ Pūjāv. the same. In Pūjāv. it is expressly stated that it was Āyasmanta who raised the prince to the throne. The prince's age at his ascent of the throne is given as 5 months, the length of Āyasmanta's regency as 6 years.

² The same number in Pūjāv. and Rājāv.

³ In Pūjāv. and Rājāv. the general is called Manukkā Senari. The length of the regency is given as one year.

⁴ Pūjāv. and Rājāv. 5 months.

⁵ Līlāvati thus enjoyed the royal dignity nominally at least three times (v. 30 f., 46 f., 49 f.). For inscriptions of this queen see EZ. I. 176 E., II. 192 E., 239 E. The last named was found at Potgul-vehera in Polonnaruwa and says that the queen had this building restored. It was one of the foundations of Parakkamahāhu I. For the general Parakkama see Dūthāvogga v. 4.

51 splendour. When then a space of about seven months¹ had
 52 passed for the Mahest, there landed with a great Paṇḍu army
 53 from the Paṇḍu kingdom the glorious Paṇḍu King Parakkama,
 54 deposed the Queen and her general Parakkama and after he
 55 had cleared Laṅkā from the briers (of revolt), he ruled the
 56 realm in superb Puṭatthinagara for three years², without
 57 transgressing the political precepts of Manu. But since in
 58 consequence of the enormously accumulated, various evil deeds
 59 of the dwellers in Laṅkā, the devatās who were everywhere
 60 entrusted with the protection of Laṅkā, failed to carry out
 61 this protection, there landed a man who held to a false creed,
 62 whose heart rejoiced in bad statesmanship, who was a forest
 63 fire for the burning down of bushes in the forest of the good,
 64 — that is of generosity and the like — who was a sun whose action
 65 closed the rows of night lotus flowers — that is the good
 66 doctrine — and a moon for destroying the grace of the groups
 67 of the day lotuses — that is of peace — (a man) by name
 68 Māgha, an unjust king sprung from the Kāṇḍiṅga line, in
 69 whom reflection was looked by his great delusion, landed as
 70 leader of four and twenty thousand warriors from the Kāṇḍiṅga
 71 country and conquered the island of Laṅkā. The great search-
 72 ing fire — King Māgha — commanded his countless flames
 73 of fire — his warriors — to harass the great forest — the
 74 kingdom of Laṅkā³. While thus his great warriors oppressed
 75 the people, boasting cruelly everywhere: "We are Keraṇḍa
 76 warriors", they tore from the people their garments, their
 77 ornaments and the like, corrupted the good morals of the
 78 family which had been observed for ages, cut off hands and
 79 feet and the like (of the people), destroyed many houses and
 80 tied up cows, oxen and other (cattle) which they made their
 81 own property. After they had put fetters on the wealthy
 82 and rich people and had tortured them and taken away all

¹ The same in Pāṇḍy; Rājāy. 4 months.

² The same in Pāṇḍy. and Rājāy.

³ In verses 56-60 the compiler gives specimens of his intimacy with the rules of Indian poetics — *alankāra*. The comparisons belong to the species *vijeta*. Cf. Daṇḍin, *Kāvyādhara* 2. 66 ff.

their possessions, they made poor people of them. They wreck- 65
ed the image houses, destroyed many cetiyas, ravaged the
vihāras and maltreated the lay brethren. They flogged the 66
children, tormented the five (groups of the) comrades of the
Order¹, made the people carry burdens and forced them to
do heavy labour. Many books known and famous they tore 67
from their cord and strowed them hither and thither. The 68
beautiful, vast, proud cetiyas like the Ratanaśālī(-cetiya)² and
others which embodied as it were, the glory of former pious
kings, they destroyed by overthrowing them and allowing 69
alas! many of the bodily relics, their souls³ as it were, to
disappear. Thus the Damiḥa warriors in imitation of the 70
warriors of Māra, destroyed in the evil of their nature, the
laity and the Order. Hereupon they completely invested 71
Pulatthīnagara and captured Parakkama, that man of great
might and valour. They put out the Monarch's eyes and 72
plundered all his treasures, pearls, jewels and so forth. Then 73
the leaders of the soldiers with Mānābharaṇa at the head,
consecrated the Kāliṅga Māgha to the glorious royal dignity
of Laṅkā.

Now after the Ruler Māgha had in this manner taken 74
possession of the kingdom and attained the royal dignity, he
dwelt in Pulatthīnagara. The Monarch forced the people to 75
adopt a false faith and he brought great confusion into the
four sharply divided castes⁴. Villages and fields, houses and 76
gardens, slaves, cattle, buffaloes and whatever else belonged to
the Sīhulas he had delivered up to the Keraḷas. The vihāras, the 77
pariveśas and many sanctuaries he made over to one or other
of his warriors as dwelling. The treasures which belonged to 78

¹ P. *śāsthamanikā*, that is the bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs, the novices, *śāsthamanā*, of male and female sex, and the young girls who were being prepared for the profession of nuns (*śikṣamāṇā*).

² Here for the first time the new customary name (Sinh. *Ratanasālī*) is used for the Mahāsālī in Anurādhapura.

³ Lit. "their life" (*jetikaya*).

⁴ V. 41 *ah* must be compared with 75 c d. The "false faith" was Hinduism.

the Buddha and were the property of the holy Order he seized and thus committed a number of sins in order to go to hell.
 79 In this fashion committing deeds of violence, the Ruler Māgha held sway in Laṅkā for twenty-one years¹.

80 Thus in Laṅkā this and that ruler out of great lust for power, have slain this and that lord of men, but have themselves in consequence of these deeds, attained to no good old age, and even when they had achieved the kingly dignity, they could not alas! enjoy it for long. Hence the wise man should refrain from the destruction of living beings and renounce wanton lust for power.

Here ends the eightieth chapter, called 'The Sixteen Kings', in the *Mahāvastu*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The same in Pāṇini. According to Bāṇari, 19 years. The description of Māgha's reign in both chronicles agrees entirely with that of the *Mhva. Rājaraṭa*, and *Nik.s.* continue their enumeration of the names (cf. note to 80. 31). In the first: Sāṅgalla (read Sāhasanalla), Kalyāṇavati, Dharmāśoka, Nelaṅga, Āṇḍīvati, Lokasvara, Līlāvatī, Puṇḍita Parākrumabāhu; in the second: Sāhasanalla, Kalyāṇavati, Dharmāśoka, Āṇḍīvati, Līlāvatī, Lokasvara, Līlāvatī, Parākrumapāṇḍi. Then there follows in *Rājaraṭa* the account of the tyrannical reign of the Kāliṅga Māgha. *Nik.s.* has the form Māgha.

CHAPTER LXXI

THE REIGN OF ONE KING

During this alien rule¹ several virtuous people had founded 1
on divers of the most inaccessible mountains a charming town
(or) a village² and dwelling here and there protected the laity 2
and the Order so that they were in peace. On the summit of
the Subba mountain³ hard to ascend by the foe, the Senāpati 3
Subba had founded a town, as Vessavana the town Ālakamandū,
and dwelling here and fending off the Keraḷa devils, he protected 4
the (surrounding) country and the Order. On the summit of
the Gorindamala⁴ hard to reach by the rebels, the Ādipāda 5
ruler Maruṇekabhūta by name, whose courage was known to
the world, had founded a town and by dwelling there, he 6
protected the province of Itthaya, the community of the
bhikkhus and the Order⁵.

¹ P. *vajjantara* (cf. 85, 46) formed like *desantara*. The translation "interregnum" is also permissible, since no lawful kings reigned.

² P. *sayamaṇa gāmaṇa*. When in the sequel the buildings on the rocks are designated as *nagarāṇi* the reason is probably that larger settlements arose at the foot of the rock fortresses and under the protection of these. The word *sayama* is associated with the idea of a permanent stronghold.

³ *Subbapabbata*, now Yūyāha (= *yakap-āra* = P. *yasapabbata*), an isolated rock like Sigiri, not far from Maba. Cf. H. C. P. Bell, *ASC*, 1910-11 = X, 1914, p. 62 ff.; 1911-12, p. 69 ff.; E. H. Muesen, *JRAS*, C. D. XII, nr. 44, 1893, p. 97 ff.

⁴ This form of the name is hardly right. The Col. Ed. has altered it into *Gorindacala*, I should rather propose *Gorindaseḷa*, since its name to-day is *Gorindaseḷa*. The Gorindaseḷa is known by the name of "Westminster Abbey". This imposing rock rises 20 miles west of Trukkeril, south of the village of Kovila in the Mahavedirata Keraḷa (Census, 1921, II, p. 469). Cf. P. Lucas, *JRAS*, C. B. 1902, nr. 61, p. 107 ff.; 1914, nr. 67, p. 279 ff.

⁵ When *bhikkhusaṅgha* and *sāmaṇa* are named together here, the first means the persons, the second the thing, that is the doctrine and the true practice of it in the Order.

7 In the same way again the general called Saikha founded
 8 in the district Mayinekkhala by name, on the lofty mountain
 9 Gaṅgūdopi a superb town and while dwelling there, gave us
 10 little heed to the infamous army of the Ruler Māgha, though
 11 it was but two yojanas away, as to a blade of grass and
 12 protected without fear that district and the Order.

13 Now at that time there was a king known by the name of
 14 Vijayabāhu, belonging to the line of King Saṃghabodhi¹, a
 15 man of splendid courage who after he had through fear of
 16 the foe withdrawn to divers inaccessible forests and had long
 17 dwelt there, attained the dignity of a king of the Vanni².
 18 The mighty one brought all the dignitaries of the Sihalas
 19 under his influence, marched forth with a Sihala army and
 20 destroyed the whole of the four-membered forces of the foe
 21 which were armed for battle, as a mighty flame of fire³
 22 (destroys) the darkness. All the Dāmiḷa warriors who dwelt
 23 as they pleased in the single villages and houses he drove
 24 forth. After he had freed superb Mayuraṭṭha⁴ from the briars
 25 (of the foe), the Ruler built on the lofty summit of the
 26 Jambuddopi⁵ mountain a splendid town with fine walls and
 gate-towers, resided there in happiness and carried on the
 government as capable monarch.

¹ *Sirisaṃghabodhi* I. See Māva. 26. 73 ff.

² Here the tribe of the Vanni is mentioned for the first time. The name does not occur in the older Mahāvamsa nor in the Cūlavamsa or Dhammakitti. The Vannis live to-day, but a few hundred in number, in small villages on the northern frontier of the North-Central Province. They go in for agriculture and preferably for hunting. Their origin is unknown. The surrounding inhabitants call them Veddhas as a rule, and the Census of 1921 evidently includes them among these. They themselves repudiate all connection with the Veddhas on whom they look down with contempt. Cf. H. Parker, *The Vannis*, *The Papuanian*, Feb. 1887, p. 15 ff.; and *Ancient Ceylon*, p. 95 ff.

³ *P. jēḷakkhamāṭṭha*, synonym for *aggikkhamāṭṭha*.

⁴ It is noteworthy that in this second continuation of the Cūlavamsa the names *Dakkhiṇadesa* and *Rājaraṭṭha* vanish and are replaced by *Māyuraṭṭha* and *Paṭiṭṭhāraṭṭha*. Cf. note to B1. 46.

⁵ Now Dambadeniya, about 18 miles south-west of Kurunegala. Cf. F. H. Moussa, *JRAS.* C. B., XV, no. 48, 1897, p. 23 ff.

And further: during these disturbed times all the Grand 17
 theras with Vācissara at the head, had carried away from 18
 Pulaṭṭhiṅgara the Almsbowl Relic and the Tooth Relic of 19
 the Master, had gone forth, had betaken themselves to 20
 Mūyāraṭṭha and there on the mountain Ketthumala in a safe 21
 region had buried both the relics carefully in the earth and 22
 so preserved them¹. Now some of these Grand theras with 23
 Vācissara at the head, who sought that protection for Laṅkā 24
 on which depended the continuance of the Order, had crossed 25
 the vast ocean, despite its raging waves, had betaken themselves 26
 to the lands of the Paṇḍas, Coḷas and other (peoples). Now 27
 Vijayabāhu sending forth his great dignitaries, summoned all 28
 these theras who were a mine of mercy² back from there. When 29
 the Grand theras arrived he greeted them with reverence and 30
 asked them: "Where are the two relics, the Tooth and the 31
 Almsbowl preserved"? At their answer, "In such and such a 32
 place", the Monarch's whole body was filled with a fivefold 33
 joy³. Led by the crowd of the Grand theras, the Ruler set 34
 forth with his army for the Kottumala mountain. After he 35
 had performed a great sacrificial-festival⁴ round about the 36
 mountain, he beheld there gazing with his whole soul⁵, the

¹ Puṇḍa, Rājaya, and Rājāsita agree with the Cōlasayana as regards the rescue of the two relics from Pulaṭṭhiṅgara and the bringing of them to Mūyāraṭṭha. The chronicles call the mountain Kottumalaya. The thera Vācissara is not mentioned. In our passage *dhavaṭṭhānamhi* in v. 10b must be understood as appositional addition to *paṇḍarāṇā*.

² Ye *kammakāra* cannot refer to Vijayabāhu, but only to *te mahāthera*.

³ Lit. "one whose whole body was filled with . . ." The five kinds of joy are according to Cūḷavamsi (P. D. s. v. pttā) *khuddakā* p. "slight joy", *bhūṭikā* p. "momentary joy", *akkaṭṭhikā* p. "joy that comes like a sudden shock", *abhogapā*, "transporting joy" (that will make you leap into the air) and *pharugapā*, "all-pervading joy".

⁴ The King marches round the mountain with his attendants as a pilgrim walks round a holy place and has merificial ceremonies performed at the four cardinal points.

⁵ P. *akkhammasa*. W's translation "with great delight" is too weak. We have here a formation like *himsammasa* Dh. 390 (10Ca. IV. 118 = *himsammasa*) "whose intention was the eye, that is gazing".

27 two relics of the Tooth and of the Almsbowl. With a heart
 as full of joy as if he had found a jewel like the wheel and
 the rest¹ or a great treasure, or as if he had attained Nirvāṇa,
 28 the Sovereign took unto himself the two relics and blessed
 like Maṇdhātā², he bore them with great celebrations from
 29 village to village, from town to town and brought them to
 the beautiful city of Jambuddhī where the pious people began
 30 a great and splendid festival. Now while the wise King day
 by day celebrated a great sacrificial ceremony for the relics,
 31 he thought thus: 'In order that if in future time another
 interregnum³ occurs, no evil from alien enemies shall befall
 32 these relics of the Sage, I will carefully provide for them a still
 33 more inaccessible place, fast and sure.' Thus pondering he had the
 Billasela⁴ (mountain) made fast on every side with walls, gate-
 34 towers and the like, that save by the gods in the air, it could
 not be trodden by any human feet. And on the summit of
 the rock he built a superb temple for the Tooth Relic,
 35 ravishing as a divine palace descended from the world of the
 gods. Around this he laid out a park for the community with
 36 divers pāsādas and maṇḍapas, delightful for taking an airing
 when passing the day or when passing the night therein,
 37 provided with lakes and bathing-ponds. In this relic temple
 the wise (monarch) had the two relics, Tooth and Bowl, carefully
 38 placed with great solemnity. After making over the park for
 the community to the faithful theras who were charged with

¹ P. *saṅghāsatthasūya*. This refers to the seven jewels which belong to the *goddaratta* or world ruler (cf. *Chūrasana*, n. v. *retained*); the first of these is *cakka* the wheel, as symbol of world dominion.

² See 37. 13 and note.

³ Should we not read *passa* instead of *para* in 31 b, or is *para* used with the same meaning?

⁴ Now *Beligala* (so Pāṇḍ., Rājāv. and Rājaraṭṭh.). This is the name of a hamlet in the Ūbha Pattava of the Kegalla District and of a Korde in the same district. The Beligala Korde is mentioned in the *Kajjain-pota* (H. C. P. Bell, Report on the Kegalla District, p. 2) as well as in the *Siri Laka-kajjayuru* (H. Sarnu, The Taprobaneum, June 1888, p. 56, 60). The rock of Beligala on which the relics were hidden resembles in isolation and steepness that of Yāpaka (cf. *Dana*, l. i., p. 26 f.).

the care of the relics, he decreed a regular offering of alms. Also he commanded that a sacrificial ceremony of surpassing 39 kind should be performed for the relics day by day in most perfect fashion.

Now in his faith the Sovereign set about rendering helpful 40 service to the Order of the perfectly Enlightened One. If one asks how (this was done), the account runs thus: Deeply 41 grieved in his heart that on the island of Lankā so many books that dealt with the true doctrine had been destroyed by the alien foe, the Ruler called together laymen endowed 42 with a good memory and with knowledge, pious, well instructed, free from indulgence and skilled in quick and fair writing, and 43 along with these, many other writers of books and made all these write down in careful fashion the eighty-four thousand divisions 44 of the doctrine and made over to them in accordance with the number of the divisions the like number of gold kaṭapapas¹. 45 He also performed a sacrificial festival for the doctrine and thus heaped up a fulness of merit. The theras and the middle-aged 46 and young (bhikkhus) and also the sūnaperas in Tishala² who had taken on themselves the burden of a life of discipline, all these protectors of the teaching of the Master he gathered 47 together and made harmony where there had been discord. And then the Monarch pondered thus: "The ceremony of 48 admission to the Order³ is the foundation of the prosperity of the Order. How would it be if I had it performed now in the right way?" And joyful at heart, he endowed the whole vast 49 reunited community richly with the eight articles of necessity⁴ and made them hold for seven days the ceremony of admission 50 to the Order which was preceded by offerings and honours

¹ This account is extremely significant for the history of the tradition of the sacred texts in Ceylon. It is found also in *Pūjāv.*, *Rājāv.* and *Rājānta*.

² This expression which refers to the threefold division of the island into *Paṭiṭṭhacattā*, *Māyācattā* and *Bolsaya* and which frequently recurs, is used here for the first time. Cf. note to 81.15.

³ *P. upasampadā*.

⁴ See note to 60.71.

51 instituted by himself. After the Ruler had laid out the park
 known to the world by his name of Vijayasundara and destined
 52 for the community¹, he made it over to them. In his chari-
 tableness the Ruler thought: "Bhikkhus and sāmaṇeras who
 53 study the Tipiṭaka in faith and lead in every way the pious
 life that springs from it, must never be troubled about their
 54 livelihood. They shall come to the gate of my house and
 receive whatever articles of use they are in need of." And
 he invited them full of reverence, and gave to the many
 55 bhikkhus who came to the portals of his palace excellent and
 56 costly offerings, well versed in giving. Then the King ordered
 farther for all ascetics who had reached the rank of therā or
 57 grand therā, regular maintenance². Thus in doing good to
 the Order the Monarch naturally honoured thereby the triad
 of the jewels — Buddha and the others.

58 In Vattalaḡāma³ the King had built for the bhikkhus in
 a perfect manner the vihāra called after his own name
 59 Vijayabāhu. In the vihāra Kalyāṇi by name, the Ruler had
 the vast and splendid cetiya which had been destroyed by the
 60 Damiṇa soldiers, made fast again and a golden finial put upon it,

¹ This monastery is also mentioned in Pāḷi, and Rājaraṭṭa, as a foundation of Vijayabāhu. In *Mhv.* 85, 90 it is called Sīrivijayasundara. It was situated in Jambuddhī.

² In the Rājaraṭṭa, which is particularly concerned with Vijayabāhu the following strophe is quoted in praise of the generosity of the King.

Cātuddisāyāḷajīnatānjānaṃ
 āpānabhūtaṃ gharuṃ āsi tassa
 yadichhitappaccayaḷbhakata
 devaddama cāsi mahāsaṃbhāva.

"For those sons of the Victor who came from the four regions of the heavens his house became the refuge, because there they received all articles of use as they wished. Like a heavenly tree was the sublime one". The "heavenly tree" is of course, the "wishing tree" (*śar. kalpa-druma*).

³ The building of the Vijayabāhu-vihāra is also related in Pāḷi, Rājaraṭṭa, and Rājaraṭṭa. The village of Vattala lies on the right bank of the Kelaniganga, a little above its mouth. Thus it is not far from the Kelani-vihāra whose restoration is also mentioned in the Sinhalese chronicles.

as well as a gate-tower on its eastern side. There too he restored 61
 whatever was decayed in the image houses, the encircling wall
 and the like and on all other (buildings). The King also gave 62
 the order that all pā-ādas, image-houses, vibāras, pariveṇas,
 and likewise cetiyas, maṇḍapas, outer walls, gate-towers 63
 and the like which were in Māyārāṭṭha, should be put into
 the condition in which they were formerly, and that new
 buildings should be erected.

Now as the King wished to accomplish himself still more for 64
 the furtherance of the laity and of the Order, he reflected thus:
 "At a time when I had already reached a great age and 65
 youth had vanished, I gained the good fortune of the royal
 dignity and have until now enjoyed it. Now after the destruction 66
 of all the evil foes who still remain over after the conquest
 and thereby to protect my people and after renewing the 67
 structures of the destroyed and decayed vibhāras to bring about
 the furtherance of my people — for that I have now but a
 short time." With such considerations the discerning Monarch 68
 together with those people versed in the lore of signs, tested
 the (bodily) signs of both of his own sons Parakkamabāhu 69
 and Bhuvanekabāhu and attained this knowledge: "The signs
 on Parakkamabāhu are such that he will in accordance there- 70
 with accomplish through the majesty of his power the
 destruction of the enemy and will unite all Laṅkā under one
 umbrella, so that none shall be above him; and that he will 71
 further the spotless Order of the Omniscient one; will spread his
 fame over the chief and the intermediate regions of the heavens;
 will receive from the most divers countries gifts as princesses for 72
 his women's apartments and the like, and will be for long a
 world ruler on the Island." When he realised this, with eyes 73
 filled with tears of joy, he made him sit on his knee and kissed
 him on the head. Then he gazed again and again full of love 74
 on the younger prince, who stood near, gave them twain much
 excellent advice, made them by training practised in all arts, 75
 accomplishments and the like. Then the Ruler entrusted of 76
 the twain his elder son to the assembled community at whose
 head stood the Grand master known by the name of Sarp- 77

gharakkhita. And again he entrusted the same (Uthera) with the two relics, the Tooth and the Almsbowl of the Sage, as also with the whole Great community and also with the people dwelling in Laṅkā and ruled this himself in perfect fashion¹.

79 After the Sovereign had in this manner sowed the royal seed in the wide field of Laṅkā, he entered heaven after a reign of four years².

80 Even as this Ruler of men, Vijayabāhu, protected the entire world of the laity and the Order of the Victor, so should all future rulers of Laṅkā protect both, bestowing on them security.

Here ends the eighty-first chapter, called 'The Reign of One King', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The meaning is that the King made Saṅgharakkhita Head of the Church and entrusted him with the education of the heir to the throne. As head of the Order Saṅgharakkhita had to look after the spiritual welfare of the people over whom the King exercised secular dominion.

² According to Rājāva, the King had reigned 34 years. But according to v. 65 he only came to the throne at an advanced age.

CHAPTER LXXXII

THE EXHIBITION OF THE MIRACLE OF THE TOOTH
RELIC

After the death of his father King Parakkamabāhu 1
 united the whole of the people who were in Tishala, adorned 2
 the fair town and as if he were the peer of the King of the
 gods, he first of all had the ceremony of the royal consecration
 performed. On account of his learning he himself received 3
 the famous name of Kalikāla-sāhica-sabbasūpupāḍita¹. On 4
 his younger brother Bhuvanēkabāhu he conferred the dignity
 of yuvarāja and made over to him a part of the kingdom.
 With the thought: I will make the maiden Laṅkā my own, 5
 to no other (shall she belong), he turned his proud spirit to
 the destruction of the alien foe. He thought: in the first 6
 place I will perform a sacrificial festival for the Tooth Relic
 of the Sage, then will I go forth to war against the
 Damiḷas, and with great pomp and ceremony he brought 7
 the Tooth Relic from the Billa mountain to the splendid town
 of Jambuddoḥi². "I have the desire at every moment when I 8
 think of it to worship the Tooth Relic with devotion at the
 three periods of the day" — so thought the Ruler and had built 9
 near his palace a fair and costly temple for the Tooth Relic.
 In the midst of this the King had a splendid throne set up 10
 and decked with a costly covering. Out of a large precious 11

¹ That is "the scholar who is entirely familiar with the literature of the Kali Age". The expression *sāhica* "art of poetry, literary work" = skr. *sāhitya*, was until now absent from the dictionaries. The Kali Age (*Kalikāla*, *Kalīyuga*) is the last of the four ages, the one in which we are living.

² Thus too Pūjāv. According to Rājāv., the king had brought the relic from Jambuddoḥi to Samiddhiyān.

stone the Ruler had a casket fashioned for the Tooth Relic
 12 and again as receptacle for this a large, superb, costly jewel-
 13 case of bright, valuable precious stones. Then for five thousand
 gold nikkhas¹ he had as receptacle for this case a second
 14 splendid chest fashioned, and then again for twenty-five thousand
 15 silver nikkhas a third chest. Now when the King starting
 with the relic temple, had adorned the town, and had devoutly
 16 celebrated a great sacrificial ceremony for the Tooth Relic, he
 took the Tooth in the lotus of his hand² and spake in the
 midst of the Great community the following solemn declaration³:
 17 "Our sublime Buddha, god of the gods, the Sage, strong in
 miraculous power visited this island of Laṅkā three times,
 18 and that most supreme of men went away, having sojourned
 here and there and having made of sixteen prominent places
 19 spots hallowed by his use⁴. Therefore it is that Laṅkā is not
 under the power of kings of a false faith, but under the power
 of kings of the true faith it flourishes in the right manner.
 20 Aforetime also on this island the Ruler of men by name
 Asela, son of the Ruler Muṭastra, wise in statecraft, conquered
 21 the Daniḷas Sena and Guttaka who carried on horse-dealing⁵

¹ P. *nikkha* or *nikkha* = ved. *niṣka*, is a weight with which the precious metals are weighed. According to Abhp. 480, 888 it seems to be equal to 5 *suvarṇas*. This would agree with the Indian reckoning which makes one *niṣka* (= 1 *pala* = 4 or 5 *suvarṇas*) equal to 56.675 gr. The figures in our passage are certainly a fantastic exaggeration.

² A frequent *vāpala*, Cf. Dandin 66 (note to 80. 60) *pāṇipāṇa*.

³ P. *saṃvāṇīyaṃ vā*. See note to 51. 56.

⁴ P. *parikkhagīṇa*. This is in the first place a term for relics which are revered as articles of use belonging to a saint, such as the alms-bowl of the Buddha. In contrast to these are the bodily (*parivāṇa*) relics, as for instance the Tooth Relic. Here places are called *parikkhagīṇa* because the Buddha by use (*parikkhagīṇa*), by sojourning there had hallowed them. The legend of Buddha's three visits to Laṅkā is related in Mhv. 1. The 16 places where according to tradition he sojourned on these occasions, are given by W. in his translation p. 277, note. The most important are Mahāpāṇḍya, Kelaniya, Adam's Peak, the sites of the various lakes in Anurādhapura, Tissamahārāma etc.

⁵ P. *asaṃvāṇīkaṇṭha* etc. W. translates "sons of the horse merchant" which is also possible. But *paṭṭa* may better be taken as a mere periphrase as in *kaṇṭhaṇṭha* etc. Cf. on the whole Mhv. 21. 10 ff.

by sea, and held sway while sheltering the Order of the Viator. Then the famous Great king Daṭṭhagāmaṇi Abhaya 22
 vanquished Kṣāra of the Coḷa country and protected the laity and the Order. Again the Monarch Vaṭṭhagāmaṇi 23
 vanquished in combat five very cruel Damiḷa princes and protected the laity and the Order. Then the Ruler of men, 24
 Dhātusena, subdued six Damiḷa kings with their countless great warriors, and sheltered the laity and the Order. Again 25
 the great Vijayabāhu put to flight in battle the Coḷiyas and the Damiḷas and protected the laity and the Order. Now I 26
 too have the wish to vanquish the insolent Damiḷas who have destroyed vihāras and other buildings and also the Order of the Master and still have their abode in Paṭiṭṭhāraṭṭha¹, 27
 the twain, King Māgha and Jayabāhu², and to further the laity and the Order. That is a true word and yet more I say: 28
 the highly virtuous, far-famed monarchs with the Kosala king 29
 at the head, heard from the mouth of the Master while he lived, the preaching of the doctrine and saw many a miracle and their wishes were (thereby) fulfilled. Rulers mighty in 30
 miraculous power like Dhammāsoka and the others who were born when the fully Enlightened One no longer lived, beheld 31
 divers miracles like the figure of the perfectly Enlightened One³ produced (in miraculous manner) and the like, and made each his life thereby rich in fruit. But when the Guide of 32
 the worlds, having fulfilled the task of a Buddha, in the region of the Mallas, outstretched on the couch of great

¹ See note to 31. 16. The Sinhalese form of the name is Piliṭṭirāṭṭa.

² It is clear that the reign of Vijayabāhu III. and the beginning of his son's reign fall within the 21 years assigned to Māgha in 80. 79. The younger Jayabāhu has so far not been mentioned, both names are in the Pāḷi, however.

³ What is meant are miracles such as that described in Dhva. 31. 20 ff. As Daṭṭhagāmaṇi is about to replace the relics in the Mahāthūpa the casket in which they are contained, rises in the air, opens of itself and the relics assume the form of the Buddha and perform the miracle which was performed by the Master under Gaṇḍa's mango tree in Sāvatthī. For the so-called *gamaṭṭappaṭṭhaviya* see DhCo. III, p. 206 ff.

33 Nirvana, came, as regards miracles, to the five great resolves¹,
 then assuredly the Exalted One came also to lesser resolves.
 34 From that day to this all the relics which exist, those of the
 body, as those associated with articles of use, perform through
 35 the power of the Master miracles here in this our world.
 When therefore the Guide of sages, coming to this and that
 36 resolve, saw (in spirit) in the five thousand years' duration
 of his Order, the future monarchs who take upon themselves
 37 the burden of faith and of moral discipline, then I think not
 that the Exalted One will not with the eye of omniscience
 have seen me also among them. But if I have been seen by
 38 the Incomparable One², if even I have been added to the
 number of these great men and rulers of antiquity — loyal to
 39 the faith in every respect — if I after destroying the alien foe
 in terrible war, may accomplish the furtherance of the holy
 40 and the Order, then may the Tooth Relic now perhaps make
 manifest to me a fair miracle." After these words he became
 lost in contemplation.

41 At this moment the Tooth Relic rose from the lotus of
 his hand, like to the crescent moon, in the air, assumed the
 42 glorious form of the Prince of the wise, diffused clusters
 of rays of light sixfold in hue, illumined the whole town,
 43 manifested thus a glorious miracle, enraptured the Ruler
 of men, returned from the air and settled again on his hand.
 44 With the shouts of applause and the songs of praise of the
 great crowd of people and above all of the Great community
 45 who rejoiced at the sight of the superb miracle of the relic,
 the whole town was at this time everywhere full of intense
 46 excitement. "This day I have gained life, this day my life
 has become of worth; this day hurrah! my life has become
 47 perfectly fruitful. Having by the power of my merit beheld
 to-day such a miracle and having also seen the blessing

¹ For the *pañcābhikkhūnapāṇesaka* see Mhvs. 17. 46 ff. In vv. 51-52 the miracle mentioned in the preceding note is foretold here. The lesser resolves refer to other miracles not included in the five great resolves, such as that expected now by the king.

² P. *etthāha* "of him who is so as he is and no other".

of merit richly earned by the people¹, I now have been enrolled 48
among those earlier rulers of men, famed for the fulness of
their virtues in this Order of the Sage." With these words 49
the Great king, great in insight and miraculous power, gave
forth a lion's roar in the midst of the vast assembly.

After the Ruler with the whole of his sixty-four 50
ornaments², such as the diadem, the bracelet and so forth
had made an offering to the Tooth Relic, he laid it carefully 51
in the jewel-casket and after placing this lustrous (casket)
in the golden chest he again placed this carefully in the fair 52
and costly chest fashioned of silver.

The Tooth Relic thus preserved in the best way in three 53
chests one within the other, he then placed in his relic temple.
For seven days long he celebrated with the (offering of the)
seven kinds of precious articles³, with great wreaths and
perfumes and with all kinds of food solid and liquid a great
sacrificial festival.

Here ends the eighty-second chapter, called 'The Exhibition
of the Miracle of the Tooth Relic', in the Mahāvamsa,
compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The blessing consists in the sight of the miracle taking place
before the eyes of all and of the effects which proceed from it. The
MSS. have *amphatam pakkāzavipaccham* and so has my edition. The Col.
Ed. alters it to **bhātā *paṭā*, but **bhātā* 'patray is acc. case and
depends, like *pāṭhāriyam* on *disā*. By the power of his merit the King
has seen the miracle and he has also seen the blessing of the people's
merit which shows itself therein that they were found worthy of the
same vision as the king.

² Cf. for this E. W. Perera, Ceylon Notes and Queries, III, April 1914,
p. XXXVI ff., where the enumeration of the regalia in the Sinhalese
Thūparāpa is discussed.

³ P. *ratnasakī valāhā*. The seven *ratnasakī* are: *surayya* (gold), *rajaṭa*
(silver), *muttā* (pearls), *maṇi* (precious stones like sapphire and ruby),
reḥṭṭa (a semi-precious stone (?) like cat's eye), *vajira* (diamond), *paraḥa*
(coral). See GUNARATNE, s. v.

CHAPTER LXXXIII

THE STORY OF THE SUBJUGATION OF THE HOSTILE
KINGS

- 1 Since all the inhabitants of Laṅkā had seen the effect of
the merits of the King, they lived from that time onward
2 filled with still greater reverence towards him, in fear, in joy
and in love, never were they capable of transgressing his
3 commands. All the sovereigns of the divers countries sent the
King gifts, since their hearts were inclined to admiration of
his majesty.
- 4 People whose heads were to be cut off he punished only
in stern fashion with dungeon and fetters¹ and then set them
5 free again. But for such people as deserved prison the Ruler to
whom pity was the highest, ordained some lighter punishment²
6 or other, and reprimanded them. But on people who should
have been banished from the country the Ruler who might
be likened to Manu, laid but a fine of a thousand (*kaṭupapas*).
7 But on all those who deserved a fine, he looked with in-
dignation and with all sorts of words of rebuke he made of
them honest men.
- 8 Then all these people, the forces of the foe in Laṅkā who
abiding in forest strongholds and elsewhere, had become
9 unconquerable by his father, the hero vanquisher of foes, the
King set about subjugating by the power of his majesty and

¹ *Kaṭupapaśāntaśāntamattatā* cannot be joined to *parimaccāgi*. In this case *papa* would be quite unintelligible. It belongs far rather to *niggaṇṭhitaśānta*.

² I think that *niggaṇṭha* *śānta* as well as *niggaṇṭhitaśānta* in v. 4 must mean a punishment and not a mere admonition. This is expressed by *śāntā* in v. 5c. But the punishment was always less severe than the guilty person had deserved. The same also in v. 4 and 7. In *niggaṇṭha*

by the might of his loving spirit¹. The Sihala kings in the 10
land of the Vanni who were equipped with army and train,
he brought completely under his influence, sitting merely on his
lion's throne². All the Sihalas with their lion-like courage who 11
dwelt in Tissahala³, these all the Ruler of men assembled around
him and made them content. Then he dared to overthrow 12
the great Damiḷa warriors who building great fortresses, had
settled here and there in the country. Of all the Sihalas who 13
on the field were as lions against rutting elephants — the
enemy — he sent some hither, others thither. The great 14
Sihala warriors wherever they came, harassed the Damiḷa
warriors as the Garuḷas the Nāgas⁴.

At that time the Damiḷa kings, Māghinda and Jayabāhu⁵ 15
had set up fortifications in the town of Pulatthi(nagara),
famous for its wealth, in the village of Koṭṭhasāra⁶, in
Gaṅgātaḷṅka⁷, in the village of Kākālaya⁸, in the Padi district 16
and in Kurundi⁹, in Mūcāmatta, in Mahātittā and in the
harbour of Mannara¹⁰, at the landing-place of Palacceri and 17
in Vālikagāma, in the vast Gona district and in the Gōnusu
district, at Madhūpādapatittā and at Sūkaratittā¹¹: at these 18

vāḍa (v. 7c) *viggaha* it is true, means "rebuke". That is after all the
mildest punishment.

¹ Thus by force or by kindness. As regards the construction of the
sentence, *paripenṭhiṇam baṇṇa* should probably be taken as in apposition
to *sabbe saṇḍaggaḍḍimāsitā*.

² Without recourse to force, merely by his prestige as sovereign.
For the Vanni cf. note to 81. 11.

³ See note to 81. 43.

⁴ See note to 75. 82.

⁵ Cf. 82. 27.

⁶ Situated not far from Pulatthinagara. See note to 61. 43.

⁷ Now Kantahai, see note to 70. 286.

⁸ "Crow's Home". The name does not otherwise occur.

⁹ The two names appear again in 88. 64 next to each other. In the
Siri Laka-kāḍḍayana (The Tippecanin 1888, p. 55) they are noted among
the districts of the Pākṣi-rata (Pākṣi(hū-rat(hu)).

¹⁰ Now Mantai and Mannar. See notes to 48. 81 and 61. 39.

¹¹ Of the six last localities only Madhūpādapatittā is mentioned
once more. It may be assumed that like the foregoing places, they
were all situated in Northern Ceylon.

19 and other places, and committing all kinds of violent deeds, had
 20 stayed there a long time. Their forty and four thousand
 soldiers, Damiḷas and Keraḷas, who had pressed by the spear-
 21 armed Siḥala warriors, were unable to resist, came terror-
 stricken to Pulatthinagara and held counsel thus as to their
 22 future conduct: "King Parakkamabāhu is of high majesty
 and has miraculous power. Who in the world is strong enough
 23 to neglect his commands? Even the monarchs of foreign lands
 24 have now come under his influence, also all the Siḥalas. Even
 some of us Damiḷas are his followers. What is the use of
 25 words about others? But what, what shall we people do? Now
 we have all become dim like glow-worms at the rising of the
 26 radiant sun. Therefore in the future it is impossible for us
 to take up our abode on the Siḥala island, we will go to
 27 another country." They took all their elephants and horses,
 as well as their pearls and costly precious stones, the royal
 28 diadems and all the beauties of the harem, all ornaments,
 clothes, mantles, baskets and every kind of valuable with them
 29 in their fear and began to leave the town. But owing to the
 action of the King's merit they mistook the regions of the
 30 heavens. They thought it was the eastern gate and marched
 31 out through the western gate² and came to Kālavūpi where
 the army of the Siḥalas had set up an entrenched camp.
 32 With all their goods they had alas! also to sacrifice their life
 by each giving his to the Siḥala warriors, thus carrying out
 33 themselves what the King had only thought. And all the Siḥalas
 taking from them their accumulated treasures, became from this
 34 time onward rich people³, as in ancient times all the dwellers

¹ Vv. 16-21 form one sentence. The construction is as follows: The 40000 soldiers of the two Damiḷa kings who after erecting fortifications in such and such places, had been settled there for a long time, came and held counsel.

² The mistake of the Damiḷas is, of course, nothing but a fiction of the compiler. The intention of the mercenaries was to reach the western coast with their booty and there cross to India. At Kālavūpi the Siḥalas intercepted them. Pūjāv. gives the same account of the occurrence as the Cāḷukya; Rājāv. a different one.

³ P. सम्पन्न of pregnant significance in allusion to the *śampadaya* following in v. 31.

in Mithilā who gained the wealth which the kings a hundred in number, had through fear flung away¹. After thus accomplishing by his power the crushing of the alien foe, he set himself to bring about the prosperity of all Laṅkā.

When the eleventh year of the reign of this King had arrived, a king of the Jīvukas known by the name of Candabhānu landed with a terrible Jāvaka army under the treacherous pretext that they also were followers of the Buddha². All these wicked Jāvaka soldiers who invaded every landing-place and who with their poisoned arrows, like to terrible snakes, without ceasing harassed the people whomever they caught sight of, laid waste, raging in their fury, all Laṅkā. Just as flashes of lightning with floods of water (visit) a place destroyed by lightning with flames of fire³, so Laṅkā which had been harassed by Māgha and others was ravaged anew by the Jīvukas. Then the King sent forth his sister's son, the heroic Prince Virabāhu, with soldiers to fight the Jīvukas. The fearful Rāhu, namely Virabāhu, with his terrible appearance completely destroyed (the moonlight, namely) Candabhānu in the fields of heaven, namely in the battle⁴. He placed his

¹ Cf. W., note to this passage. The story alluded to here is related in the Ummaggajūḷaka (Foesman, Jāt. VI. 389 ff.). Through the cleverness of the Bodhisatta the inhabitants of Mithilā capture the possessions of 101 kings against whom they had been fighting. Cf. Jāt. VI. 409²⁸: *teṇ paṭṭhāya ca kira Mithilavaseṇa sahitāniṇa jātā*. To get the proper construction in our passage the words *gathā parā* must be joined to the following and not to the preceding as is done by W., for which *an ten* or *gathā* in v. 34 would be indispensable.

² P. *aggaṭṭhā*, followers of the Sogata, the guide to the path of salvation. The Pūjāv. also mentions Candabhānu as the leader of the Jīvukas. According to Rājāv. his soldiers were Damilas.

³ The *pāraśastā* and the *nirāśani* are contrasted. Both are devastating thunderstorms. In the one case it is the kindling flashes of lightning that cause the destruction, in the other the floods of ruin causing inundations. W.'s translation "Fury of a flood of water" and "fire and lightning" seems to me weak, as it takes *agant* at first in its derived and the second time in its original signification.

⁴ A picture suggested by the name of Candabhānu ("Moonshine"). Rāhu is the demon who causes the eclipses. We have again to do with

heroic Sihala soldiers here and there and began to open fight
 44 with the Jāvaka warriors. The good Sihala warriors, sure in
 aim, the archers, shattered in pieces with their sharply pointed
 45 arrows, in the battle the countless number of arrows whizzing
 against them with their poisoned tips which were shot swiftly
 one after the other by the Jāvaka soldiers from a machine¹.
 46 Going forth to the combat like Rāma, Prince Virabāhu slew
 47 numbers of Jāvakas, as Rāma (slew) the Rakkhasas. The
 Veramba wind², namely Virabāhu, possessed of great vehemence,
 shattered again and again the forest wilderness, namely the
 48 Jāvaka foes. After thus putting to flight the Jāvakas in
 combat, he freed the whole region of Laṅkā from the foe.
 49 Hereupon he betook himself to Devanagara, worshipped there
 the lotus-hued god³ and celebrated for him a divine sacrifice.
 50 He had erected there a *praveṇa* that was intended for the
 Order; it received the name of Nandana⁴, since it was the
 51 delight of the people. Thereupon he turned and came to the
 town Jambuddheṇī, he sought out Parakkhamabāhu, and he
 was overjoyed.

compounds of the *vāpaśa* order (skr. *Virabāhu* *cca* *Rakṣa*). See notes to 80. 69, 82. 14. According to the *Rājāḍi*, however, it was not the sister's son but the younger brother of the King, who vanquished Candraśāma.

¹ *P. pantaṃutte* (*laṅga*). Something apparently like the ancient catapult. *Mhva.* 72. 251 mentions huge stones being hurled from such machines.

² *Veramba* is the name given to strong winds which blow in great heights (cf. PTS. P. D. i, v. 1). The corresponding word in Skr. is *vairambla*. A synonym for *verambasāta* is *kalacata*.

³ That is "the blue-coloured". Name of Viṣṇu. Cf. 82. 85 ff. Devanagara (or-pura) is the present Dandera, Sinh. Devanagara. The place has been already mentioned in 60. 59 and 75. 47, but here for the first time we have a notice of the shrine of Viṣṇu celebrated in the Middle Ages. According to tradition it was built in 799 A. D. It was plundered and destroyed by the Portuguese in 1588 A. D. See P. E. Pears, Ceylon and the Portuguese, (= P. 2) p. 109 f. It is significant that Virabāhu offered his sacrifice of victory in a Hindu sanctuary. At the same time however, he builds a *praveṇa* for the Buddhist Order, thus putting his attitude towards their parity beyond doubt. Even to-day a Hindu *devālaya* and a Buddhist *vihāra* stand side by side in Dandera.

⁴ That is "joy, delight, ecstasy".

Now after he had thus carried on divers great wars and 52 after he had scattered the terrible crowd of all his foes, the great and mighty Sovereign Parakkamabāhu attained the fame of victory¹.

Here ends the eighty-third chapter, called «The Story of the Subjugation of the Hostile Kings», in the *Māhāvamsa*, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ South Indian inscriptions give an essentially different picture of the reign of Parakkamabāhu II. from our chronicle. According to these, Ceylon was invaded by the Pāṇḍyas about the middle of the 13th century. They say that of the kings of Ceylon one was killed and another forced to pay tribute. This shows that Parakkuma never united the whole island under his dominion. H. W. Conington, *HC*, p. 77, 87.



CHAPTER LXXXIV

THE SERVICES RENDERED TO THE ORDER

1 Thereupon the Ruler, versed in the ordinances of Manu,
 caused to be determined to what families the villages, fields,
 2 houses and so forth long since seized by the alien foe, belonged
 by heredity, and had them returned to their aforesaid owners
 3 as before. Then he caused to be determined which villages,
 parks and the like were the property of the Buddha and the
 Doctrine, which (were) the assigned maintenance villages (for
 4 ordinary needs), which the villages belonging to the Chapters,
 which the villages which were personal possessions, which
 (were) the villages of the eight sanctuaries¹ and the villages
 5 of the pariveśas and had them given back. Further he appointed
 the five groups of menials and the ten groups of menials
 belonging to the royal household and determined their rank².
 6 While the Ruler made all the inhabitants of Laṅkā wealthy
 and possessors of fortune, he took care that the whole country
 7 had abundant food. All the corrupt groups (of bhikkhus) who
 since the Interregnum lived only for their own desires, following
 forbidden occupations³, with senses ever unbridled, he sought
 8 out rigorously, dismissed them (from the Order) and thus
 9 purified the Order of the perfectly Enlightened One. Then
 the King sent many gifts to the Coḷa country⁴ and caused to
 be brought over to Tambapanni many respected Coḷa bhikkhus

¹ P. *atthāyatunagāṇaṅkē*. It is difficult to say what is meant by this. For the explanation we must look above all to v. 175.

² See Mhya. 87. 58 and note.

³ Professions which are not fitting for the sramāṇa are enumerated in Dīgha-Nik. I. 1. 10 (= I. p. 5) Cf. R. O. FAHNE, Dīgha Transl. p. 7, n. 2.

⁴ The same account in Pāḷi.

who had moral discipline and were versed in the three Piṭakas 10 and so established harmony between the two Orders¹.

Then when the Kuler learned that among the many high- 11 principled bhikkhus dwelling permanently in Tambaraiṭṭha² there was a Grand therā, Dhammakitti³ by name, radiant in 12 the glory of moral discipline, and that once when this therā was on his mendicant round, a lotus flower had blossomed on 13 his path, he was filled with admiration and sent a religious gift, incense, sandal-wood, food and the like which had been in contact with the Tooth Relic and likewise a choice and 14 princely gift⁴ to Tambaraiṭṭha. He made the Grand therā 15 come to the island of Laṅkā, rejoiced again and again, as if he had beheld⁵ the Perfect One, celebrated for him a great 16 sacrificial festival and provided him who was a (worthy) vessel for offerings and honours⁶, in careful manner with an offering of the four necessities. Now in order to provide 17 for the protection of the Order furthered by him, the Great king built round about his capital for the eight Grand theras 18 who dwelt in the eight sanctuaries⁷ and for the discerning theras dwelling in villages or in the wilderness of the forest,

¹ These are the Hinayāna and the Mahāyāna. The first school had its principal seat in the Mahāvihāra, the second according to Mhvs. 78.21 ff., in the Abhayagiri and Jetavana vihāras. Cf. also W., note to the passage. See now S. PARANATTFANE, Mahāyānānaṃ in Ceylon, C. I. S. G. II. 1, p. 35 ff.

² Probably a province in Southern India. Pāṇ. has instead Tambalingum. It would appear from the Rājā, that Candrabhānu came from Tambalingum. So also H. W. CARRINGTON, H.C., p. 77.

³ The name of Dhammakitti recurs several times. According to WICKHAMSTON, Catalogue of Sinhalese MSS. in the Brit. Mus. p. 21 b, 35 b, the Dhammakitti of this passage was the compiler of the first continuation of the Mahāvamsa.

⁴ W's translation "and other royal gifts" is incorrect. Here *dhamaṃpabbhata* and *rajaṃpabbhata* are contrasted with one another.

⁵ Not as W. has it: "as if he had seen an Arhat". Pāṇ. has *bhūtaṃ vāhataṃ dāṭṭvā* etc.

⁶ *Pāṇasakkhārabhājanam* belongs to text in 16 d. For the figurative meaning of 'bhājanam' cf. note to Mhvs. 44.70.

⁷ See above note to v. 4.

19 many communal monasteries, suitable for dwelling in, extensive
 embellished with divers *pāsādas*, provided with various *maṇḍapas*,
 20 furnished with divers bathing-ponds, adorned with cloisters which
 were places of sojourn by day and by night, surrounded by
 21 a series of flower parks and tree parks and granted them to
 them. Further he celebrated with all articles of equipment a
 22 great sacrificial festival. Thereupon the King gathered together
 the Great community of the (*bhikkhus*) dwelling in villages and
 in the wilderness of the forest and chose out all those who
 strove continually for the keeping pure of moral discipline,
 23 those who took upon themselves pious duties and were tried
 in the leading of their life in the strictest way¹, who were
 endowed with the virtues of renunciation and so forth and
 24 were steadfast in the precepts for the conscientious. He built
 for them on the heights of the *Paṭabhāṭṭa*² rock a forest
 dwelling, assigned it to them and supported them therewith.
 25 As they made of the strictest conduct a reality, he made
Luṅkā through them in his days as it were, an abode of
 26 arahants. With the reflection that *theras* who were acquainted
 with the sacred texts were rare in the Island, he had all books
 27 brought from *Jambudīpa*, had many *bhikkhus* instructed in
 the sacred texts, as also in all sciences, such as philosophy,
 grammar and the like and thus made of them cultivated people.
 28 In this manner furthering conduct and learning, the wise
 (prince) honoured with such a religious sacrifice the Guide to
 29 the path of salvation (*Buddha*). The Ruler caused his
 younger royal brother, *Bhuvanekabāhu* by name, to be in-
 30 structed, so that he was versed in the three *Piṭakas*. He
 made him carry out the precepts for the *theras* and hold
 lectures of instruction thereon. But to the many *bhikkhus* who
 31 hearkened he granted in the midst of the Great community
 their appointment as *theras*, and presenting them with all
 articles of equipment, he celebrated an offering for the *theras*.
 32 Seeking for an occasion fraught with blessing, in order to

¹ P. *lakkhaṇapattipatti*, of. v. 25. The compound is missing in the PTS, P. D.

² In *Paṭāy, Paṭābhāṭṭa*.

reach by the noble eight-fold path the saving shore from the ocean of re-births¹, he had built in the third and sixth, then again in the eleventh, twelfth and seventeenth, as also in the twenty-first, twenty-seventh and thirtieth years of his reign thus eight times, a vast hall (resting) on sixty pillars². Round about it he erected a great and splendid maydapa. This again he had adorned with divers coloured stuffs and made numerous groups of bhikkhus abide there by turn for the purpose of rest. Day by day full of zeal, he did them honour with a great festival of gifts in his name and granted to many sāmaṇeras admission to the Order. Then following on this, he conferred on bhikkhus the highest rank, namely the dignity of a thera, Grand thera and the like³, and accumulating many important wares⁴ of great value and many beautiful articles of equipment even to the measure of a king of elephants, the Ruler first presented to those who had attained the rank of a Grand thera, articles of equipment worthy of a king and then allotted to all the ascetics who were theras and to those who had been dismissed from the dependance on a teacher⁵, and to the others in their order, the eight articles of equipment⁶.

¹ The section v. 32 to 41 is absent in the Pāṇis. The *atthasāṅgikamagga* consists of the eight members: *sammādiṭṭhi* "right insight", *sammāsaṃpajña* "right thought", *sammāśīlā* "right speech", *sammākkammaṇa* "right doing", *sammāgīṇa* "right gaining of livelihood", *sammāvedagāma* "right endeavour", *sammāsaṃti* "right deliberation", *sammāsamādhī* "right spiritual concentration."

² The same 89, 49.

³ W. renders *āyatambhika* as little along with *thera* and *soḷāṭhara* "incumbent of temple". But this seems to be contradicted by v. 40 *mahātheraāyatambhika* "rank of a Grand thera." *Āyatan* must therefore be combined with *thera* and *soḷāṭhara* in v. 38.

⁴ P. *garabhaṇḍa* also 85, 105.

⁵ P. *nisayya*. By this is understood the relation between an older bhikkhu, the *apavāṇa* and a younger, the *anāraṇa*. The first has to instruct the second in all details of the monastic life and the younger must take the older as his model. He who has finished his course of instruction is *nisayyasaṃvutto*.

⁶ See note to 64. 71.

- 42 Thus the King, the best of men, celebrated every seven
 days the great and superb festival of the eight bestowals¹,
 43 and later celebrating several times over the festival of admission
 into the Order, he made the Order of the Victor prosperous.
 44 Thus the King by granting it in this way manifold support,
 caused as the moon² the ocean, the good Order of the Tathāgata
 — the king of the true doctrine — to grow in perfect fashion.

Here ends the eighty-fourth chapter, called 'The Services
 Rendered to the Order', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the
 serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The expression *atthaprasaṃpatti* must refer to the offering of the
attha parikkhama (v. 41). *Upasampatti* is not the same as *upasampadā*
 "admission to the Order". It is to this festival which took place later
 (*parichā*) that v. 43 alludes. In 89, 90 *upasampatti* is also used in
 connection with the distribution of articles of use to the bhikkhus,
 while the celebration of the *upasampadā* takes place later (v. 63).

² P. *amūḍhama*, skr. the same, lit. "mine of nectar". Cf. for this
 verse E. W. Perera, The Sinhalese and Spring Tides, in Ceylon Notes
 and Queries I, Oct 1913, p. XVI.

CHAPTER LXXXV

THE PERFORMANCE OF ALL KINDS OF PIOUS WORKS

Hereupon the Ruler of men built in the splendid, incom- 1
parable, glorious town, by name Sirivaddhana¹, his birthplace,
a vihāra exceeding rich and vast². It was furnished with 2
pāsādas and maṇḍapas and with high walls and gate-towers,
adorned with bodhi trees, with cetiyas, with groves and image
houses, bright with all kinds of paintings³ and embellished 3
over and over with ornaments. Then he had the stretch of 4
road from the town of Jāmbuddhi to the town of Sirivaddhana
levelled in the length of half a yojana and the breadth of an
usabha⁴, so that it was fair as the surface of a drum, and 5

¹ It is now generally recognized that this Sirivaddhana has nothing to do with Kandy (cf. Conze, *The Identification of the Sirivaddhanapura of Mahāvamsa*, Chap. LXXXV., JRAS. C. B. XII, No. 43, 1892, p. 200 ff.). It was situated according to v. 4 only half a yojana from Jāmbuddhi-Bambukdeniya. All my MSS. have in v. 4 *āṣṭhapaṇṇama*², not *atthapaṇṇama*³ which must be assumed, if we adopt W's translation: "about eight yojanas". If the *yojana* of the Mhes. is the usual Indian *yojana*, then the distance between the two towns is about 4 1/2 miles. Pāṇ., if the printed text can be relied on, has *viṣayodanā*.

² P. *visāvaṇṇakāra* ("possessing great riches") *vibhāṣikāra*. There is just a doubt whether we have to take the subst. as appellative or with W. as a proper noun. I adopt the former and that with reference to the Pāṇ., where we have *rajanakāraṇṇakā* "one great King's Monastery". Thus we must of course read in v. 56 *atthapaṇṇama* but *vibhāṣa*.

³ P. *vāṇikamāṇasittha*; cf. *cittakāra* "varied painting".

⁴ In the line *āṣṭhapaṇṇama āṣṭhapaṇṇama* *āṣṭhapaṇṇama* the *āṣṭhapaṇṇama* refers evidently to *āṣṭhapaṇṇama* and *āṣṭhapaṇṇama* to *cittakāra*. The first is the length, the second the breadth of the road. An *usabha* is equal to 20 *yaṭṭhi* = 140 *ratana* or *kaṭṭha*, (roughly = 18 inches), thus 210 ft. = 64 metres. The Pāṇ., gives a very detailed description of the festival of the transference of the relics to the new monastery.

caused it to be strewn throughout its length with fine white
 6 sand and adorned on both sides with many flags and pennons
 strung high by which the sun's rays were warded off, with
 7 rows of banana stems and with numbers of filled jars which
 contained decorations of flowers and were fair with their
 8 bright painting. On the whole of this free tract he had erected
 9 at a distance of every five cubits a royal arch and at a distance
 of every ten cubits an arch of stuff as well as at a distance
 of every hundred cubits¹ a large *pāsāḍa* covered with variegated
 10 painting, with a high point, three-storeyed and furnished with
 11 an image of the perfectly Enlightened One². Then he decorated
 the *vihāra*³ round about the walled-in district of the monastery
 12 with many and vast arches which were fair by reason of their
 variety and gleamed with the grace of the arch of the King
 of the gods⁴, — further with white umbrellas which resembled
 13 the picture of the full moon, — with banners five-fold in hue
 and of divers form, which were fair as heavenly dancers who
 14 dance in the court of the atmosphere — with rows of *maṇḍapas*
 set with jewels that sparkled everywhere, which possessed the
 beauty of a series of many palaces descended from the world
 15 of the gods — with rows of figures of Brahma, that danced
 in lines holding white umbrellas and were beautiful because
 16 they were worked by a mechanism⁵, — with divers-hued
 mechanical figures of the gods which moved to and fro with

¹ Thus at distances of 7½, 15 and 100 ft. *Toraga* means the arch spanning the street on festive occasions. As to *pattatoraga* we must think of the framework of bamboo stalks as being covered with coloured stuffs. We are not told what the *rājatoraga* looked like.

² From *tata* (end of v. 9) to v. 10 one sentence. Pred. and subj. are at the end. The King erected 1) *rājatoraga*, 2) *pattatoraga*, 3) *mahāpāsāḍa* on the levelled surface (*samīkātātale*) between 1. and 2. To the loc. *tāle* belong the attributes in 6 cd and in 7 d (*śatpāṇatē*); to this last belong the instr. in v. 6 and 7. In v. 9 the loc. *samīkātātale* is rendered collective by *cāsanāpā vīpūlakāse*.

³ I anticipate obj. and pred. in 19 d.

⁴ The rainbow is considered Indra's weapon. Stress is once more laid on the variegated colouring of the *toraga*.

⁵ Lit. "beautiful by the contrivance of a machine".

hands folded before the brows, — with rows of mechanical 17
 figures of horses which ran hither and thither and possessed
 the grace of rows of raging waves of the sea, — with elephants 18
 wearing the ornaments of elephants, which were (likewise)
 mechanical figures feigning to be clouds descended to the
 earth: — with all these and other votive offerings which called 19
 forth ecstasy in people he embellished the vihāra. Then again 20
 he made the whole of the inhabitants in Lankā take up their
 position in a circle round the vihāra, filling the space of a
 gāruta¹ and giving forth shouts of praise, and glorified the 21
 virtues of the perfectly Enlightened One. To these (he added) 22
 the bhikkhus and the sāmaṇeras as also the lay brethren and
 the lay sisters, bearing flowers destined as offerings for the festival
 of the Buddha and (lastly) all the other men and women who 23
 were acquainted with the merits of the three (sacred) objects²,
 with votive offerings in their hands, adorned with all their
 ornaments. Thereupon the Monarch himself decked out in all 24
 his ornaments, accompanied by his four-membered army, urged
 by his faith, placed the two relics, the Tooth and the Bowl, on 25
 a costly chariot, adorned with every kind of chariot ornament.
 Then one by one he had displayed before him³ divers votive
 offerings, such as flags of gold and flags of silver, golden 26
 vessels and silver vessels, fly-whisks of gold and fly-whisks
 of silver, chests of gold as also silver chests, golden fans and 27
 charming silver fans, golden bowls with lotus flowers⁴ and 28
 bowls of silver with lotus flowers, filled jars⁵ which were 29
 fashioned of gold and such as were fashioned of silver and
 so on; and afterwards holding a great sacrificial festival with 30

¹ See note to 73. 134.

² See note to 37. 214.

³ P. *paratā paritiso* (v. 29), that is in single groups or divisions before he himself started.

⁴ P. *puṭṭhavaragga*, i. e. "lotus-pond". We must imagine the basins in which the flowers were home as being oblong in form like small bathing-ponds.

⁵ In the *puṇḍarikāṇḍa* which are either carried or set up on festive occasions one sees now specially often the yellow-gold blossoms of the areca palm.

31 these divers (offerings)¹ ever and again to the sound of the
 five musical instruments², he by degrees brought (the relics)
 on this decked out road to the town of Siriraddhana. After
 32 carefully laying them down in the midst of the vihāra in a
 spacious maṇḍapa on a covered Buddha seat, he set about
 33 making the various people³ celebrate a sacrificial festival. In
 the morning all people who had a true thirst⁴ for meritorious
 works, adorned with their ornaments, venerated the Tooth
 34 Relic and the Bowl Relic in religious devotion⁵, with divers
 kinds of flowers, such as jasmin, campaka blossoms, the blossoms
 of the ironwood tree⁶ and the like, distinguished by their
 colour and perfume, and which were mingled with flowers of
 35 gold. They venerated them with heaps of aromatic rice which
 gleamed like a collection of the long since amassed fame of
 36 the Great king. They venerated them with divers kinds of
 fruits, such as bananas, bread-fruit, mangoes and so forth,
 which were quite ripe, fragrant, lovely in colour, perfectly
 37 sweet. Then afterwards when the King himself had venerated
 the two most holy relics with all kinds of votive offerings, he
 38 likewise, true to the good custom, provided the bhikkhu
 community carefully with food and drink, with dishes solid
 and tender, with drinks that one sips and with those one
 39 drinks⁷. Thereupon the Ruler, joyful in heart, distributed to
 many hundreds of bhikkhus the eight articles of equipment

¹ P. *tehi dehi* (possibly *paññā* also) belongs to the following *kāraṇa* *maṇḍapajāṇa*.

² The five instruments are enumerated in Abhp. 189 ff. They are *ātata*, *vitata* and *ātatavitata*, drums stretched "on the one side", "on the two sides" and "wholly with leather", *sasira*, "flute, pipe", and *ghaṇa* "cymbal".

³ The various groups of people enumerated in v. 21—23.

⁴ P. *paṇḍasaṇḍa*. The word *saṇḍa* "drunkard" used here in a figurative sense, as also in *dhama-saṇḍatā*, Jāt. V. 482¹⁷ (PTS. P. D. s. v.).

⁵ P. *ābhūtiya*, see note to 74. 243.

⁶ P. *jāṭi*, *jasminum grandiflorum*, *campaka*, *michelia champaca*, *nilga*, *mesua ferrea*.

⁷ *Kāṇḍabbaṇḍe* is the more detailed explanation of *assa* and *peyya-peyye* than of *pāna* in the compound *assa-peyye*.

in great abundance. After that throughout the three watches 40
of the night he had the whole space round about the vihāra
lit up with many hundreds of thousands of lamps burning
fragrant oil, with lovely festoons of numberless, tiny, camphor 41
lamps (so that it was) like to the starry firmament. The 42
Monarch instituted a sacrificial for the Buddha¹. The festival
was ravishing by reason of the many exquisite dances and 43
songs of the dancers who on splendid stages² erected here
and there, performed while assuming different characters³,
divers dances and sang various songs. The noise⁴ of the 44
festival was increased by the sound of the five musical
instruments⁵ which produced the illusion of the roar of the 45
great ocean of his meritorious works⁶ that was so strong that
it surpassed⁷ the booming of the sea, while the drums shamed
the thunder-claps of Pajjanna⁸. The feast resounded with the 46
pious voices of the preachers of the good doctrine who placing
themselves on the preachers' seats carefully spread at divers
spots by the faithful, laid hold of the beautiful fans⁹ and 47
preached the good doctrine that went straight to the heart of

¹ Subj. pred. and obj. *mahipālo buddhapūjāya parattāya* stand at the close of the whole sentence in v. 51 c.d. The preceding verses contain attributes to the object *buddhapūjāya*, namely *manoharāya* (v. 42-3), *vinodhithāya* (v. 44-5), *ghoṣitāya* (v. 46-7), *manoditāya* (v. 48-9), *paṇṇithāya* (v. 50-51).

² P. *raṅgaṇaṇḍala* = skt. *raṅgaṇaṇḍala*.

³ What is meant are the different parts they play. The dances are always mimic in character.

⁴ The term "noise" must be supplemented from the foregoing. In the text itself there is only *vinodhithāya* directly related to *pāṇāya*.

⁵ See above note to v. 30-31.

⁶ Very doubtful. I take *bhāsa* to mean "error, illusion", which is also the meaning of the skr. *bhāsa*. W's translation cannot be reconciled with the text.

⁷ Skr. *dūrākaroti* can also mean "leaves behind it, surpasses".

⁸ Skr. *Parjanya* the God of rain and of the storm. Cf. Jāt. I. 331¹⁰ E.; D. N. II. 260¹¹; Mbv. 21. 31.

⁹ During solemn ceremonies the priest holds a fan in his right hand and great importance is attached to its being held in a dignified way.

48 their bearers. It was made beautiful by the jubilant cries¹
 of the four retinues (of the Buddha)² who ever giving grateful
 49 expression to their joy, went hither and thither praising un-
 ceasingly with cries of applause the merits of the three (sacred)
 50 objects with the words: O Buddha! O Doctrine! O Order! Its
 praise was proclaimed by the elders (of the clan) of the
 51 Balibhojakas³ arrayed in all their ornaments, who taking their
 stand at the divers regions of the heavens after the custom of a
 Nandin procured⁴ without ceasing the blessing of the Buddha.
 52 With the thought: even in the highest heaven the Prince of
 the gods celebrates such a festival for the Buddha, the Ruler
 53 had that same ceremony manifested here (on earth), and as
 former kings also, rulers of Sihala, had in their miraculous
 power held even such a sacrificial festival for the Enlightened
 54 One, so he showed it likewise at the present time to the
 dwellers in Sihala. And so with the words addressed as it
 55 were to all men: of such kind is the fruit on the wishing-
 creeper⁵ of the pāramitās⁶ of the omniscient (Buddha), he
 celebrated seven days long even such a great sacrificial festival
 56 for the three (sacred) objects. Then in making the great

¹ P. *siddhikāra*. Cf. note to 74. 223.

² These are the bhikkhus and bhikkhunīs, lay brethren and lay sisters.

³ See note to 38. 13.

⁴ P. *buddhasantiya karuntāhi*. The expression *santiya kar* (skr. *śānti*) shows that the task of the people was to fend off all influences emanating from evil spirits which might disturb the course of the festival. *Nandīśilpīparāśarasya* is in keeping with this, for in the Indian drama the *nāṭika* has in the prologue to deliver the introductory prayer (*nāṭika*) which is fraught with blessing. Cf. Sree Kosov, Das Indische Drama, p. 24. We can understand too why the elders of the Balibhojaka clan were entrusted with this office. The name signifies these animals, birds in particular, such as the crows that live on the *baḍi*, the daily sacrifice offered to the spirits. Such spirits are embodied in these birds and the sacrifice satisfies and conciliates them so that they do no harm.

⁵ Also in Skr. *kāṭyaṇṭha* along with *kāṭyaṇṭha* etc. of the tree of Paradise on which grows everything that gives joy and delight to mankind.

⁶ See note to 37. 180.

vihāra¹ the property of the community and in giving it over to the Order, he filled himself with merit and fame. Thereupon 57 the King erected a pariveṇa that was called by his name Parakkamabāhu, adorned with lofty pāsādas, granted the vihāra² the divers objects of use suited to it, as well as 58 several rich maintenance villages, and celebrated a great sacrificial feast.

The King made his yuvarāja³ erect in the Hillaṣeṭṭa-vihāra 59 the pariveṇa called Bhuvanekabāhu after him, embellished 60 with pāsādas, maṇḍapas and the like and then celebrated in the town called Sirivaṇḍiḥḥana in the manner described, with 61 all votive offerings with care seven days long a great sacrificial festival for the three (sacred) objects. But also in the splendid 62 town of Hatthiginipura⁴ the King made the same (yuvarāja) erect a vast vihāra, and after having built in his name a superb 63 pariveṇa, called Mahāmabindabāhu, he celebrated a great feast of sacrifice and gathered thereby merit. He restored the decayed 64 five-storeyed pāsāda built long before in the splendid town of Kalyāṇt by King Yaṭṭhalaṭissa⁵, and in repairing what was 65 destroyed by having it coated with stucco, he made it again as it had been originally. There too he restored in similar 66 fashion the temple of the recumbent statue of the King of sages and the temple of the Tīraṅka image⁶. There too 67 the Ruler had the spacious, four-square courtyard of the great cetiya laid with great stone slabs, making of it a perfectly 68

¹ See note to 85. 2.

² Namely the vihāra in which the Parakkamabāhu-pariveṇa was erected. Pariveṇa and vihāra are thus not used synonymously as W. thinks.

³ That is his younger brother Bhuvanekabāhu, see 82. 4.

⁴ I. e. "Elephant mountain town", now Kurunegala.

⁵ He was the son of Mahānāga who was the brother of Devāṇapīyāṭissa and founder of the dynasty of Rohaṇa, whence arose in the fourth generation Duṭṭhagāmaṇī. (Mhv. 23. 2 ff., 10 ff.). For Kalyāṇt see note to 61. 35.

⁶ Cf. note to 78. 38. The images named here are the same as those mentioned in the Sakkilakkisāṇḍera 68, to which PARANATITANK has already called attention. According to the Ss. there were two of these.

level surface, and then he erected in front of the (cetiya) a
 69 large mandapa. Further the Ruler with great and religious
 devotion held several times in that vihāra a sacrificial feast for
 70 the Bodhi tree, the cetiya and the Enlightened One, with votive
 offerings of flowers, lamps and food -- magnificent, abundant,
 spreading joy among the people, and acquired thereby merit.
 71 Thereupon the King granted to the vihāra for the purpose
 of holding a daily sacrificial festival of lamps, a large, fair,
 72 delightful garden of cocopalms which he had had laid out in
 his own name in the immediate neighbourhood of the vihāra.
 73 Then the two-storeyed, circular relic temple in the vihāra
 called Hatthavanagalla¹, erected² by the monarch Goṭṭābhaya,
 74 by name, on the spot where King Sirisamghabodhi gave his
 75 head as gift to the poor man³ — this temple the best of kings
 had repaired and provided with a golden point and made three
 76 storeys high. In the selfsame monastery he built on the spot
 where the corpse of his royal father had been laid down⁴ a superb
 77 cetiya. There too he had erected an octagonal image house and had
 78 a stone image of the Buddha set up in it. The glorious King heard
 that of that son of the Enlightened One⁵, the Thera Mahākassapa,
 79 who had received during the lifetime of the Enlightened One —
 the Guide to the path of salvation — the Master of the worlds —
 his most holy garment of rags as heritage⁶ and after his death
 80 had taken over the spiritual kingship and protected it — (that)
 of this Mahākassapa a single relic, a tooth, (existed and) in

¹ Now Attavanagalla on the small river of the same name, about 18 or 20 miles north-east of Colombo.

² Hatthavanagallavihāravamsa 9. 7 (p. 32 of the edition by Ariyaratne). Here the building is described as *Manoroma cetiyāna*.

³ *Mhv.* 96. 91 ff. should be compared with this. The history of Sirisamghabodhi's end is told in greater detail in the *Hatthavanagalla-vihāravamsa* 8 (p. 26 ff. of the ed.) and embellished with many miraculous tales.

⁴ Namely on the pyre. The corpses of the kings were disposed of by burning.

⁵ Buddha's disciples are described as his spiritual sons.

⁶ Cf. for this *Samyutta* 16. 11. 28 f. (II. 221), and the remarks to my translation of the S. N. II, p. 270 and 284.

course of time had come to Tambapanni and was now preserved 81
 in the vihāra of Bhimastittha in the province of Pañcayojana¹.
 Thereupon the King in whom there sprang up religious devotion, 82
 love and highest veneration towards that Thera², betook himself,
 surrounded by his four-membered army to the great monastery 83
 and after he had beheld there the splendid (relic), he celebrated
 full of joy with an immeasurable quantity of beautiful kinds
 of fragrant flowers and likewise with lamps and incense and 84
 heaps of rice, with great care for three days a sacrificial
 festival for the Tooth Relic. Then when the Monarch learned 85
 that in the sacred town of Devanagara which was a mine of
 meritorious works, the shrine long since erected to the lotus-
 hood god — the King of the gods, had now fallen into decay, 86
 he betook himself to the superb town and in rebuilding the 87
 dwelling of the King of the gods like to the heavenly mansion
 of the King of the gods³, he made of it an abode of all
 riches. Then the best of men had the town filled with all 88
 splendours even as the beauteous city of the gods⁴. Hereupon 89
 he determined to celebrate every year in the town an Āsāhi
 festival⁵ for the god.

Now the Great king betook himself to the splendid town 90
 of Jambuddopi. Here he had built round the Sirivijayasundara- 91
 vihāra⁶ erected by his royal father, a high wall and gate-
 towers and then had the three-storeyed relic temple restored⁷. 92

¹ Now Bentota on the coast between Colombo and Galle. For Pañcayojana see note to 57. 71.

² That is towards Mahākassapa. W. erroneously associates there with "the elder who had the charge thereof".

³ The word *devarājāśrīra* is twice used here. The temple of the King of the gods (Viṣṇu) in Devanagara is made as beautiful as the palace of the King of the gods (in this case Indra) in heaven.

⁴ P. *devanagarasya rāja* in allusion to its namesake, the town of Viṣṇu's shrine.

⁵ P. *āsāhī*, -īti is the name of the month June-July. The day of the full moon of this month was one of high festival even before the time of Buddha (Jāt. I. 50). Buddha was born on that day.

⁶ Cf. above 81. 51 where the monastery is called Vijayasundarārāma.

⁷ Cf. with this 82. 9 ff.

There he placed the Tooth Relic of the Great Sage on a raised
 93 throne of great value and celebrated in the order described
 above, for seven days a great sacrificial feast for the three
 (sacred) objects which procure every conceivable blessing. With
 94 the wish to have daily before his eyes a figure of the Guide
 to the path of salvation, as rejoicing to the heart as the
 95 figure of the living Master, the Lord of men had portrayed¹ by
 numbers of specially skilled painters on a great tablet a splendid
 96 Buddha figure, showing² the Exalted One as he took when alive
 an airing in a large jewelled cloister set with divers precious
 97 stones. Hereupon the King of high renown gathered together
 the whole Order of the bhikkhus dwelling on the island of
 98 Laṅkā as well as a multitude of people and celebrated in the
 town of Siṅgaḍḍhama in the manner described earlier, for
 seven days a great festival for the Buddha.

99 Now when the Great king heard that unimaginable bless-
 ing attaches to a kaṭhina³ offering, he thought, joyful of
 100 heart in faith: "In honour of the eighty greatly glorious
 disciples⁴ of him who is alone the bridge over the shoreless
 terrible ocean of the circle of rebirths, who alone is the
 banner of the Sakya clan⁵, whose dignity is venerated by the
 101 people of the whole world, the Wise, the King of the wise,
 the Master, the preserver of the world, the seer, who is master
 (of his senses), the kinsman of the world⁶, the kinsman of

¹ P. *maṅḍalitapate* ... *lakkhaṇa*. Probably the picture was painted on a piece of stuff. In the Pāṇḍya, where the picture is also described, the expression *putikaṇa* is used, according to Cronan, "piece of cloth on which an image of Buddha is painted". Dhv. 27. 18 ff., relates that the picture after which the Lohapāsāda was built, was designed on a *paṭa*.

² Lit. a Buddha figure like the Exalted One walking ... taking an airing in a cloister. The *ev* in 95 c is disturbing. Perhaps one should read *ev* (= *eva*).

³ See note to 41. 43. Parikkamabāhu's kaṭhina offering is also related in Pāṇḍya and Rājya.

⁴ See note to 37. 176.

⁵ Round the banner (*ṛeta*) the clan gathers; the word is therefore used figuratively for "leader, chief, the highest". Cf. skr. *manavanasaṅkata*, Raghuvamśa 2. 38. The Buddha represents the acme of the Sakya clan.

⁶ P. *lokaḥandhu*. So called on account of his world-embracing love.

the sun¹ — (in honour of his eighty disciples) I will give a 102
 great and splendid kaṭhina offering of eighty (robes).² The wise 103
 (prince) then called together the whole of the men and women
 dwelling on the island of Laṅkā and made them all carry 104
 out in the shortest time the whole of the work (for the making)
 of (these) garments beginning with the preparation of the 105
 cotton. And on one day he gave away together with all the
 useful and important wares³, the eighty kaṭhina robes. But 106
 after he had prepared all this and versed in offering, had
 distributed it among all the theras dwelling in Tambapanni⁴,
 he held for the eighty great disciples, for each one of them, 107
 on the same day, eighty great sacrificial feasts. In this way 108
 he often bestowed many kaṭhinas on the Great community
 and increased thereby his great merit.

And the King thought several times with longing joyful 109
 through faith: "I will dedicate to the Enlightened One the
 royal dignity of Laṅkā." He adorned in fitting manner his 110
 royal palace like the palace of the Lord of the gods and
 the town like the city of the gods. Then he placed the Tooth 111
 Relic of the Great Sage (Buddha) on a costly lion's seat which
 he had fashioned in the royal abode, and with divers fly- 112
 whisks and umbrellas, with divers jewelled crowns, with divers
 ornaments and robes, with divers heaps of jewels, with divers 113
 elephants and steeds, with divers infantry and chariots, with
 divers beatings of drums, and divers sounds of shell trumpets, 114
 with divers flags and pennons, with divers rows of banana
 trees, with divers bowls of milk⁴, with divers trees in blossom,
 with divers splendidly fragrant wreaths, with divers superb 115

¹ P. *āśvinaśāmbhū*. Because like the sun he illumines the whole world, at the same time also because (cf. W., note), the princely house of the Sakya is said to belong to the dynasty of the sun. The synonym *āśvinaśāmbhū* is a frequent name of the Buddha. Buddhaghosa explains it in *Sattasālpāṭa* 215 by *āśvinaśāmbhū* (Hansen Sutra, *Paranāṭṭha-jotikā*, p. 562).

² See 84. 29 and note.

³ See note to 86. 25.

⁴ P. *āśvinaśāmbhū*. Lit. "pools of milk". The explanation is similar to that of *saṃpāpakkāraṇa* in 85. 28. See the note.

116 palanquins, with divers kinds of excellent rice, with divers
splendid kinds of cake, with divers superb lamps, frankincense
and perfumes — with all these and other votive offerings
117 worthy of a king, he celebrated with care, after assembling
the Great community of the bhikkhus dwelling on the island
of Laṅkā for seven days a great sacrificial feast.

118 The best of kings also betook himself with his four-
membered forces to the Samantakūpa¹, this forehead jewel of
119 the rock mountains. There he venerated the foot-print — to
be venerated by gods and other beings — of the highest God
120 of gods², the King of truth, the Master. Round about the
monarch of the mountains he granted to the extent of ten
gāvutas³ the land rich in various precious stones and thickly
121 peopled with men and women, in religious devotion to the
sacred foot-print and sacrificed to it again with ornaments of
jewels.

122 Thus did the discerning King who had faith in the Buddha,
amass a great quantity of meritorious works as bridge for the
crossing of the ocean of the circle of rebirths, or as ladder
with which to reach the highest heaven.

Here ends the eighty-fifth chapter, called 'The Performance
of all Kinds of Pious Works', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled
for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The pilgrimage to Adam's Peak is mentioned in the Pñjāv.

² The title *devatideva* for the Buddha which already occurs in
Mhva. I. 57, points again to a later stage of development. Cf. note
to 60. 65.

³ That is about 20 miles.

CHAPTER LXXXVI

INCITEMENT TO THE PERFORMANCE OF ALL KINDS OF PIOUS WORKS

Thereupon the King thought: "Since I now wield the royal 1
dominion over all Laṅkā, it is indeed for me a heavy burden¹
to make pilgrimages hither and thither and to venerate 2
according to one's desire the hallowed places, to perform daily
meritorious works and to care for the welfare of the world.
But which of my dignitaries has the capacity to accumulate 3
a blessing of merit which would be equal to my aspiration
and to care (likewise) for the welfare of the world? Now 4
there is my dignitary Devappatirāja by name, a true believer
in the Buddha, the Doctrine and the Community. When he 5
striving after the dignity of a Guide to the path of salvation,
made the firm resolve², straightway there sprang from the three 6
eyes of a coconut planted by him three shoots. Once when
he beheld a poor man he to whom mercy was the highest,
gave him all his possessions together with children and wives 7
and uttered the wish: I will be a Buddha. Therefore when 8
he shall have heard my wish he will fulfil it." So thinking,
he had him summoned and spake to him thus: "By swamp, 9
mountain and wilderness as though created by the powerful³,

¹ P. *bhāra*. The idea is this: the meritorious tasks which I have taken upon myself are too much for me alone. I must look round for helpers who will work with and for me with the same ideas and objects.

² Namely that the miracle described in 5cd and 6ab should be manifested as sign of the fulfilment of his wish to become one day a Buddha. Cf. 50, 65, 85, 119 and notes.

³ P. *varasathin*. An epithet of Māra, also in *Thūpavaṃsa* 66^u, with

unwelcome Māra, the road leading to the Sumana mountain¹ is at many places obstructed, (made) inaccessible and causes difficulties to the people of the eighteen provinces who make a pilgrimage thither in order to accumulate blessing by venerating the footprint of the Sage. Do thou therefore make it accessible. Further: I have heard that in the vihāra called Hatthavanagalla², at the spot where a Grand thena gifted with miraculous powers, making through the majesty of his merit earth and air to resound with thunder, attained the dignity of an arahant, a five-storeyed pāsāda with a roofing of golden bricks erected by King Upatissa³, has in the course of time fallen into decay, so that now nought but the pillars remain. Do thou also restore this in my name. And just as King Nissanka laid out a garden of fruit-trees in the Bhinnatitthavihāra⁴, do thou also plant in the same manner in my name a large garden full of cocopalms and other trees". With these words he entrusted him with each single meritorious undertaking⁵.

Devappattināja agreed with "aye!" and betook himself in the first place to Gaṅgāsiripura⁶. There he had fashioned a magnificent image of Sumana⁷ furnished with all the fair bodily signs and decked it out with ornaments of gold and jewels. But after that he wished to visit the Samantakūṭa⁸. He took the image of the god (Sumana) along with him in

reference to the *parvāṇamāraṇṇasiddhānta* who are Māra's retinue and are themselves described as Māras.

¹ Name of Adam's Peak.

² See 85. 73 and note.

³ We do not know which Upatissa is meant, for neither the first king of this name (37. 179 ff.) nor the second (41. 6) has such a building ascribed to him.

⁴ See 85. 81 and note. There is an account of the parks laid out by Kittisivaṇṇa in 40. 25 (and in the *Bhūjāv.*).

⁵ We must of course write *tanpaṇṇapāṇṇakriyāsa*.

⁶ According to *Pūjāv.* = Gampala, now Gampola situated about 11 miles to the south of Kandy. Cf. 88. 48, 90. 107.

⁷ The local guardian spirit of Adam's Peak. See *Nhva.* I. 33.

⁸ = Sumana-kūṭa. See note to 60. 64.

festive procession¹, set forth, betook himself first to the village 21
 Bodhitāla and began from here to build bridges. Here at the 22
 mouth² he made a large and magnificent bridge of thirty-five
 cubits, and over the Khajjotana³ one of thirty cubits, likewise
 at Ullapanaggāma one of thirty-six cubits, at Ambaggāma 23
 one of thirty-four cubits in length⁴. (The bridges were) very 24
 strong and good so that elephants, horses, cattle and buffaloes
 could pass over them. And above each single embankment of 25
 the bridges he had fair houses built, adorned with lofty pillars
 and the like, had invitations sent to numbers of bhikkhus, 26
 gathered them together at different places, distributed among
 them abundant alms and celebrated a great sacrificial festival.
 He built rest-houses, finished the building of bridges, laid 27
 down at the remaining places frequent stepping-stones⁴, had 28
 the wilderness cleared and (in this way) a great road built.
 Then he betook himself to the Samsatākūṭa, showed veneration
 to the sacred footprint, set up in the courtyard of the cetiya 29
 of the sacred footprint the image of the god (Sumana) and
 erected a mapḍapa for the holy footprint. Round about it he 30
 had a wall built, and discerning as he was, had the mapḍapa
 fastened with strong chains to iron pillars in this wise to 31

¹ P. *saṃvāsaṃ saba*. Pāḷi. has *paraṇāsa* "with a procession".

² P. *maḥḥaḍḍāruvāhi*. The mode of expression is not quite clear. W. translates: "and nigh unto the mouth of the Khajjota river he built a bridge . . . and . . . across the same river". This is indeed difficult to reconcile with the original text. We have to think of these bridges as causeways between the rice fields (cf. *saṭṭhaṇḍa* in v. 25). The numbers are, taken in order, roughly 52, 45, 64, 51 ft.

³ Derappatiṇṇa proceeds from Gampola up the left bank of the Mahaveliganga. Ullapanaggāma is the modern Ulapana (4 m. from Gampola on the crow flight). Ambaggāma is the present Ambingamaya (6 m. from Ulapana). The Khajjota river is called in Pāḷi, *Kajjotādirī-hoya* (we have to read *thas* instead of *-hoya*). Sinh. *Kajjotādirī* means "glow-worm", like the P. *Khajjota*. It is curious that the farther course of the road is not described. It probably led over to the valley of the Kadaliḡma river and then ascended this valley. See note to 60. 66 and below v. 41.

⁴ At marshy spots where no causeway could be built, to give firm foothold.

secure it, and then again he sacrificed for three days to the
 32 sacred footprint with lamps and the like. He himself placed
 on his head a lamp with fragrant oil, and venerating again
 33 and again in the name of his Master the Great king and
 walking round the sacred footprint with his right side towards
 34 it, he spent the whole night. Hereupon he had this whole
 occurrence in its true sequence from the beginning written
 35 down on a lofty stone pillar and had this monument of the
 glory of the Great king of kings Parakkamabāhu set up
 36 with rejoicing. Thereupon he informed the King of the whole
 occurrence by the mouth of a messenger and sent (the mes-
 sage) off, since his wishes had been completely carried out.

37 After that Devapputirāja betook himself to the Hattha-
 vanagalla-vihāra and had erected there at great cost, in the
 38 manner commanded by the King, a three-storeyed *paśāda* with
 a lofty point and gave it over to the Grand master¹, the wise
 39 Anomadassin by name. Then he celebrated according to the
 order of the Great king, an almsgiving and had a stone
 inscription put up.

40 Thereupon the High dignitary betook himself to the
 landing-place *Bhūmatittha* and built at the mouth of the
 41 *Kālanadi* a bridge of eighty-six cubits². Then after building
 at *Kadalisenagāma*³ a bridge of a hundred staves⁴ and over
 42 the river of *Sālaggāma* one of forty staves⁴ and over the

¹ P. *mahāsāma*. Cf. with this note to 63. 23. Anomadassin was the Superior (abbot) of the monastery.

² The *Kālanadi* is the present *Kaluganga*. The length of the bridge is about 129 ft., the mouth of the *Kaluganga* is however considerably wider than that.

³ If *Kadalisenagāma* is the same as *Kudaligāma* in 66. 66, the building of the bridge was a continuation of the road to Adam's Peak. The identity of the two is however very questionable. W. suggests *Kehellenava* in the Kalutara District, Rayigama Korale. Pūjāv. has *Kāleśāvara*.

⁴ The calculation according to *patthi* "rod, measuring rod" here is curious. According to 78. 63 (cf. the note to the passage) a *patthi* equals 5 *mathas*. The two measurements in v. 41 would accordingly be 750 and 500 ft. respectively.

Sālapāḍapa swamp one of a hundred and fifty cubits¹ and in addition to these other bridges here and there at difficult places, and numerous parks and sermon halls, he celebrated 43 once more a great festival of almsgiving.

And again the High Dignitary of the King had laid out 44 from the Bhimatiṭṭha-vihāra as far as the landing-place (of the Kāḷanadi)² on a space a *yojana* broad, a great garden of 45 cocopalms, called after Parakkumabāhu, beautifully shady and rich in fruit. Then having all the work in the different 46 districts, such as the spinning of the cotton and so forth, undertaken and finished in a day, the highly-famed one 47 presented the bhikkhu community with six and twenty kaphina robes and celebrated therewith a great sacrificial festival. Giving in like manner, he wandering around here and there, 48 presented the bhikkhu community once again with sixty-six kaphina robes.

Then he had the whole of the vast forest called Ma- 49 hālabujagaccha³ cleared by the roots, a fine village built there and in its neighbourhood a large grove of jack-trees⁴ planted. 50 Then he erected there in the name of the King an image house of three storeys, surrounded by bodhi tree, cetiya, park 51 and encircling wall and celebrated a great sacrificial festival. Having thus performed in the name of his royal Master⁵ much 52 meritorious work, he informed the King of everything on his return.

Now was the King filled with great affection for him. He 53 made the village called Mahālabujagaccha and other villages built by him his hereditary property and granted them to 54

¹ Roughly 225 ft. W. gives the number as "fifty". He has overlooked the *saka* in *sataśatthabāṇa*.

² Kāḷamuditiṭṭha, now Kalutara. Cf. 56. 12 and note. The distance between Bentota and Kalutara is 12 miles. The breadth of the plantation would be 9 miles, if the Indian *yojana* is meant.

³ Pāḷi, *Mahālabujas samvāsa mahāsamaya*. Sinh. *del* is the name of the bread-fruit tree *artocarpus incisa*. — P. *labaja*.

⁴ Pāḷi, *assanayaka*. Sinh. *kaṣa* is *artocarpus integrifolia*. — P. *panasa*.

⁵ P. *cāyāśāsanāmāsa* stands here in the same sense as *mahārājasa* *śāsanā* in v. 32 or *mahārājasaṃyoga* in v. 39 or *cāyāśāsanā* in v. 51.

him. Thereupon he betook himself with him to the temple
 55 of the 'Tooth Relic and spake thus in the midst of the
 community: "This my most excellent dignitary has at all
 times been true of heart to me and to the three (sacred) objects.
 56 Therefore because activity for the welfare of the Buddha and
 of the King was for him the highest, is he dear to me and
 57 precious. Therefore will I with a gift dear to me make a
 sacrifice to the 'Tooth Relic". And he dedicated the excellent
 dignitary with wife and children to the Tooth Relic of the
 Sage.

58 In such wise did the protector of the middle world from
 that times make that same most excellent Devappatirāja
 celebrate continually with many costly votive gifts, sacrificial
 festivals to the world-extolled Triad of the jewels.

Here ends the eighty-sixth chapter, called «The Incitement
 to the Performance of all Kinds of Pious Works», in the
 Mahāvamṣa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the
 pious.



CHAPTER LXXXVII

THE HANDING OVER OF THE BURDEN OF DOMINION

Now once upon a time when through the influence of evil 1
 planets a great heat arose in Laṅkā by which everything was 2
 burnt up, when the corn withered and a famine was inevitable 3
 and the whole of the people dwelling in Laṅkā were filled 4
 with the greatest anxiety, the King gave orders for a splendid 5
 festival to be held for the three (sacred) objects, for the cetiyas 6
 and the bodhi trees and for the protectors Metteya and other 7
 miracle-working highest deities¹ who were to be venerated by 8
 various offerings, and even to turn the whole of Laṅkā into 9
 one great festival². After antecedent sacrificial ceremonies, he 10
 gathered together the Great community of the bhikkhus, caused 11
 them recite the Paritta³ and bear the Tooth Relic of the 12
 Great sage round the town in fitting manner, the right 13
 side turned towards it, and made (in firm faith) the resolve: 14
 the heavens shall rain. Thereupon great clouds gathered on 15
 every side, flashing with lightning and again and again 16
 thundering, so that it was bliss for the ears of all people, 17
 and they began to rain, destroying the glowing heat, making 18
 19

¹ For *devatādeva* used here of the future Buddhas at the head of whom stands Metteya, cf. note to 85. 119.

² The construction is difficult. W. merely translates freely according to the sense. We must take the words *kārapetvāna* and *mahāsaraya* twice, first *uttamaṃ mahāsarayaṃ kārapetvāna* (namely for the things and persons mentioned in 3 and 4) and then *sabbam Laṅkam ekam mahāsarayaṃ kārapetvāna*. For this last cf. idioms like *raṭṭhaṃ pē' eka* "pure murder and bloodshed", M. II. 244²; *ekabbāsa dānaṃ sabbā cūḍaḍḍa*, Mhvs. 74, 219, JāCo. V. 194³ etc.

³ See note to 45. 5.

joyful the people, driving away the famine, beautifying the country and reviving the corn¹.

10 "By the power of the Buddha do these rain-clouds pour
11 forth such rain, making joyful our hearts. Who therefore among
12 gods, brahmas and men is capable of understanding how great
13 are these excellent qualities of the Buddha? But our King
14 also is mighty and strong in miraculous power, a king like
15 to him there has not been and there will not be." With such
16 words ever and again repeated, the dwellers in Laṅkā praised
17 the excellence of the Monarch of sages and also the excellence
18 of their King.

14 While in this wise the King protecting Order and laity in
15 justice and filling with precious contents his own character,
16 enjoyed for long the good fortune of the royal dignity, he on
17 one occasion summoned to him along with his sister's son, Vira-
18 bāhu, his five capable sons — Vijayabāhu, Bhuvanekabāhu²,
19 Tibhuvannanalla, Parakkamabāhu and Jayabāhu — and began in
20 this wise to give these six advice: "Dear ones, hearken to
21 my words: there are here in the world these three (kinds) of
22 sons: the low kind, those of like kind, those of higher kind³.
23 Now those who know not how to enjoy at its true worth⁴ the
24 wealth of their parents which has come to them as a family
25 heritage, but destroy it, as monkeys a wreath of flowers, and
26 now live without wealth — the pious ancients have called 'sons
27 of a low kind'. But those who enjoy such possessions as they
28 have received them in like manner as their fathers, protecting
29 them as a family heritage, these ye must know are the (sons)

¹ The removal of a drought by the exhibition of the Tooth Relic is also described in the Rājāv.

² The two brothers Vijayabāhu and Bhuvanekabāhu are mentioned together in an inscription found in Yāpahu. H. C. P. Bell, ASC. 1911-12 = S. P. III. 1915, p. 63.

³ Lit. "lower (similar, higher) born or become". Cf. *skr.* *apajāta* and *anujāta*. The three kinds are distinguished in the same way in the *Itivuttaka*, p. 63¹, 64¹. For *anujāta* cf. also DhCo. I. 178¹.

⁴ P. *gappānerakkata*. W's translation "by a virtuous life" is too weak and too general. The idea is: they are not conscious of how valuable is the heritage that has come to them, they squander it frivolously.

of like kind.' But yet another kind I name — those who 22
besides the possessions taken over as family heritage, acquire
thereto many other possessions and as prudent people enjoy 23
in happiness — these are known as the 'sons of higher kind'.
From my father I have inherited alone (the province of) 24
Māyāratt̃ha¹ but have now again conquered the two other
provinces and brought the three kingdoms completely under 25
one umbrella. All the Damiḷas who were for him invincible,
I have vanquished and all the kings of the Vanni² dwelling 26
here and there in mountain and wilderness I have brought
over to my side. Having spread my fame everywhere also in 27
foreign lands, I have for long held sway in just fashion. I 28
have brought hither king's daughters from Jambudīpa with
gifts and thereby made the nobles in the foreign land your
kinsmen. The heroes of the Paṇḍus and the Coḷas, the kings 29
sprung from the dynasties of the Sun and Moon, have sent
me diadems and ornaments. Also have I gathered together 30
without ceasing a mass of jewels which can be enjoyed not
only by all of you here, but even in future time by seven
generations of my descendants, even as the (god) Kubera 31
(gathered together) his nine treasures, the shell and the rest³.
I have put down the evil-doers and protected the honest and 32
brought unanimity to the Order of the Enlightened One.
Therefore have I become for my royal father a higher born 33
son, be ye also my sons, like me, higher born sons. As in 34
days of old the sixty thousand sons of King Sāgara⁴ of the
race of Okkāka, built as many towns, divided all land in 35

¹ See notes to 81. 15 and 46.

² See note to 81. 11.

³ The nine treasures of Kubera are, according to Arva (Skz. Rag. Diet. s. v. *varaviddhi*; cf. also *Amarakośha*, ed. W. L. Srinivas Panikar, v. 142): 1) *mahāpadma* "great lotus flower", 2) *padma* "lotus flower", 3) *śrīḷhka* "shell", 4) *mahara* "dolphin", 5) *kacchapa* "tortoise", 6) *vaṭakaṇḍa* "a particular precious stone", 7) *banda* "jasmine", 8) *nīla* "sapphire", 9) *dhara* "dwarf". The names are also personified as names of genii who are guardians of the treasures in question. Cf. Hopkins, *Epic Mythology*, p. 143.

⁴ For the legend of the Sāgaras, see *Mahābhārata*, III. 106 ff.

Jambudīpa into sixty thousand parts and held sway each for
 36 himself in harmony; — further as aforetime the ten brothers,
 the kings, divided Jambudīpa into ten parts and ruled in wise
 37 fashion: so shall ye, my sons, divide this Laṅkā and supporting¹
 38 one another as is fitting, hold sway in able fashion, but never
 expose a weakness to the enemy." In this wise he admonished
 his own sons and his sister's son.

39 Hereupon he summoned the Great community in great
 numbers² and the King asked them: "Which of these six
 40 princes, my sister's son and my own sons, is worthy of the
 royal crown?" When the Great community heard these words
 41 of the King, they expressed themselves thus: "O Great king
 thy princely sons and this thy sister's son are all capable
 42 men and well instructed; they are all practised in fighting,
 crushers of the alien foe and worthy of the royal crown as
 43 protectors of the laity and the Order. But thy eldest son
 Vijayabāhu has from childhood believed with joy in the triad
 44 of the jewels. His heart was ever set on the care of infirm
 bhikkhus, he was trust-worthy, grateful, gifted with the merits
 45 of faith and discernment. He was a support for such as had
 no support, ever abounding in pity for aged people and
 46 suffering creatures. Many kinsmen by marriage of the bhikkhu
 community who had become enslaved during the period of
 47 alien dominion³ and many other people he freed from their
 slavery by the gift to their masters of gold, precious stones
 48 and other valuables. Many thieves who had committed thefts
 even in the royal palace, turned to him when punishment

¹ The reading of the MSS. *pāyati* ought not to be changed into *sāyati*. I assume that *pāyati* has here a cumulative meaning "to make go, to further, to support".

² Not "the chief priests and the people", as W. has it. *Mahājāṇam* is in apposition to *mahāsanghaya*. The "people" have nothing to do with the question of the succession. In the sequel it is the priesthood alone who give the answer. Cf. also v. 71.

³ P. *vijāyatarā*. See note to 81.1. It is the time of the reign of Māgha (and of Jayabāhu, 82.27, 83.19) that is meant. W. has misunderstood the passage in translating "when he took the government into his hands".

overtook them. They gave up their anguish and their fear 49
 and unharmed, without suffering the loss of a limb¹, their
 lives were spared. 'When O King! he beheld the people who 50
 went forth to each village to collect² the taxes due to the
 King, he gave his own money, freed thus from various dues 51
 all people in distress and protected them continuously, veiled
 in the protection of subjects. Also many of the Śīlaka kings 52
 of the Vanni whom thou wast desirous of subduing, sought him
 out first and then only did they fearless pay their visit to thee.
 'Ye must henceforth serve for ever with devotion³ Vijayabāhu 53
 who will in the future protect the continuation of our race,' 54
 thus are the wives in the families of the dignitaries wont in
 all reverence to admonish their husbands. When fathers and 55
 mothers, fain to listen to the sweet infant voices of their two
 year and three year old children, ask them: 'Whom do ye 56
 serve?' they say: 'We wish to serve Vijayabāhu'. Children 57
 beaten in wrath by father and mother come to him and tell
 their woe. Then Vijayabāhu makes the parents come to him, 58
 exhorts them in his pity to beat their children no longer and 59
 lets them have from his own storehouse the necessary food
 for their various children. How canst thou O King, — even 60
 as a man who gifted with seeing eyes, looks at the heavens
 where the full moon stands and yet asks where is then the
 full moon? — knowing as thou dost that in Vijayabāhu the 61
 merits dwell which constitute the ornament of the royal dignity,
 yet ask the Order? Learn then O Great king! that he 62
 possesses the lucky signs to hold sway not only over Laṅkā-
 dipa but even over Jambudīpa."

After the Ruler had heard of these and his many other 63
 merits from the mouth of the community, his eyes became
 moist with tears of joy thereat. Full of contentment he 64
 summoned to him his son Vijayabāhu, made him sit on a seat

¹ P. *abigahāsi*.

² Wrongly translated by W. It is not a case of people embroiling the taxes, but of the revenue officers who wished to collect them.

³ P. *seṅgharāṇā*. Cf. with this the term *bhāṇi* = *shr. bhāṇi*, note to 71. 243.

65 (like his own) near him, and then the Great king informed
 him of all that must still be carried out for the laity and
 66 the Order and which had not yet been done by himself. "The
 Ratanavali-cetiya¹ destroyed by alien foes, thou shalt restore
 67 and adorn it with a golden point, Polatthinagara, that splendid
 ornament of all towns," which was the ancient royal city of
 68 the Sthala sovereigns, do thou restore as it was of yore, with
 high walls and gate-towers, with four gates well distributed,
 69 and surrounded by a deep trench; and do thou bring thither
 to the former relic temple, fair as a heavenly palace, the two
 70 relics of the Tooth and the Bowl. In this royal city of former
 kings I wish myself to celebrate the high festival of the royal
 71 consecration. But do thou bring the whole bhikkhu com-
 munity in great number², dwelling in the three Sthala pro-
 vinces, to Sahassatittha³, let them there after antecedent
 72 sacrifice, celebrate in the Mahāvalikagangā the festival of ad-
 mission to the Order and thus make the Order of the Victor
 prosperous.

73 After speaking thus and otherwise of all that was to be
 done for the laity and the Order, he gave over the burden
 of government into his hands.

74 And further the King entrusted him with the five remaining
 sons of the royal house, and the two sacred relics of the holy
 Sage, the Tooth and the Bowl, as also with the host of the
 ascetics, with the group of all the dignitaries and also the land
 of Laṅkā.

Here ends the eighty-seventh chapter, called 'The Handing
 over of the Burden of Dominion', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled
 for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ See note to 80. 63.

² P. *sabbapuggatibādhā*. The word *tittha* ("badge of a sect") has here
 (as so often the skr. *tilaka*) a figurative meaning "ornament, adornment".

³ For *bhikkhusaṃghaṃ mahājanam* cf. note to v. 89.

⁴ Now Dastota, a ford over the Mahāvaliganga south of Polonnaruwa.
 That the bhikkhus were fond of performing their ceremonies in a
 building erected in the water at some distance from the bank is well
 known. Dastota was at that time a spot considered especially sacred
 where such ceremonies were performed with great pomp, as is shown
 also in 69. 47 ff.

CHAPTER LXXXVIII

THE REBUILDING OF PULATTHINAGARA

Fearless in heart, King Vijayabāhu gave his consent and I look over the burden of the government. Now he thought: "I will show my father so long as he is in life, that I am a son of the higher kind." And he probed ever further: "Who is there now fitted to be the element 'friend' among the seven elements of government, as ruler, minister, friend and the like: trustworthy, a clever counsellor, a comrade in misfortune, who speaks the truth, who is good to me?" And he realised: "There is the Ādipāda Virabāhu, the son of my father's sister, well-bred, adorned with virtues, skilled in all tasks. Since the time when we played (together) in the sand till to-day he has showed the highest confidence in me and in (all) good people. He cannot bear to stand anywhere if he does not see me, and I also cannot bear to take a seat without seeing him. He is at pains even as I, to further the laity and the Order, richly dowered with mental and bodily power. Therefore is he fitted for the element friend". He summoned him to him and entrusted him with the position of a devoted friend.

¹ The *śāstra* *rajyogāni* are enumerated in Abhp. 350. They are: *śāmi* "ruler, monarch", *amāta* "minister", *sakhā* "friend", *kośa* "state treasure", *digpāṇi* "frontiers", *rajya* "land, kingdom" and *balava* "army". In the Kauṣṭhīya, they are enumerated at the beginning of Book 6 as the (*śāstra*) *pratyakṣa*: *śrāṇyamaṇyagānapudasturyakubādhayamātrāṇi*. Why J. J. Meyer in his translation should have left out *kośa* (p. 397) I cannot understand. Cf. Ib. p. 399²⁰, as well as R. SHAMASASTRY, Kauṣṭhīya's Arthashastra, trsl., p. 919. In Śaṅkara's Abhidhānapadīpikāśūci a verse is quoted from Kāmandaki in which the same terms are grouped together.

- 10 Then he thought: "Now I must perform a meritorious
 11 work — splendid, sublime, rejoicing the heart. I was entrusted
 12 with the two relics, the Tooth and the Bowl. For these I
 13 must now build a new temple. On the other hand, the an-
 14 cient relic temple erected by my royal forefathers¹, has fallen
 15 into decay. 'This I will restore.' With this consideration, he had
 16 fetched from all parts many groups of artists experienced in
 17 every branch of art and many other workmen; and erecting
 18 new structures doubly as fair to look at as the former build-
 19 ings, he completed the whole temple of the Tooth Relic, so
 20 that it was beautiful as a heavenly palace; placed there the
 21 two relics of the Enlightened One and ordered his own guard
 22 to institute day by day a great sacrificial festival richer than
 23 aforetime, for the relics. From this time onward the King
 24 succeeded in making the love of his royal father (for him)
 increase continuously, twofold and threefold.
- 18 Thought the Ruler; my royal father shall have no grief
 arising from the separation from his sons, and he made his
 19 two younger brothers, Parakkamabāhu and Jayabāhu, dwell
 20 continually near their father. Hereupon he summoned his
 21 younger brother Tilokamalla and placed under his command
 22 all the Sinhala troops quartered in the space between the town
 23 of Jambuddoṇi and the southern sea and made him take up
 24 his abode in Mahāvattīhalagāma², to protect his royal father
 on the south. Then he reflected: "In the north, foes coming
 from the opposite coast are wont to land in Khuddavāligāma.
 Who is so fitted to protect this side — perilous, since it is
 here that fighting is wont to begin — as my brother, the Prince

¹ P. *pitaraṅgaṇi*. W. translates "by the King, my father". He evidently regards *vāṇi* as a plur. assist. I believe however, that the term applies to Vijayabāhu III. and Parakkamabāhu II. What is meant is the relic temple in the Vijayavandana-vihāra in Jambuddoṇi which is said in 85. 91-2 to have been built by Vijayabāhu III. and renewed by Parakkamabāhu II.

² Perhaps identical with Vattīhalagāma mentioned in 81. 56. The difference in the writing may possibly be explained in this way that *vattāla* is the pure Sinhalese form, while *vattāla* is adapted to the Pāli.

Bhuvanekabāhu?" The Ruler summoned him therefore, made 25
 over to him the great army that stood in the north and 26
 commanded him to take up his abode in Sundarapabbata¹, in
 order to protect his royal father from this quarter. But the 27
 King himself armed, marched with Virabāhu hither and thither,
 crushed all villains, made Lanka free from the briers (of the 28
 enemy) and after getting his father's permission, he set forth
 with the intention of restoring Pulatthinagara.

Now at this time the Great king Parakkamabāhu, as if 29
 borne on the great wave of his love for his son, set about
 accompanying his son, full of sympathy, travelling everywhere 30
 after him, although the son did not wish it. Then the son ever 31
 and again forced his father in reverent manner to return, he
 himself going on his way. Then his father issued the order: 32
 "All people who cherish love for my son let them accompany
 him." When they heard these words of his, then all the high 33
 dignitaries of the King and all the generals, all the great 34
 hero warriors and all the elephant drivers, all the riders and
 all the charioteers were filled with the greatest joy. "Now our 35
 Bodhisatta Vijayabāhu² sets forth to restore the royal city of
 Pulatthinagara. If he goes we shall go with him at once." Thus 36
 they spake and started forth well equipped to accompany him.
 When a certain number of dignitaries, soldiers and others, 37
 out of laziness, were not minded to go, their wives said to
 them: "Ye, our lords, may come with us or not, at any rate 38
 we are going with the King who seeks the best, and we shall 39
 dwell with him in the newly restored, splendid town". And
 they set forth therewith on their way before them. Even 40
 children deserted their fathers, if they would not go with
 them and followed the King. When the King beheld the great 41
 crowd of people setting forth, each deserting his village, his
 house and his comfortable possessions, he persuaded them 42
 again and again in his great anxiety, and induced all those

¹ The same as Subhapabbata or Subhagiri = Yāpaba.

² The influence again of the Mahāyāna. Cf. 50, 45, 55, 119, 56. 5.
 Also in Rājaputa. and Nik. s. the King is called Bārat Vijayabāhu.

43 whom it was right to induce, to return. Then he betook
 himself with the four-membered army in the desired strength,
 44 to the great and loftily situated fortress of Vātagiri¹. After
 building a splendid royal palace on the summit of this mountain,
 45 surrounded by an extraordinarily high wall, he stored there
 in case of need, the whole of the great treasure given over
 46 to him by his royal father. Thereupon he built on the same
 high rock a fine monastery for the community, invited the
 47 Grand therā, the head of the Mahānēttappāsāda-shrine², made
 over to him the splendid monastery, celebrated a great sacri-
 ficial festival and established a regular offering.

48 Hereupon the King went forth to Sumanakūṭa, venerated
 the footprint of the Sage (Buddha) and betook himself there-
 49 after to Gaṅgāsiripura³. There in the ancient vihāra that bore
 the name Nigamaggūmapāsāda, he saw to the restoration of
 50 what was ruinous and decayed, established for the bhikkhus
 dwelling there a regular almsgiving and came thereafter to
 51 Sindhūravāṇa. Here the King erected the vihāra called Va-
 naggūmapāsāda and after building there in the name of his
 52 royal father⁴ the pariveṇa called Abhayarāja, he granted it
 the various articles of equipment, villages, fields and so forth.
 53 Then the Monarch betook himself to the splendid Hatthigiri-
 pura⁵. While here in the great vihāra built by his princely uncle
 54 (Bhuvanekabāhu), he gazed along with Prince Virabāhu⁶ and
 his army again and again at the ever to be honoured spot
 55 where his corpse was laid (on the pyre), he felt anguish and
 gained there again and again the inner conception of imper-

¹ Vātagirika is in the Kegalla District. Cf. note to Mhvs. 38. 31.

² A Mahānēttapabbata is mentioned in Mhvs. 50. 74.

³ Gaṅgopala. See 85. 18.

⁴ The pariveṇa is not called after his father Parakkumbāhu II. Here it is the case of a patti (see note to 42. 50). The merit is transferred to the dead king.

⁵ Kurunegala. See 85. 62 where mention is made of the building of the Vihāra by Bhuvanekabāhu, the younger brother of Parakkumbāhu II.

⁶ Cf. 85. 41 ff.

manency'. Hereupon he erected there a splendid, three-storeyed 56
 image-house and had made for it a great image of the Buddha.
 Then having had further a fine statue of his uncle fashioned, 57
 he set it up there adorned with all ornaments. The Ruler 58
 assigned (his foundation) fine maintenance villages fitted for
 their purpose, lying around the image-house, as well as numbers
 of people for service, and decreed for it (the foundation) the 59
 name Bhuvanekabāhu-pariveṣa, using for it the name of that
 (uncle). Then after he had settled the town (Hatthagiri) densely 60
 with men and women, he had it enclosed with wall, moat and
 so forth. Thereafter the brave King set forth and marched 61
 with the vast four-membered army to Subhagiriṇṇa¹.

At that time the Lord of men Candabbāhu, formerly² beaten 62
 after hard fighting, having collected from the countries of
 the Paṇḍus and Coḷas and elsewhere many Damiḷa soldiers, 63
 representing a great force, landed with his Jāvaka army in
 Mahātitha. After the King had brought over to his side the 64
 Sihalas dwelling in Paḍi, Kurundi³ and other districts, he
 marched to Subhagiri. He set up there an armed camp and 65
 sent forth messengers with the message: "I shall take Tishala⁴;
 I shall not leave it to thee. Yield up to me therefore together
 with the Tooth Relic of the Sage, the Bowl Relic and the 66
 royal dominion. If thou wilt not, then fight." Thereupon 67
 Vijayabāhu summoned the Ruler⁵ Virabāhu, took counsel with
 him, had a strong force equipped for him and spake: "Hurrah, 68
 to-day both of us shall see the strength of our arms." Then the
 two set forth⁶, surrounded the great army of Candabbāhu on 69
 all sides and fought a great battle, terrible as a combat of
 Rāma. Then were the hostile warriors subdued in battle and 70

¹ P. *aviceṣakakaya*. This is a term drawn from the technique of *jhāna*, meditative absorption. See Huxley, *Die buddhistische Versenkung*, p. 18 ff.

² I, e. Yāpaba.

³ Cf. 83. 30 ff.

⁴ See note to 83. 16.

⁵ See note to 81. 46.

⁶ Virabāhu has here and in v. 20 the title of *mukhapati*, just as Bhuvanekabāhu in v. 79 has the title of *vajira*.

⁷ Note the change of subject in the case of *aviceṣa* and *vibhāvitā*.

weaponless the soldiers of the foe¹ wandered around, prayed
 71 and implored, tortured by fear, were benumbed, trembled,
 begged for mercy in the fight, whined and grieved full of
 72 terror. In their distress certain of the foe fled to the forest,
 73 others to the sea, others again to the mountains. After
 Vijayabāhu had thus fought and slain many soldiers, he sent
 74 the Lord of men Candubbānu flying defenceless. But the
 loveliest women of his court and all the elephants and horses,
 75 the swords and many other weapons, the entire treasure, the
 trumpets of victory, the umbrella of victory, the drom of
 victory, the banner of victory — all these he sent to his father,

76 Having in this way fought the fiery battle, conquered the
 province and won the victory, he united Laṅkā under the
 umbrella of his dominion,

77 Hereupon he had this town (Subhagiri) also surrounded
 by a high rampart and a trench and built there a superb
 78 royal palace. Having finished it, he established then in that town
 a regular almsgiving for the great bhikkhu community. Then he
 79 spake encouragingly to his younger brother King Bhuvaneka-
 bāhu and made him take up his abode as before in Subhapaḥḥata.

80 Now the Ruler betook himself to Anurādhapura and there
 round about the Thūpārāma and all the other sacred places
 81 he had the mighty forest — that was like a stronghold created
 by Māra — felled and a wall erected which was as a bridge
 82 over the stream of his hopes. Then after the Ruler had had
 these sacred places embellished by new buildings, he celebrated
 83 a great sacrificial festival. But as he wished to complete the
 work of restoration on the Ratañṇaśī-cetiya², begun but not
 84 finished by his royal father, he assembled with the greatest
 speed all people dwelling in the town from the places where
 85 individuals sojourned, ordered numbers of skilful workmen
 hither and having established for the community at whose head
 86 stood the chief Thera of the Senakūṭha-pariveśa³ a regular

¹ *Veribhāṭṭa tadā* in 71d takes up again the *tadā veriyāṭṭā* in v. 70ab.

² See 87. 66.

³ This is the building erected by the general Kuṭṭhaka under Udaya II and called in *Mhv.* 81. 88, *Senasenūpatti-pariveśa*.

almsgiving', he appointed the Thera to look after the work of restoration. Thereupon the Monarchs of the Vanni who were living in Puttippāraṭṭha, sought out the Ruler, bringing him many gifts. He (on his part) presented them with rocking chairs, white umbrellas, fly-whisks and other insignia for the great kings of the Vanni people. Therewith he made them all contented, charged them to protect the town (Anurādhapura) and betook himself from there to Pulatthinagara.

There the Monarch summoned to him the ruler Virabahu: "We shall embellish this town, originally the royal city, and fill the universe with the camphor perfume of the abundance of our glory." After these words he took counsel with him and spake thereupon: "In the town called Pulatthinagara there are now *pāsādas*, image-houses, *vihāras*, *pariveśas*, *cetiya*s and relic temples, walls, gate-towers, houses of the *aḍḍhayaṇa* and of the *hammiya* kind¹, *maṇḍapas*, sermon halls, temples to deities and other buildings. Some of these stand erect, covered with grass, trees and whatever else has grown upon them. Others have collapsed without support as the whole of their pillars perished; others again alas! will fall, bending under the weight of walls cracked from top to foot, because other support is wanting. Some of these, through decay and old age are like greybeards, and unable to stand erect, they become more bowed from day to day. With many the joists are broken² and their pinnacles destroyed³, with others the roofs have decayed⁴

¹ *Nittāpeta* means here "to fix, to establish", the object *dānareṭṭam* being governed by it.

² I leave the two terms *aḍḍhayaṇa* and *hammiya* (skr. *harmya*) untranslated. Both are names for particular types of dwelling-houses which we are unable to describe further.

³ P. *akāṇṇatāḍḍhapaṭṭi*. I believe that *atāḍḍhapaṭṭi* (lit. balance-beam) means the horizontal beams, while *paṇḍumā* (v. 95; cf. 97, 141) means the beams of the roof-tree. The construction of the compound is: "many are such in which . . . are broken off."

⁴ P. *vaṭṭhacāṭṭakakā*. The original meaning of *cāṭṭaka* which is omitted in the PTS. P. D. is according to Abhp. "dovecote".

⁵ P. *vāḍḍhacāṭṭakā*. This is an interesting vocative for *cāṭṭaka* which

98 and the bricks are broken. In others by the breakage of the
 damaged roof-tree the bricks of the roof have fallen and only
 99 walls and pillars remain. In others again the gates have fallen
 in and the hinging of the gate-posts destroyed; in others again
 the steps have become loosened and the railings have fallen
 100 in. Of many all that can be seen are parts still hanging
 together¹ of the original foundation wall: of many not even
 101 the place where they once stood is now to be seen. Of what
 use are many words? This town which has lost all its glory
 we shall again make glorious. The Ruler must give his consent.
 102 Then later he may celebrate the royal consecration in the
 splendid city." With this charge he sent a messenger to his
 father.

103 When the King heard these tidings, his heart was full of
 joy, and as he himself had cherished the wish to restore the
 104 original royal town, he summoned the circle of the great digni-
 taries from every quarter, and issuing his commands to all the
 105 inhabitants of Laṅkā, he brought together the workers in iron,
 106 the turners, bamboo workers², blacksmiths, potters, goldsmiths,
 painters, porters, workmen, slaves, the capillās who understood
 107 work for hire, the bricklayers, workers in stucco, carpenters
 108 and the guilds of masons, and in addition to these all black-
 smith's tools, such as bellows, hammers, tongs, sledge-hammers,
 anvils, as well as many sharp saws, axes, hatchets, (wedges)
 109 for splitting trees and for crushing stones, knives, chisels³,
 shovels, mats, baskets and so forth. All these appliances he
 110 gave carefully to the people and also much money, such as

occurs in the canon (M. I. 175¹⁰, 177¹²), only in the compound *va-*
labhīraṭṭha which must be translated "covered-in carriage".

¹ Thus I translate *nibandhana*. In Skr. it means figuratively at least
 a joint of words, a compound.

² In the *Samyutta Canon*. (I. 193¹¹ of the Siamese ed.) *veṇaḥula* is
 explained by *vilicāḥula*.

³ P. *kaṭṭa*. In skr. *kaṭṭa* means "hieron" according to BRL, but
 this cannot be the case here. Some kind of pointed instrument must
 be meant (cf. *koṭi* "point").

pearls, precious stones and the like and sent it with the people¹ to his royal son. Thereupon in the devastated land, long desolate, King Vijayabāhu, happy at heart, had the water 111 system — tanks, ponds, dykes, pools and the like — in 112 which the embankments had given way, and which were deprived of their deep water, dammed up as before, filled with 113 deep water, covered with divers lotus blossoms and stocked with all kinds of fish. Then he had many valuable fields 114 which had always been ground on which grew every kind of corn, newly planted, had all kinds of crops grown here and 115 there and made the whole fair land prosperous. And the Ruler 116 restored superb Pulatthinagara as it had been aforetime, surrounded by a moat, deep as the sea, with a fine chain of walls like to the Cakkavāla mountains², provided with divers vihāras, 117 surrounded by various monastic parks with divers bathing-ponds, filled with a variety of cetiyas, sprinkled with various adbhū- 118 yogas³, adorned with divers pāsādas, built over with a variety of hummīyas⁴, embellished with divers maṇḍapas, provided 119 with all sorts of temples to deities, resplendent with every kind of gate-towers, fair with the rows of divers houses, 120 boasting a variety of streets, with four well-distributed gates, with fine squares and road-crossings.

In this fashion the King had the town of Pulatthinagara 121 — comparable to the city of Indra⁵ — restored, so that it surpassed Mithila, subdued Kāncipuri, laughed to scorn Śāvatthi, subdued Madhura, turned to shame Bārāṇasī, reduced Vesālī to nothing and made Campāpurī⁶ tremble with her glory.

¹ P. *śūla senāya*. *Senā* means here the staff of workers raised by the King.

² These are the mountains which are supposed to surround the earth which is conceived of as a disk. Cf. Skt. *cakṣvabala*, *-vāḍa*, BR. x. v. 2; W. Konen, *Kosmographie der Indier*, p. 186.

³ For *adbhūtaga* and *hummīga* see above note to v. 93.

⁴ *Amāravatī*, see 89.5. The town is described in the *Mahābhārata*, III. 1714 ff.

⁵ A series of the most famous Indian towns. 1) Mithilā, capital of the Videhas, now northern Bihār; 2) Kāncipuri, in Southern India

Here ends the eighty-eighth chapter, called 'The Restoration of Puṣṭhinagara', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

on the Coromandel Coast, one of the seven sacred towns of India. 3) Śrāvastī, capital of the Kosala country in present Nepal (T. W. Ross Davis, *Buddhist India*, p. 401; 4) Madhura, here probably the town Mathurā on the Jamma, chief locality of the Śārasena, mentioned AN. II, 57 (BR. n. v. *madhura* § c); 5) Bārāṇasī, now Benares; 6) Vaiśālī, in the Videha country, in Buddhist times the chief locality of the Licchavi clan, like Śrāvastī often mentioned in the sacred Canon; 7) Campā, is the territory of the Āṅgas, now Bhāgalpur on the Ganges, Bihār. Note the sacred number seven. See also the two notes to 89, 4.



Chapter LXXXIX

DESCRIPTION OF THE FESTIVAL OF THE KING'S
CONSECRATION AND OTHER FESTIVALS

The King spoke: "This Pulatthinagara is now thus restored 1
as before, dowered with all that belongs to a city. This town is 2
now radiant with happiness, splendour and beauty. She has
surpassed Jetuttara and will now surpass Sāgalā. After van- 3
quishing Samsamāragiri, what need hath she to care for Sā-
keta? Ha! even Rājagaha she wishes to capture as it is. She 4
has destroyed Saṃkassa and now scorns Indrapatta. She dares
to challenge¹ Kapilavatthu². Therefore shall the King, the 5

¹ P. *samāhyam asakate kattam*; I think that *samāhya* here is = skr. *samāhya* and means "fight" (RR. a. v. 4). The Col. Ed. reads *samhyam* and W. translates: "seeketh friendship with K." This I think is not so good, as *asakate* has then no meaning. It looks as if the author here as also in RR. 121, by the accumulation of synonyms for the term "surpass", wishes to show his familiarity with the rules of alaṃkāra. Cf. the expressions in Daṇḍin's Kāvyaadarśa 2. 62 ff. with those used in this passage.

² The author returns here, repeating himself, to the idea already treated in the final strophe of chap. 88. He displays his geographical knowledge which he apparently borrows from the *Abhūdānupadāpikā* where in v. 209 and 201 all the towns named by him are enumerated: 1) Jetuttara, often mentioned in the Jātakas as the capital of the Sivi country (skr. *Sibi*). Cf. Farnett Jāt. Index; 2) Sāgalā, abode of the King Mūlinda (Mhp. ed. Tassara, p. 1); 3) Samsamāragiri, according to M. I. 95, II. 91; S. III. 1, IV. 116; A. II. 61 etc. a town in the country of the Bhargava (skr. *Bhargava*); 4) Sāketa, name of the town Ayodhyā (now Oudh) in the Kosala country. M. I. 149 and often otherwise in the Nīkāyas and the Jātaka book; 5) Rājagaha, capital of Māgadhā; 6) Saṃkassa (skr. *Sankasāya*), mentioned in the Jātakas, according to JCo. IV. 265²⁸ thirty yojanas from Sūvatthī, was situated

chief of kings, even as Sakka, the overlord of the gods, did
 6 in the city of Sakka¹, enter this city in all his majesty to
 celebrate the festival of the royal consecration." Therewith
 7 he sent a messenger to his father. When the King heard
 from the mouth of the messenger the uninterrupted narrative,
 he rejoiced greatly and betook himself at the head of his
 8 army with all the mighty pomp worthy of a king, from the
 town of Jambuddoṇi to the chief capital (of the kingdom).
 9 And King Vijayabāhu went the distance of a gāvuta² towards
 him and accompanied the Great king to the royal capital.
 10 For seven days he celebrated in the town the high festival
 of the royal consecration and carried it out in the (right)
 11 sequence to the end. But after he had made over the Northern
 province³ to Virabāhu and made him take up his abode in
 12 the prosperous royal city, he declared: I shall bring the
 relics of the Sage to this royal city, and betook himself with
 his royal father to the town of Jambuddoṇi.
 13 Hereupon the King gathered together a great multitude
 of the inhabitants of Lankā and had the great highway from
 14 the town of Jambuddoṇi to splendid Paṭaṭṭhinagara, five yo-
 jana⁴ wide made level and throughout, always at a distance
 15 of half a yojana, he had a costly rest-house built, gracefully
 (adorned) with festive banners, rows of bananas, triumphal
 16 arches and the like. Thereupon he placed the two relics of
 the great Seer, Tooth and Bowl, on a high chariot which was
 17 fair in its splendour as a heavenly chariot. With numerous

to the west of Kanyakubja (now Kanauj) between the Ganges and the
 Jumna (cf. Vis. II. 299); 7) Indrapatta (skr. *Indraprastha*), town in the
 Kuru territory on the site of the present Delhi; 8) Kapilavattha,
 capital of the Sākya in the territory of the present Nepal, birthplace
 of Buddha.

¹ See note to 68. 121.

² About two miles.

³ The expression is *raṭṭham attanagga*, quite in the sense of Rājaraṭṭha
 or Paṭiṭṭharaṭṭha.

⁴ According to the context, this would be the whole distance from
 Jambuddoṇi to Paṭaṭṭhinagara. But the distance is much greater, about
 75 miles, as the crow flies (6 y. = 45 miles).

groups of the bhikkhu community who, paying homage, encircled¹ on every side the incomparable, splendid, festive chariot, of the sacred relics, as if they were the hosts of the Brahmins 18 who surround the sacred chariot of Brūhma, he set forth from the superb city, great Jambuddhī. The sacrificial festival which he arranged² was beautified by the people entrusted 24 with the various duties³ who letting unceasingly their cries of Hail! resound, went before or followed after⁴ and bore with them for the sacrificial festival umbrellas of gold and pearl, 19 golden fly-whisks, inlaid with pearl, banners of gold and pearl, wreaths set with gold and pearl, further golden and silver 20 jars⁵, fans of gold and silver, golden and silver vases, golden and silver shells, golden and silver bowls, golden and silver 21 urns, golden and silver basins, golden and silver mirrors, golden and silver banana trees, tiny shells of gold and silver, 22 golden and silver horses, golden and silver elephants, as well 23 as countless silver and golden lamp-stands and the rest. The festival was surrounded by rows of elephants excellent by 25 reason of the elephant ornaments by which they were o'er-spread⁶, by rows of steeds worth seeing for the abundance of every kind of equine ornament, by the ranks of heroic warriors 26 who with divers weapons in their hands and wearing warlike ornament, played their war games, by the ranks of princes, 27

¹ Thus I translate *samantā sevassādhāhi*. This *sevasādhāhi* is like the attribute to *bhikkhūsaṃghaḥgāyāhi*, also to *brahmasamādhāhi* and governs the noun *saṅgha* in 17a as well as in 17 d.

² This is taken from v. 36 a *mahāpūjāya preṇṭhento*. The following accusatives are attributes of *mahāpūjāya*: *mānoharāya* (v. 24 d), *parivāritāya* (v. 27 d), *maṇḍitāya* (v. 28 d), *parivāritāya* (v. 30 d), *parighosītāya* (v. 32 d), *pasaṃsītāya* (v. 34 b), *dhomītāya* (v. 34 c) and *parisevītāya* (v. 35 d).

³ P. *taṇṭaṇṭa-dhārā-niguttāhi* (v. 24 e). The people meant are those who have particular functions to perform at a sacrificial festival.

⁴ Taken from vv. 23-24, *parato pucchato pi ca . . . gacchantāhi . . . manussāhi*. *Gāhetā* in v. 23 c by which the accusatives in v. 19 to 23a b are governed, is subordinate to *gacchantāhi*. The people carry their votive offerings with them in the procession.

⁵ Should not the reading here be *-kumbhā pi* rather than *-kumbhāhi*?

⁶ Lit.: "by the outspreading (*cittāra*) of the elephant ornaments."

28 nobles and councillors who wore festive clothing and flaunted
 manifold ornament. The glory (of the festival) was enhanced
 29 by the cries of people who thirsting for merit shouted O hail!
 30 O hail! O hail! The festival was surrounded by serried rows
 of lay sisters and lay brethren who led pure lives and who
 in their zeal each for himself pressed forward bearing flowers
 31 and the like as offerings. Around it raged the uproar of
 sturdy palace servitors who were ever and again now here
 32 now there, well beaten in fun by other sturdy palace servitors
 as if they were people fighting out a mighty quarrel with one
 33 another. It was filled with the songs of praise¹ of the bands
 who sang festive songs, making thereto on the five instruments
 34 fine music which spread abroad and charmed² the hearers,
 also with the songs of the minstrels who again and again let
 35 their praises resound. In devotion there surrounded it the
 dancers and the actors who performed dances and sang songs
 36 delightful to see and to hear. Thus performing by degrees
 in perfect order the high sacrifice, he was wont when in mov-
 37 ing along the decorated road, he came to the previously
 erected rest-houses, to set up the relics in each of these, (he)
 performed each time a high festival, started again from each
 38 (rest-house), continued ever on his way and so brought by
 degrees the relics of the Prince of the wise to the royal
 capital³.

39 Then after the King had turned the whole city into a
 single great place of festival — at a favorable moment when
 40 constellation, day and hour were auspicious, in the ancient,
 decorated relic temple, fair as the palace of the King of the
 41 gods — most splendid of all temples — he solemnly and in
 careful manner placed the two relics on a costly throne em-
 42 bellished by all manner of jewels. From that time onwards,

¹ [lit.; "was praised by . . . and beloved by . . ."]

² P. *samśṛṅgataṃ*, lit. "very well worth hearing".

³ Vv. 16-38 form one sentence. The principal verb is *śaṅgi* v. 38 d with the immediately preceding gerund. The gerunds *saṃśṛṅgata* v. 14 c and *nikṣāṃviti* v. 18 c are subordinate to *paratento mahāpajam* (along with the attributes belonging to it; cf. notes to vv. 18 and 24/19).

day by day more, with the four kinds of perfume¹, with fine, fragrant incense, with divers kinds of blossoms of the punnāga, 43 nāga, pūga² and other trees, with countless camphor lamps of precious stones giving a brilliant light, with rows of cande- 44 labra on which burned fragrant oil, with dishes full of the finest rice prepared with sweet milk, with heaps of food 45 composed of sweet-smelling rice like to the Kelūsa³ mountain, with all hard and soft foods and with all that can be drunk or sipped and other (things) the wise Prince celebrated for 46 another three months a world-rejoicing sacrificial festival for the relics, amid the clang of the shell trumpets⁴ and thus brought (the festival) to a close.

Then spake the Ruler: "Let us perform in Sahasratitha 47 a blameless festival for admission to the Order⁵." He first sent 48 the Monarch Virabāhu thither. There he made him erect besides several thousand rooms of sojourn for the community⁶, a lofty 49 house of festival resting on sixty pillars⁷ which gleamed with manifold ornament and possessed arches covered with cloth⁸. Hereupon he had prepared the divers objects for the ceremony 50 of admission to the Order and all the four articles of use. And then after the Vanni kings who in this and that province, 51 in Patittharantya, in Rohana and so forth, had collected with great care, much rice with the divers ingredients such as fish, 52 meat and the rest, (had gathered together) great loads of grain, sour and sweet milk, butter and so forth, also honey, 53 treacle, thickened sugar juice, raw sugar, lump sugar and the like, as well as all things fitting for an offering to the Great

¹ According to Abhp. 147, the *catujātipaṇḍa* are 1) *kūśuma* "saffron"; 2) *paranapūpa*(?) 3) *rupa* = skr. *ragava* intermontana coccinea and a fragrant powder prepared from the blossoms of the shrub; 4) *taruḍḍa* = skr. *toruḍa* "incense".

² *Bottleria tinctoria* (kamala tree), *mesua ferrea* (ironwood tree), *areca catechu* (areca palm).

³ See note to 43. 41. The testium comparisonis is the white colour.

⁴ Lit.: "together with the shell trumpet festival".

⁵ See above note to 57. 71.

⁶ P. *sapphāraṇa*.

⁷ P. *sattatthambhārahāṭṭha* as in 54. 34.

⁸ P. *paṭṭataraṇa* as in 85. 9.

54 community, King Vijayabāhu betook himself thither. He
 issued the invitation: "Let us take in hand the arrangement
 55 of a festival for admission to the Order. Let all the Grand
 theras, all the middle-aged and the youthful who have trust
 56 in their hearts towards us, the lords among the ascetics not
 fail to come to Sahassatittha," and (he) sent messengers
 57 everywhere (with the invitation)¹. When all the individual
 groups of ascetics settled in Tambapanni heard this news, they
 58 rejoiced greatly and set forth on their way from every quarter,
 without allowing even the administrator of their provisions to
 59 remain behind, and in haste the heroes among the ascetics
 60 assembled by degrees well prepared in Sahassatittha². The
 King who again and again³ surveyed Sahassatittha surrounded
 61 as it was with ascetics felt a befitting⁴ joy, and in abundant
 measure the Ruler supplied the Great bhikkhu community as
 62 was seemly, with excellent food and drink. Then celebrating
 day by day here in Sahassatittha a great sacrificial festival,
 63 he made those bhikkhus who were called thereto, perform
 the ceremony of admission for those who were desirous of
 entering the Order, and celebrated the ceremony of admission
 64 to the Order for half a month. Thereupon the King granted
 the rank of a Grand Master⁵, the rank of a Chief Thera⁶,
 the rank of a Grand Thera and the rank of a Parivepa-Thera⁷
 65 to such (bhikkhus) who because they had brought about the
 prosperity of the Order, deserved to receive this or that rank,

¹ Vv. 47-56 form one sentence which opens with three loc. abs. *karāpita* (49 a), *saññāpita* (50 c) and *attessa* (53 c).

² P. *āgata* (with the acc. of the place) *saṃvāpita* is merely periphrastic.

³ P. *anukam*, used in the same way as the double *anukam anukam*. The same in Jñ. V. 32¹² *hiṃ maṃ anukam pekkhāsi haṃphalams anukam* being explained by the commentary as *paṇappama*.

⁴ P. *atlabha*, Cf. Skr. *atlabha*, HZ. x. v., 1 b. The joy corresponds to the great number of bhikkhus who have put in an appearance.

⁵ P. *vaṭṭasāṃvāpaka*, Cf. note to 53. 23.

⁶ P. *sāla(thera)paḍa*, Cf. 69. 31 *vāṭṭasāṃvāpaka*.

⁷ P. *therapariyāyādikāṃ paḍaṃ* seems to mean "the rank where the word *parivepa* precedes *thera*."

Then having bestowed on them the eight articles of use, fair, 66
worthy of a king, to the value of a thousand (gold pieces),
and also to the other ascetics in succession, costly articles of 67
use, he sent many remaining articles of use to the bhikkhus
settled in the Paṇḍu and Cōla countries. Then when all his 68
wishes had received fulfilment, he guided by right knowledge¹,
sent a messenger to his father and announced to him: "All 69
meritorious works which I have performed I have performed
in the name of my royal father."

Thus in granting admission to the Order to numerous 70
ascetics at the great ford of the Vālikā river called Sahassa,
in the correctly drawn² boundary, known as the 'throwing
up of the waters'³, he made lustrous the nine-fold doctrine⁴
of the sublime Buddha.

After he had for a long time made over the burden of 71
government⁵ to his own world-famed son, this most excellent

¹ P. *āyapabbhāgamaṃ katu*, "plucking right knowledge at the head." He was conscious that he was only his father's representative. W. uses the words in the *oratio recta* and translates: "Whatsoever merit hath been performed by me with a pure mind."

² P. *parisodhita*, lit. purified.

³ P. *akkhepammet*, a term difficult to explain and occurring again 84. 17 and 87. 12. It has reference to the ceremony being performed in a building erected in a lake or in a river (see above note to 87. 71). The boundary which must enclose the space set apart for ecclesiastical functions must thus be drawn in the water. In fixing it water would have to be "thrown up" (skr. *kēp* with *ac*), just as the earth is thrown up in fixing a boundary on land. W's note gives a correct definition: "a space in a sheet of water, duly defined, for purposes of ordination and other ecclesiastical functions". But this does not explain the etymology of the expression.

⁴ P. *saccaṅgikāṃ sāmaṃsā*. The nine "members" (*aṅgānaṃ*) of the holy scriptures are 1) *sutta* "discourse"; 2) *peyya*, the same with an admixture of verse; 3) *teyyābhūtaṃ* "exposition" without verse (chiefly the Abhidhamma); 4) *gāthā* "stanzas"; 5) *udāra*; 6) *thirotāka*; 7) *jātaṇa*, the well known three books belonging to the Tipiṭaka; 8) *abhiṭṭaḍḍhamma* "discourses relating to mysterious conditions"; 9) *padāka*, title of some special sutta.

⁵ P. *bhaddhāra*, lit. "burden of the earth". Cf. skr. *bhaddhārī* "prince, ruler".

King Parakkumabāhu who as described¹, performed through his son an abundance of meritorious works, entered heaven when he had attained his thirty-fifth year (of reign)².

Here ends the eighty-ninth chapter, called 'Description of the Festival of the King's Consecration and Other Festivals', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ *evam evam* even in this way.

² According to Bājāv. 32 years, Pūjāv. 33 years. The number given in the Mhva. includes those years when Vijayabāhu carried on the government. The latter is called Bāsant Vijayabāhu by the Nikaya as well as by the Rājucata.



CHAPTER XC

THE HISTORY OF THE EIGHT KINGS,
OF VIJAYABĀHU AND HIS SUCCESSORS

Now in the second year of King Vijayabāhu¹ who after 1
Parakkamahāhu's death, held sway over all Laṅkā, one of his 2
generals, Mitta by name, a faithless friend², won over as as-
sociate a slave belonging to the immediate entourage of the
King. Out of lust for dominion the recreant made him whom 3
he had bribed by gifts, slay the Ruler at night. Now when 4
the younger brother of the King, the King Bhuvanekabāhu³ 5
heard of this event, he left the town of Jambuddoṇi, mounted
in his fear a covered litter⁴ and sped on his way to the
fortress of Subhācala⁵. But people who had received gifts 6
from the hands of the evil general Mitta, and were therefore
bound to him from the outset, nine wicked, brutal brothers 7
from the clan of the Monasīhas⁶, pursued him and pitilessly
pierced the Monarch's litter so fiercely with their pointed spears 8
that everything — seat, girths and the like⁷ were in tatters.

¹ Rājāv. jumps from Vijayabāhu IV., passing over his immediate successors, to the history of Alakesium and the Chinese invasion. See note to 91. 14.

² P. *dhummitta* with reference to the general's name *mitta* "friend".

³ Rājaraṭṭ. calls him Lokakabāhu Bhuvanekabāhu, Nikka. Mahābhuvanakaikabāhu.

⁴ P. *gāṇa*, used of every kind of conveyance. W's translation "litter" is undoubtedly right.

⁵ Subhācala is like its synonyms: Subhagiri, Subhapaṭṭana, Sandarapaṭṭana, the name for the present so-called Yāpahu.

⁶ See note to 28. 13.

⁷ P. *andolipottakodikam*. The seats of these litters were evidently suspended in girths to counterbalance the shaking. Hence the expression *andoli* "swing", while *pottala* means the girths.

9 He (Bhuvanekabāhu) sprang to the ground from the litter and
betook himself in haste, unharmed, to the village of Kāla-
10 gallaka¹. Here from a stall where elephants were tethered²,
11 he took a specially good elephant, mounted it and having
again crossed the great Kōjabhinna river then in flood, the
King reached that selfsame Subhagiri.

12 Now the Senāpati Mitta forced his way into the town of
Jambuddopi, into the palace of the Great king, seated himself
13 on the splendid lion throne of the Great king, and showed him-
self, the recreant, to the whole army his person adorned with
14 the royal ornaments. But now all the dignitaries who sup-
ported him, came together, one following the other. They
15 thought: "We must under all circumstances win over by (means
of) proper pay the whole army, that part belonging to our
16 own country as well as the alien part." They began in the
first instance, to hand over their pay to the chivalrous Āriya
17 warriors³ at the head of whom was Thukuraka. But these
declared: "We have at all times been people who one felt
must be won over. Now ye must under all circumstances,
18 first of all by good pay win over the Siṅgha warriors and
make them contented." And none of them now accepted the
19 pay. "Be it so", answered the others. They paid all the
Siṅghas their money and then called upon the Āriya to take
20 their pay. But again they refused with the words: "Our pay
21 shall be handed to us later; we shall not take it now." So
although all the ministers ever and again urgently pressed
22 them⁴ to accept their pay, the well-armed⁵ Āriya knights

¹ Probably Kalugalligama in the Kalugaboda Korale, NNW. from Kuruwagala.

² P. *gajabandhanigama* is the loc. of -*dhant* (fem. of *dhant*).

³ In contrast to the Siṅghas, these must be South Indian mercenaries. The reader is referred to the tribe of the Āriya mentioned in 61.30 and 63.15. This (not *āriya*) would be at any rate the correct form of the name according to the phonetic rules of Pāli. See also below v.44.

⁴ P. *siṅghaṃ karoti* "makes an urgent petition". Cf. VcCo. 200^a *devi punappasāmya siṅghaṃ karoti* "the queen urged him again and again (to fulfil her wish)".

⁵ P. *ajjita*. This is obviously meant to call attention to the

declared: "We shall say everything in the presence of the King." They betook themselves to the King's abode and when they saw the Senāpati Mitta sitting on the lion throne, they stood for a time respectfully there. Then the warrior Thakuraka who was possessed of an undaunted heart, gave his comrades a sign, took his sharp sword and in a moment swiftly struck off the Senāpati's head so that it fell to the ground. Now when hereupon a great hubbub arose in the town, all the Sihala soldiers who were a mighty force, banded themselves together and asked the Āriya soldiers with Thakuraka at their head: "Why have ye done this evil deed?" They replied: "It took place at the command of King Bhuvaneśvabāhu who abides in Subhagiri." With the words: "Be it so", all the Āriya and Sihala warriors united and brought the King, their lord, Bhuvaneśvabāhu from the town of Subhagiri to the town of Jambuddipi and with reverence consecrated him King.

From that time onward the King made the whole double army obedient to his will by assigning them salaries and the like, drove back all the Damiḷa foes, like Kāḷiṅgarāyara, Colagaṅgadeva and the rest who had landed from the opposite coast, as also the Yami kings in Sihala, Kadaliyāṇa, Āpāna, Tipa, Himiyāṇaka and so on, and freed Laṅkā from the briers of the foe. He took up his abode for several years in the town of Jambuddipi, betook himself thereupon to the town of Subhagiri, had built here an extensive royal city, gleaming in the beauty, and abode there.

As he then won over all his subjects by a just policy, he was a just king and a believing adherent of the Doctrine. He bestowed on the skilful scribes of the sacred books abundant money and had the whole of the Tipiṭaka copied by them, and had it preserved here and there in the vīhāras of Laṅkā, and thus the Lord of men caused the dissemination of the sacred texts¹. Several times, too, the Ruler caused the festival

threatening aspect of the situation. The Āriyas are fully armed throughout the negotiations.

¹ P. *paṭiḍḍhamā* could also mean "the Doctrine in the Pāli tongue".

of admission to the Order — which is a festival for the world — to be so celebrated that it was radiant with the splendid offerings made, and thus he brought growth and prosperity to the Order of the Sage — the Order whose sublime greatness must be revered by the (inhabitants of the) three worlds. He celebrated daily a great sacrifice for the Tooth Relic and he provided the bhikkhu community with the four articles of equipment.

In this wise he wrought good, while dwelling in Subhagiri and after carrying on the government for 11 years, he entered heaven.

Once when (here in Lankā) a famine arose¹, there landed, sent with an army by the five brothers, the kings who held sway in the Paṇḍu realm, a Damiḷa general known by the name of Āriyacakkavattin who though he was no Āriya² was yet a great dignitary of great power. He laid waste the kingdom in every direction and entered the proud stronghold, the town of Subhagiri. The sacred Tooth Relic³ and all the costly treasures there he seized and returned with them to the Paṇḍu kingdom. There he made over the Tooth Relic to King Kuḷasekhara⁴ who was as the sun for the lotus blossom of the stem of the great kings of the Paṇḍus.

¹ There is a gap in the text here. Of v. 43a the MSS. have only *cakasmā*, five syllables are therefore wanting. The Col. Ed. supplements *jāyamaṇasmā*, I should prefer *cakasmā idha jātasmā*, because the similarity of the first and third words would make the slip of the writer of the archetype easily intelligible.

² See above, note to v. 16.

³ According to 89. 41 Vijayabāhu had deposited the Tooth and Bowl Relics in Puḷutthinagara. Evidently his successor had brought them back to Subhagiri to the town built by him there, a theory supported by 90. 41. The Sinhalese kings liked to keep the palladium of the kingdom in their immediate neighbourhood. It is remarkable how in the later parts of the Mhvs. the *paṭiccheta* is relegated to the background — it is only just mentioned again in 90. 72 — and how the whole religious and political interest centres in the *doṣādhāra*.

⁴ Kuḷasekhara reigned 1268—1308 (H. W. Conze, *ICC*, p. 80). His general Āriya Cakravartin is mentioned in a South Indian inscription (No. 110 in Annual Report of Epigraphy, Southern Circle, Madras Government, 1908 according to Conze, *l. c.* p. 87).

Hereupon the son of the Bodhisatta Vijayabāhu¹ and grand- 48
son of the mighty King Parakkamabāhu (II.), Parakkama- 49
bāhu by name, became king and raised aloft — as if to fend
off like a cloud the heat from the people who dwelt in 50
Laṅkā — the umbrella (of dominion), the emblem of its proud
kings — fair through the cool shade (it gave) and like to the
disk of the full moon. And he reflected: "That Tooth Relic 51
which was taken to the Paṇḍu kingdom — that relic of the
Prince of the wise, our highest protecting deity, worthy of
veneration by our race, how shall I bring it back from there?" 52
And as the Ruler saw no other means but friendly negotiation,
he set forth in the company of several able warriors, betook 53
himself to the Paṇḍu kingdom and sought out the Ruler of
the Paṇḍus. By daily conversations he inclined him favourably,
received from the hands of the King the Tooth Relic, returned 54
to the Island of Laṅkā and placed the relic in superb Pu- 55
lathinagura in the former relic temple. Then the Ruler took 56
up his abode in this city and began to carry on the govern-
ment without transgressing the precepts laid down for kings.²
The King performed daily a festival for the Tooth Relic and 57
accumulated unweariedly a great abundance of meritorious
works. He provided the bhikkhu community with robes and 58
the other articles of use and thus having furthered the laity
and the Order, he fell under the power of death.

The son of Bhuvanekabāhu, the ruler of the town of 59
Subhagiri³, Bhuvanekabāhu became king in Hatthigiri-

¹ See 88. 95 and note. The *Mhv.* tells us nothing of the fate of the younger brothers of Bhuvanekabāhu I.: Tilokaramā, Parakkamabāhu and Jayabāhu (88. 19-20). Evidently they died before Bhuvanekabāhu.

² P. *vijāṇitā*. W's translation "laws of Manu" is too restricted.

³ With reference to a fragmentary interpolation in three MSS. after the line 59a,b see my edition as well as W's note on p. 216. The translation would run as follows: "With the constant thought: the son of Bhuvanekabāhu, the ruler of the town of Subhagiri, the prince by name Bhuvanekabāhu, cherishes the desire for (usurping) the royal dignity at a future time, the King Parakkamabāhu ordered a barber with the help of the king's people to put out both his eyes although

60 pura¹. The Lord of men wishing to acquire merit, rejoicing
in generosity and other good deeds, instituted permanently a
61 regular alms of food for the bhikkhu community. Every year
the King celebrated in a manner worthy of the highest kingly
power, the festival of his coronation and in conjunction with
62 that in the Jetṭhamūla² month, after an opulent sacrificial
festival, he had the ceremony of admission to the Order
performed. Thus he made the Order of the Victor shine
63 brightly. After having performed these and many other
meritorious works in manifold ways, the second³ Bhuvaneka-
bāhu also fell a victim to impermanence.

64 His still more eminent son, Parakkamabāhu⁴, wise and
dowered with courage, was (thereupon king) in the superb
65 city. With the love of faith in the three (sacred) objects, he
assembled the bhikkhus and made them perform several times
66 over the ceremony of admission to the Order. In the royal
courtyard he erected in careful fashion a temple for the Tooth
Relic, fair with its walls and pillars, painted with bright-lined
67 pictures, provided with golden spires⁵, with gate posts of
68 gold, splendid, three storeys high. There he set up a canopy
69 of coloured stuffs, strips of cloth and the like. This he decorated

he was his younger brother (sonān)” The last words are unintelligible because the sentence has been left unfinished.

¹ The text here has like 99. 77 the synonym *Matṭhisalapura* (Kurunegala). The Nik.s. calls the king Vat-himbi-bhuvanāikabāhu.

² June—July.

³ The Col. Ed. has *duṭṭhi* and W. translated accordingly: “in the second year of his reign.” COMAROV (C. A. L. E. X. 2, p. 91) emended this into *duṭṭhi* and this emendation is confirmed by all the MSS. known to me. COMAROV, (HC. p. 82), points out quite rightly that according to the *Daladā-sīrita* the King must have reigned at least 9 years. The wording of v. 61 points also to a longer reign. Rājaputa. gives the number of years reigned and the number of the coronation festivals as 24.

⁴ Nik.s. and Rājaputa. call him Paṇḍitaparakkamabāhu. For *āsi* in 64d 91. 9 with note should be compared. The ascent of the throne by Parakkamabāhu IV. took place according to the *Daladā-sīrita* in the Saka year 1247 = 1325/6 A. D. (COMAROV, l. c.).

⁵ P. *sīgha* = skr. *śṛīṅga*, JR. s. v. I C. Cf. 99. 90.

with garlands of gold, silver and pearl which hung down on all sides and he attached to it a wall of silken curtains adorned therewith¹. Here (in the tent) he spread a seat, radiant with coloured draperies, and decorated it on every side with rows of golden and silver vases and with rows of candelabra of silver, gold and precious stones. On this seat he then full of reverence, placed the casket with the Tooth Relic and the casket with the Bowl Relic. Hereupon he set about performing day by day a great sacrificial festival in worthy fashion for the relics of the Master — a festival glorious with flowers and perfumes and with lamps and incense, provided with all foods soft and solid and with all that one drinks or sips, beautified by the reverberating² sound of the five musical instruments, fair through the dances and songs performed by the dancing girls and the actors, preparing delight for the world. With villages and fields, women slaves and men slaves, with elephants, cattle, buffaloes and other gifts he celebrated a sacrificial festival for the relics. With the reflection: "What the daily ceremonial was in the lifetime of the Enlightened One, the highest guide of the whole world, that of the Tooth Relic shall be from this day henceforth," the King composed in the Sthula tongue a work expounding this, with the title "Ceremonial of the Tooth Relic"³ and in keeping with it he performed daily a daily ceremony for the relic⁴.

¹ This is the description of a kind of tent. First its ceiling (ap to 48 c) is described and then the side walls. The instruments in 68 d and 69 a b must belong to the gerund *alamkariya*, but at the same time to *sobhita* through the medium of *alamkaraṇāhi*.

² P. *vijñābhāṇa*, otherwise as a rule *vijñābh*. Cf. skr. *jambh*, *jambhate*.

³ P. *dāṭṭhaṇḍātacārīta*, rendering of the Sinh. *daḍḍasārīta*. The work — it was mentioned above, note to 90. 63 — still exists. See Gnanap, Literatur und Sprache der Singhalesen, p. 9.

⁴ The passage is significant. It shows that in Ceylon just as in the temples of Egypt a daily ritual was observed wherein the relics (and the images, cf. the allusions in 38. 56, 53. 90) took the place of the living and present Buddha. See Arthur A. Pansu C. A. L. R. VI. 2, p. 67 f., and above Gāṭṭhapaṇṇa I, p. 332, note 4. Cf. also below 97. 33, 101. 4.

80 To the office of royal teacher the King appointed a Grand
 81 *thera* from the Cola country, a self-controlled man, versed in
 82 various tongues and intimate with philosophic works. Ever
 83 and again he heard from him continuously all the *Jātakas*,
 84 learned them (by heart) and retained their contents. Then he
 85 rendered by degrees these five hundred and fifty beautiful
 86 *Jātakas* from the Pāli tongue into the Sinhala speech¹. He
 87 recited them in the midst of the Grand *theras* who were
 88 intimate with the three *Piṭakas*, and after correcting them,
 89 he had them written down and distributed throughout Laṅkā.
 90 And these *Jātakas* he made over to a wise *thera*, Medhappakara
 by name, whom he had gained for the purpose, that they
 might be preserved in the succession of his disciples and
 thereby handed down still further. Then after having built
 for him a *pariveśa* with the King's own name, he assigned him
 the four villages of Parāyagūṇā, Sannirasala, Labujamaṇḍaka
 and Moravaṇḍa. In the *vihāra* of Tīrthagūṇa² where the big,
 long *pāsāda* forty-five cubits in size erected by the great
 Vijayabāhu³, had fallen into decay, King Parakkamabāhu
 himself built a beautiful, long *pāsāda*⁴ of thirty cubits in size,
 two storeys high, provided with lofty spires⁵, glorious with

¹ This translation of the *Jātakas* bears the Sinhalese title *Pāsiya-pona-jātaka*. See GUNAR, l. c. p. 6. Probably the king was not himself the author of the *Jātaka* translation. But he may have started the work, and it was an act of courtesy on the part of the translators that they ascribed it to the king. Cf. WICKREMASINGHE, Catalogue of Sans. Manuscr. in the Br. Mus., p. 118 f.; MAHALINGERA, Pāli Literature of Ceylon, p. 127.

² Without doubt this is the present Telanganawa, about a mile north of Hikkadua not far from the coast in the Galle District. Śrīdīpābha *Thera*, the author of the *Sāṅgīhīgi-sandesa* is called after it.

³ Vijayabāhu IV, with the epithet of Bodhisatta, thence called "The great" here.

⁴ In the description of the architectural works of Parakkamabāhu I in Palatthinsgara *diḥapāsādā* and *catappāsādā* are constantly contrasted with each other (see 73. 36, 37, 60). We have evidently to do with particular architectural terms.

⁵ See above note to v. 66.

bright-hued painting, and assigned it then to the venerable 91
 Grand *thera* Kāyasatti who dwelt in the Vijayabāhu-pariveṇa¹.
 He also granted him a village, called Sālaggāma, on the banks 92
 of the river² forming the boundary (of the monastery), making
 it a possession of the pariveṇa. In fair Tittthagāma he had a 93
 park laid down, provided with five thousand cōcopalms. In 94
 Derapura³ he built a long temple consisting of two storeys,
 provided with four pairs of gates for the image of the recumbent
 lion⁴. To this temple he assigned the grove-encircled village 95
 Gaṇṭhināma by name which he proclaimed as the property of
 the Buddha. In the vihāra of Valligāma⁵ the Ruler erected a 96
 long pāsāda, consisting of two storeys, which after his own
 name, was called Parakkamabāhu(-pāsāda), and granted it the 97
 (village) Sāligiri⁶ by name as a large maintenance village be-
 longing to the Great community. In fair Viddumagāma, not far 98
 from the town of Rājagāma he had a splendid vihāra built,
 connected with the Sirigānāgāma-pariveṇa, with a bodhi tree 99
 and an image-house and assigned it to his teacher, the Grand
thera from the Coia country⁷. Thereupon he founded in the 100
 charming district of Mayādhamu⁸ a new town with fine walls
 and gate-towers. There he had a fair temple erected to 101
 the gods with lofty spires and two storeys, provided with
 walls and gate-towers, placed there a glorious statue of 102

¹ Cf. 81, 53.

² All the MSS. have *sipa sīmanadittara*. *Sīmanadi* might also be the name of the river. The emendation of the Col. Ed. into *Ginḥanadi* (now *Ginganga*; cf. 75, 32, *giṇḍatittā* = *Gintota*) is certainly tempting, but I do not venture a departure from the uniform reading of the MSS.

³ Devapura or Devanagara = Devudara, Dondra. See 40, 59.

⁴ I. e. the recumbent Buddha who is always compared to a lion at rest.

⁵ See 80, 32.

⁶ W. points to *Eligiriya*, a village in the Veligama Korala, 6 miles NNE. of Veligama and 10 miles NW. of Matara.

⁷ See above v. 80 f.

⁸ The territory whose centre was *Sitaraka* about 23 miles E. of Colombo.

the lotus-bued King of the gods (Viṣṇu) and celebrated a great sacrificial festival.

103 After performing such and other good deeds for the laity and the Order and many meritorious works, he fell under the power of death.

104 Gifted with the power of meritorious works which he had performed formerly, he after attaining worthless wealth, renounced desire and did nought but good, finding above all pleasure in doing his best¹. Thinking of what is best for you and on universal impermanence, decide, O ye pious people, whose wealth is faith, for meritorious works² amongst which generosity and moral discipline have first place³.

105 After his death Vannibhuvanekabāhu was king and
106 after his death came King Vijayabāhu. But after the death of these kings the all-wise Bhuvanekabāhu⁴, the fourth, was ruler in Gaṅgāsiripura⁵ situated in the charming vicinity

¹ The acc. *atthāthani* must be governed by *ato*. This, it is true, is otherwise construed with the loc.

² P. *latoḍa gāyathā* is a verbal combination witnessing to Sinhalese influence. The equivalent in Sinh. for which however, I have no example in the literature, would be *koṭagāyathā*. Since *gāyathā* gives a reflexive sense to the verb to which it is attached, *latoḍa gāyathā* means "do for yourselves what is for your advantage".

³ With verse 103 or 104 the second part of the Cūlavamsa which begins with chapter 80, comes to an end. The MSS. also indicate this. Cf. my ed. I. p. IV of the Introd., as well as the notes to the passage. If we assume that it closed originally with v. 102, which is indicated by two of the MSS., then there was added later a summarizing śloka and then a strophe in artificial metre. Exactly the same thing occurs at the close of the first part (79.84). The addition was evidently intended to veil the break in the text and lead over to the new part.

⁴ (Vanni-)Bhuvanāśakabāhu, Vijayabāhu and the fourth Bhuvanāśakabāhu are also mentioned by the Nik.-s. and Rājaraṭṭa, as successors of Parakkhamabāhu IV. The inscription of the Laṅkātilaka-vihāra belongs to Bhuvanāśakabāhu IV. (see B. GUNASEKERA, JHAS., C. H. X, no. 94, 1887, p. 83 ff.). He built this and the Gadalaḍeniya-vihāra. See note to 91.80. The King's minister Saṇḍakāṇḍhikūra who is named in the inser., is also mentioned in Nik.-s.

⁵ Gampola, see 86. 18.

of the Mahāvālukagaṅgā — a religious man, a mine of fair vir- 107
tues. He who gives heed to tradition, let him know that in 108
the fourth year of his reign, one thousand, eight hundred and
ninety-four years had elapsed since the Nirvana of the Sage¹.

When ye have understood how in antiquity the most ex- 109
cellent men when they had experienced the time hard to
experience³ of a Buddha, did good unweariedly without cess-
ing, such as almsgiving and so forth, so ought ye in perfect
fashion to perform all good (deeds).

Here ends the ninetieth Chapter, called "The History of
the eight Kings, of Vijayaśāhu and his Successors", in the
Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the
pious.

¹ I. e. 1350 A. D. The same in Nik. s., but Rājaraśn. has the figures
1896 = 1352 A. D. Both numbers are approximative. According to the
Lankātilaka inscription Bhuvaneśabāhu IV. ascended the throne already
in 1267 of the Śaka era, i. e. 1344-5 A. D. For the whole subject see
H. W. Conze, *HC*, p. 83, 86.

² *Dullabdhasthyaśa atidullabha* is merely tautological, *labdhvanīya* is
furthermore a spurious form, made to suit the metre.

CHAPTER XCI

HISTORY OF THE FOUR KINGS,
OF PARAKKAMABĀHU AND HIS SUCCESSORS

- 1 Now after the death of Bhuvanekabāhu there were two
 2 kings, Parakkamabāhu¹ and the discerning Vikkamabāhu².
 3 There lived then at the time of Vikkamabāhu in the fair town
 4 known by the name of Peraddoṇi³, situated in the charming
 5 neighbourhood of the Mahā(vāluḥka)ganga, an eminent prince,
 6 sprung from the Ciri family, the discerning Alagakkonūra⁴
 7 by name, adorned with majesty, faith and other virtues, full
 8 of the desire to further the Unity and the Order, of great might.
 9 "The town of Kalyāṇi shines with her palaces, bodhi
 10 trees, her superb cloisters and maṇḍapās, with walls, halls,
 11 image temples and cetiyas, with her gorgeous shops, her
 12 splendid gate-towers and arches." Now to the South of
 13 this town Kalyāṇi which is described in such words, which

¹ According to the Hapugastenna inscr. (JBA8, C. B. xxi, nr. 65, p. 502, Coomaraswamy, H.C., p. 69) Parakkamabāhu V. ascended the throne simultaneously with Bhuvanekabāhu IV. in the year 1344/5. He reigned for a time (probably till 1356/7) with him and after that along with Vikkamabāhu IV. (Hl. according to C.).

² For inscrs. of the time of Vikkamabāhu IV. see B.S.L., Report on the Kigalla District, p. 78. According to the inscr. of Vigulavatta (not far from Gampola), the fourth year of the King's reign coincides with the end of the Saka year 1282 = 1360 A. D., his ascent of the throne falls therefore in 1356/7 A. D.

³ I. e. Pendeniya not far from Kandy on the Mahaveliganga.

⁴ Our chronicle makes short work of the undoubtedly eminent personality of this man. There is a good deal more about the founder of Jayavardhana in the Hājūv., the Rājaraṭn. and the Nikāṣ. What is above all important is that Alagakkonūra succeeded in breaking the power of the Jaffna king which was then at its height. Cf. also below note to v. 9. For the Kīrtīmeran inscription of Kelani and the Alagakkonūra mentioned in it see C. A. L. R. I., p. 142; II, p. 149, 182.

was visited by the great Sage, in a place where pious people dwelt, who were devoted¹ to the Buddha and so forth, on the great lake not far from the spacious village of Dārugāma², ⁷ he built the famous town of Jayarajathanakoṭṭa³, embellished with great trains of walls, with gateways, bastions and the like. While he dwelt in the town, the mighty one, craving ⁸ for meritorious works, performed many good deeds, such as the furthering of the Order and the rest. In that town the ⁹ fifth Bhuvaneśvabāhu⁴ was (king), religious, venerating with constant reverence the Buddha and the other (sacred) objects.

¹ The single words in this compound are placed with great freedom. *Buddhānāyagattajana-kappitā-sādhū-kāra* stands evidently for *buddhānāyagattā-sādhū-jana-kappitā* (hūne. *Buddhānā* stands for Buddha, Dhamma and Saṃgha. *Yattā* means in the first place "joined with something", then "hanging on, adhering to something"; *kappitā* means "provided with something".

² The village is called so in the Rājaraṭṭo. Thus *Dārugāma* in the Mhvs. stands instead of *ava-Dārugāma*.

³ Later simply called Gotta by the Portuguese. The town covered what are now the eastern districts of Colombo.

⁴ As in 90. 64, *āsi*, thus *āhu* must be supplemented by *raja*, or else *āhu* (*āsi*) has the more pregnant meaning "he lived, he reigned". I do not believe that the Mhvs. considers Bhuvaneśvabāhu to be the name under which Alagakkonāra reigned. This opinion is found only in the Rājaraṭṭo, when it says: *Alagakkōṇa sam mānāśīrāyāṃ Bhuvaneśvabāhu-sam mahārāja-va Gaṅgāśīrāyāṃ rājyaśīrāya-pānāya devatāra geyya* "The great minister Alagakkōṇa by name who had become king under the name of Bhuvaneśvabāhu went, after enjoying in Gaṅgāśīrāyā the good fortune of the royal dignity, to the world of the gods." But in the Mhvs. we should, in this case, expect an *āsi* or *ti sāmāsa* after *Bhuvaneśvabāhu*. The assumption that Alagakkonāra and Bhuvaneśvabāhu are one and the same has now been given up (cf. JRAS. C. B. XXIV, no. 69, p. 109, note *) above all because in the Atanagala-vihāra-vamsa it is said that the work was translated in the Śaka year 1304 (= 1382/3) in the reign of Bhuvaneśvabāhu, at the instigation of Alakeśvara (or Alagakkonāra). — The tradition followed by the Rājaraṭṭo, probably confuses Alagakkonāra with his son Vira Alakeśvara who (under the name of Vijayabāhu) is said to have reigned a number of years as king, though after Virabāhu's death. For further particulars see E. W. PENEK, Alakeśvara's life and Times, JRAS. C. B. xviii, Nr. 66 (1904), p. 281 ff.; H. W. CONNELL, HC., p. 85, 89. Cf. below, note 60 v. 14.

- 10 To the community he dispensed in abundant measure regular
repasts and other alms and to achieve the furtherance of the
11 Order, he gathered the bhikkhus together, ascertained those
who lived immoral lives and had them cast forth from the
Order, but he showed favour to the conscientious obtained for
them the precedence and so made the Order of the Victor
12 shine. For seven thousand pieces of silver he had a casket
fashioned, preserved in it the Tooth Relic and sacrificed to it
in lasting reverence.
- 13 When the time of this King — after he had held sway
for twenty years¹ — had expired, a man called Virabāhu
14 attained the royal dignity, did likewise all (that was good)
such as furthering the Order and fell under the power of the
King of death².

¹ The 20th year of the reign of Dharmapala V. falls in the year 1391/2 A. D., the beginning of the reign accordingly in 1372/3. It seems, however, that he reigned for some time, if only in name, together with Virabāhu. Cf. S. de Silva, *Vijaya Rāya VI*, JRAS, C. B. xxii, no. 65, p. 316 ff.; H. W. Conisleton, *HC*, p. 89. In the inscription on the Alampundi plate (see V. Vissakara, *Et*, III, p. 224 ff.) King Virūpākṣa of the Vijayanagara Dynasty, boasts that he had vanquished the kings of the Tondāra, Coja and Pāṇḍya as well as the Siṅghala. The inser. is dated in the Śaka year 1305 for 1307 = 1383/4.

² The *Mhv.* passes over here a very remarkable episode in the history of Ceylon the knowledge of which we owe above all to Chinese sources. (Cf. J. M. SENEVIRATNE according to STUVAIS LÉVI, JRAS, C. B. xxiv, nr. 68, p. 98 ff.; further xxvii, nr. 73, p. 31 ff.) and to the Rājāv. From the different sources we gather that the son of the great Alagakkonāra, Vira Alakāsura, under the name of Vijayabāhu (VI) seized the royal dignity in battle with his brother Virabāhu. During his reign in Jayavardhamakotta a Chinese expedition of the Emperor Yang-ti under the leadership of Tsheng-huo came to Ceylon. The Chinese came into conflict with the Sinhalese ruler who is called A-le-ko-na-r (Alagakkonāra) and took the king away with them as prisoner. The Rājāv. calls the leader of the Chinese Mahā-Cin-Dosraja, the king taken prisoner by him, Vijayabāhu. Here then instead of the family name, the adopted name is given. Now it seems to me that by confusing this Vijayabāhu (VI) with V. IV. the above discussed gap in the Rājāv. is explained (note to 90.1). The probability of a mistake is supported by the fact that the Rājāv. speaks of four younger brothers of King V. who are said to

Then at a later time, in the year one thousand nine hundred and fifty-three after the final Nirvana of the holy Enlightened One, came King Parakkamabāhu¹, an abode of wisdom and manly virtue, a scion of the race of the Sun, in the charming town named Jayavardhana — to the incomparable, sublime fortune of the royal dignity and with faith in the three (sacred) jewels, he set about the holding of a festival. For the tooth of the Prince of the wise the Ruler built a three-storeyed, splendid *pāsāda* which offered a superb sight. Then he fashioned a golden casket, fair, beautifully set with the nine precious stones, and another casket in the form of a shell, gleaming in manifold splendour and set with the most exquisite jewels and which held the first casket; and yet another golden casket into which he also put the second. Finally the King who strove after salvation in the present as

have been murdered. Now Vijayabāhu IV. had in fact four brothers according to *Mhva.* 87. 16-17. According to the *Rājāra*, the capture took place A. D. 1958 = 1404 A. D. For the whole see Conneros *HC.* p. 85 f., 89. If one accepts this Vijayabāhu who is omitted in the *Mhva.*, as the sixth of the name in the list of the kings, then instead of Vijayabāhu VI. (92. 4) one must read Vijayabāhu VII.

¹ The *Mhva.* has nothing to say about the events which preceded the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI. Cf. for this H. W. Conneros, *HC.*, p. 85 ff., 89. The date given in the *Mhva.* for the beginning of the reign 1963 A. D. = 1409 A. D. is also found in the *Siddharmālakāśraya*. In another passage however in this work the date is given as 1968 A. D. = 1414 A. D. The same in the inscrip. of *Pepiliyuna* (see below, note to v. 24). It may be assumed as probable that Parakkamabāhu VI. came to the throne in 1412, remained three years in *Ragigam* (District Kalutara, Census of Ceylon 1921, II. p. 43) and removed in 1415 to *Jayavardhana* where the coronation took place. The *Mhva.* has hardly anything of historical value either to tell us about the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI., except perhaps in v. 24, that his mother's name was *Sumanā*. It is a great pity that the compiler of the third part of the *Cūlava* restricts himself almost entirely to stereotyped descriptions of festivals for the Tooth Relic. Our knowledge of modern events is gained from quite other sources. In the first place there is the *Rājāra*, also in the version given by Valentyn (*Oud en Nieuw Oost-Indië*, vol. V); further De Cœuro and De Haems (see D. FERNES, *The History of Ceylon, from the Earliest Times to 1600 A. D.*) as related by de Barros and de Couto,

in future existences¹, made a (fourth) large, incomparably magnificent casket which he covered with gold of the finest lustre, and in these four superb caskets he placed the tooth. 20 Then calling to mind all the festivals in Laṅkā celebrated by kings who were filled with pure reverence for the sacred Order of the Enlightened One, he thought: "I too will in like manner venerate him unweariedly with all the produce of my king- 21 dom²." With such reverential thoughts he celebrated in his faith sacrificial festivals in all manner of ways for the relics and the like. To the community he dispensed regular repasts, 22 together with the eight articles of equipment, month by month, as well as every year sacrificial offerings and a gift 23 of kāṭhina robes for the bhikkhus in the three provinces and a great almsgiving in pious fashion and garments every year and thereby he, the highly famed, who longed for merit, laid 24 up merit. In memory of his mother the meritorious (King) had erected in the Pappāṭa grove³ in her name the Sunetra- 25 pariveṇa⁴ and a monastery for the community and granted it many villages and fields⁵. Then putting down in that selfsame 26 place an abundant alms destined for the community, to be distributed for three days among the ascetics who had come

JRAS. C. B. xx, nr. 60 (1909), p. 14E. For the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI, I refer the reader besides Coomaraswamy, l. c. p. 90 ff. 99 f., to E. W. Perera, The Age of Sri Parakrama Bāhu VI, JRAS. C. B. xxx, nr. 63 (1911), p. 6 ff. For inscriptions of this king see E. Möllner, AIE. no. 160; H. C. F. Bell, Report on the Kēgalla District, p. 81 ff.

¹ This is probably the meaning of *bhavacittānura*. Cf. below v. 36.

² In these last *paricchada*s the language is treated with extraordinary arbitrariness. The construction of the compounds and the position of the words in them is often quite contrary to rule. The translation can therefore only give the general meaning of such passages.

³ The name is preserved in that of the *Pepiliyana-vihāra* not far from Colombo (Census, 1921, vol. II, p. 36). An inscription in this monastery is dated in the 39th year of the reign of Parakkamabāhu VI. The date of his ascent of the throne is given as A. B. 1358 = 1514.

⁴ Sunetrā or Sunetradevī, the wife of Vijayabāhu (VI) who is supposed to be the father of Parakkamabāhu VI, was a Kāṭṭiya princess.

⁵ *Gāmahette* is governed by *paṭṭa* in 26 c. Thus in my edition the column must be placed after *paṭṭa*, not after *tapassinā*.

from the three provinces, he laid up in pious fashion an abundance of merit. He had the sacred three Piṭakas together with the commentaries and the *ṭīkā*s copied and caused a summary of the teaching of the Buddha¹ (to be made). He also granted villages and the like to the scribes, that they might copy day by day the books of the true doctrine. Whatever had fallen into decay on the Mahiyāṅgaṇa-cetiya and other cetiyas everywhere he had renewed and the plaster coating repaired. In the same way he had all the stucco work and so forth carried out on the Gaṇḍāśādoṇī monastery and on the Laṅkātilaka² and others. While celebrating a great feast and a great sacrificial festival he repeatedly had the ceremony of admission to the Order performed. Thus the wise Lord of men having taken on himself the burden of government and wrought good for fifty and two years³, bestowed on the bhikkhu community, serving it in faith, twenty-six thousand one hundred and forty times the three garments and other articles of equipment and three thousand four hundred and thirty-two kaṭhina robes. Piously devoted to the three (sacred) objects he who greatly venerated the Order of the Victor, dispensed immeasurable wealth and in this wise did all kinds of good.

Dowered with faith, discernment and charitableness, a superb jewel of virtue, he recognizing the worthlessness of acquired riches, performed in such wise, continually, unweariedly meritorious works. When ye have understood that, ye as those who know and are striving after salvation in this existence and in future existences⁴, should also continually and in the

¹ I take *buddhassa sāsanaṅgaṇaṃ* *ādā* to mean this and refer the reader to titles of books like *Abhidhammasaṅgahaṃ*, *Paccayasāṅgahaṃ*, *Suddhammasaṅgahaṃ* etc. W. gives a totally different rendering. He takes *saṅgahaṃ* in the sense of "kindliness, protection, favour" and translates: "encouraged the religion of Buddha". It seems to me, moreover, that in vv. 27 and 28 special stress is laid on the literary activity of the King. Of course he only suggested the work.

² Both *vihāras*, *Gaṇḍāśādeniya* and *Laṅkātilaka* are situated not far from Kandy.

³ *Bhājā*v. and *Bhājanta*, have the same.

⁴ See above note to v. 18.

right way do a 'quantity of meritorious works' which bestow you many a happiness.

Here ends the ninety-first chapter, called 'History of the Four Kings, of Parakkumbāhu and his Successors', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ For *hataḥ guphātha* cf. 90, 104 with the note.



CHAPTER XCH

HISTORY OF THE SEVEN KINGS,
OF JAYABĀHU AND HIS SUCCESSORS

After his death, his grandson Jayabāhu¹ became king; 1
then Bhuvaneśabāhu, after he had murdered him (Jayabāhu).
After obtaining the royal consecration, he lived seven years. 2
After his death Parakkamabāhu known on account of his
learning by the name of Paṇḍita, was king in that fair town, 3
and hereafter Viraparakkamabāhu. On his death Vijaya- 4

¹ The kings in vv. 1-5 are numbers 108 (169) to 113 (175) of my list. Parakkamabāhu VIII. had two sons: Vijayabāhu VI. (VII.) and (Dharma)parakkamabāhu IX. Both seem to have been made co-regents by their father in the year 1509. But Parakkamabāhu IX., although he lived at least till 1528, was apparently of no great influence. He is not at all mentioned in our chronicle. — The Rājāv. makes Viraparakkamabāhu, not Jayabāhu, the successor of Parakkamabāhu VI. The same name appears again however later as that of Paṇḍita-Parakkamabāhu's successor. The Rājarañ. inserts a king Virabāhu before Jayabāhu to whom a reign of 12 years is ascribed. The list of the kings (= Māva 92. 1-5) in the Sinhalese chronicles is as follows:

Rājāv. Vira-Parakkamabāhu (1468—1472/3)	Rājarañ. Virabāhu (12 yrs.) Jayabāhu
Bhuvaneśabāhu (VI) (7 yrs.) (1472/3—1480/1)	Bhuvaneśabāhu
Paṇḍita-Parakkamabāhu (VII) 1480/1—1484	Paṇḍita-Parakkama- bāhu
Vira-Parakkamabāhu (VIII) (20 yrs.) ? 1484—1518	Vikrama-Parakkama- bāhu
Dharma-Parakkamabāhu (23 yrs.) 1509—1528	
Vijayabāhu (VI) 1509—1521	
Bhuvaneśabāhu (VII) 1521—1551	Bhuvaneśabāhu

bāhu was king whose adornment was his virtue, and after
 5 his death Bhuvanekabāhu was king. And after these kings,
 each according to his faith and his power, had achieved the
 furtherance of the laity and the Order, they went thither in
 accordance with their deeds.

- 6 Now Viravikkama a mighty man, sprung from the line
 of Sirisamghabodhi¹, became king in the year two thousand
 and eighty-four after the final Nirvana of the Enlightened One².
 7 Dwelling in the town of Senkhaṇḍasela-Sirivaḍḍhana³, beautifi-
 8 ed by the course of the Mahāvālukagaṅgā, he gladdened his
 subjects by the four heart-winning qualities and undertook in
 9 his faith meritorious works. The fair relic of the Prince of
 the wise he brought to a piece of land charmingly situated
 10 not far from his royal palace. Then he built a cetiya and

The years of the reigns are given according to Cumaravamsa (HC., p. 28 ff.) inscriptions: Bhuvanekabāhu VI.: inser. at Dedigama, Batt., Report of Kēgalla Dist., p. 83 ff.; Vijayabāhu VI., *ibid.* p. 85 ff. (on the Kelani inser. and Dharmaparakkambāhu, *ibid.* p. 86); Bhuvanekabāhu VII., JRAS. U. R. XXII, no. 65, p. 267 ff. See further below, note to 95. 5. The history and chronology of Ceylon at the end of the Middle Ages suffer particularly from the fact that the island was not under one dominion but was split up into several kingdoms. Those kings who were contemporaries are represented as succeeding one another. The kings in the above list reigned in Kotte (Dharmaparakkambāhu perhaps in Kelani). Then in addition to these there are the dynasties of Sitāvaka and Kandy. Viravikkama (v. 6) is according to Wickramasingha (EZ. III, p. 44) probably identical with Kumāra Dandāna, the son of Vijaya Dandāna who reigned in Kandy at the time of Vijayabāhu VI. (VII.) and Bhuvanekabāhu VII.

¹ *Mhva.* 36. 73 ff.

² = 1540 A. D. Rājaraṭṭa, has 2085 A. B. = 1541 A. D.

³ I. e. Kandy. The account evidently goes back here to the rise of the kingdom of Kandy, the high country (*uḍḍa-rata*) that did its utmost to preserve its independence as against the kings in Kotte and Sitāvaka until it fell under the power of Rājasiha in 1580. It is regrettable that the compiler has no interest in political questions, but considers only the relations of the kings to the Order. To judge by the number of figures contained in his narrative, it looks as if he had consulted a *parāṇapattika* (cf. *Mhva.* 32. 23 ff.) i. e. a book in which the meritorious works of the king are inscribed.

near to it a two-storeyed house for the Uposatha¹ ceremony, as well as round about the town eighty-six dwellings for the community furnished with a roofing of brick and so forth, made the bhikkhus take up their abode here and there, granted them maintenance and heard preached the true doctrine of the Victor. After celebrating a magnificent sacrificial festival, he hearkened in faith to fifty-five sermons of the doctrine the preaching whereof lasted the whole night. On thirty thousand leaves he had (sacred) books written down and to the Tipiṭaka he made an offering of sixty thousand (gold pieces). He had one hundred and eighty images made of the Enlightened One and one hundred and thirty caskets for the placing therein of relics and so laid up a store of meritorious works. He left his town, wandered on foot² for a day a distance of seven gāvutas³ and venerated Mahiyāngaya by celebrating with divers fragrant flowers, with lamps, frankincense and the like, a great festival. The Ruler of men betook himself also in one day to the Sumanakkūṭa⁴ and sacrificed there by pouring one hundred jars of oil into a lamp fifteen cubits in girth and five cubits high⁵. [Since his desire was fixed on the highest path⁶, he had the impassable road⁷ put in

¹ *P. dabbhānāṭṭhaṃ uposathānāṭṭhaṃ* is curious. *Māṭaka* is otherwise only an enclosed open space, a courtyard, serving for the holding of certain ceremonies. *Dabbhānāṭṭha* as attribute of *māṭaka* is unsuitable. In other instances moreover, we have only *uposathagga*, *uposathāyāra*, *uposathagāra*, showing that a house is meant. If this were not the case in our verse we might have here a structure of the type of a "double platform", E. R. Ayrton, *Memoirs*, ASC. I. p. 18 ff.; A. M. Hocart, *ibid.*, p. 57 ff.; the same in *Conseillers*, HC. p. 186.

² *Id.*, with the power of his own feet.

³ I. e. about 14 miles. Mahiyāngaya, now Alot-mayara, is 24 miles distant from Kandy as the crow flies. The King's pilgrimage is of course to the Mahiyāngaya-thūpa.

⁴ Adam's Peak cannot be reached in one day from Kandy.

⁵ The meaning of the passage is clear, but the language incorrect. The circumference of the bowl into which the oil was poured, would be about 22 ft. the height about 7 ft.

⁶ I. e. on the road leading to the highest perfection, to salvation, the path of good works.

⁷ Of course the road up to Adam's Peak.

order and provided, for the convenience of the (pilgrims) going
 19 to and fro, with seven hundred and eighty stone steps. After
 the Ruler had in this and other ways performed many meri-
 torious works, he thought to hold the ceremony of admission
 20 to the Order.] The wise (Prince) had many dwellings put
 up on the bank of the river. Thither he brought the bhikkhus
 21 dwelling in the three provinces and instituted a great festival.
 Then after specially inviting from among those bhikkhus a
 body of thirty-five bhikkhus with the Grand teacher Dhamma-
 kitti at the head, he made them celebrate a great festival
 22 and grant admission to the Order to three hundred and fifty-
 five able sons of good family whom he had himself chosen
 23 out. The King heard that in the town of Pāṭaliputta¹ (in
 days of yore), the Ruler of men Mahāsena had fed daily a
 24 community of one thousand bhikkhus, but unsatisfied even
 with this magnificent effort, he had thought of giving alms
 25 by the cultivation of a piece of land². He had surrendered
 the bliss of the royal dignity, betaken himself to the northern
 town of Madhurā³, there laboured and with the grain produced,
 26 had in faith made an offering of alms. When⁴ he heard this
 the wise (Prince) who had joy in a pure gift of alms, culti-
 vated a rice field with his own bodily powers and instituted
 with the grain produced, in blameless fashion, an offering of
 27 alms. With faith in the three (sacred) objects he presented

¹ Capital of the Maurya dynasty, now Patna in the province of Bihar on the Ganges.

² P. *satthasandhāya karitvāna*, lit. "after he had carried out the cleansing of a piece of ground." Field cultivation is considered the purest and noblest work. An offering of that which has been acquired by such work, an offering of field products is therefore characterized as *sandhāna* (v. 26).

³ The town Madhurā or Mathurā on the Yamunā (Jumna), to distinguish it from the South Indian Madhurā (Ml. 28 etc.) is called the "Northern Madhurā".

⁴ Vv. 23—26 are one sentence; *divasodāsay* in v. 26 is a subject directly governed by *satthāna*. The preceding verses with *Mahāsena* as subject are however, so constructed as if it were *dānam adāyati satthāna*. The author falls in the construction.

an offering of two thousand one hundred and eighty-two garments. Spending five hundred and eighty-seven thousand 28 pieces of money, the King had meritorious works performed therewith. Sixty and two elephants and horses and four 29 hundred and fifty head of cattle and buffaloes did the Ruler of men offer in sacrifice. Striving thus and in many other 30 ways after good, he performed many meritorious works and made himself a pathway to heaven.

Thus he performed in faith, steadfast, rejoicing in the 31 welfare of others, after discerning the worthlessness of acquired corporeal existence and other (possessions), in pious manner many meritorious works which bring many a happiness. If ye then have discerned this, as people who have great fear of the terrible evil of the cycle of rebirths, then must ye, remembering what is of true worth, relinquish all desire for corporeal existence and the like (possessions) and strive unweariedly after meritorious works.

Here ends the ninety-second chapter, called «History of the Seven Kings, of Jayabāhu and his Successors», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

CHAPTER XCIII

HISTORY OF THE TWO KINGS,
OF MĀYĀDHANU AND OF HIS SUCCESSOR

- 1 At his death there resided in the province bordering on
the sea-coast, in the fair and renowned Jayavudhannakotta
2 (and elsewhere) here and there kings sprung from the race
of the Sun. Amongst these there was one, the illustrious Ruler
3 of men, Māyādhannu¹ by name. His son was the mighty
Rājasiha by name. He went forth, fought here and there

¹ It is characteristic of the attitude of the author of this part of the *Cūḷavamsa* and of his indifference to the significant events happening in the plains, that the Portuguese are not yet mentioned. They landed in 1505 or 1506 (cf. D. Fernandes, *The Discovery of Ceylon by the Portuguese in 1505*, JRAS. C. B. XIX, No. 69 (1907), p. 284 ff.) and had their chief sent to Colombo, in the fort which they had built there. It is just as characteristic that a man of the importance of Māyādhannu (Māyādhanna) is dismissed with the mention of his name. He was the youngest brother of Bhuvanekabāhu VII., and at the division of the kingdom in A. D. 1521, had received the region between the coast land and the mountains with Sitāvaka as capital. Sitāvaka is the present Arisavella about 26 miles east of Colombo, situated on a left tributary of the Kelaniganga. In a series of severe and fluctuating struggles with his brother and his successor, as well as with the Portuguese, for the supreme dominion in Ceylon, Māyādhanna maintained himself successfully till his death in 1581. Dharmapāla (1560—1597) the feeble successor of Bhuvanekabāhu VII. who was completely dependent on the Portuguese, adopting Christianity (about 1557) in order to maintain himself with their help — is not even mentioned in the *Mahāvamsa*. As a historical source our chronicle is now hardly of any value at all. Of native sources there is only the *Mājāvali* left and it has many defects. Our main information now comes from the Portuguese accounts, above all João Ruizez, *Fatallidade historica*, Lisbon 1896 (translated into English by P. E. Pears under the title "*The Historic Tragedy of Ceilão*", Colombo

and won the victory. The victor, the great fool, even slew 4
his own father¹ and brought the royal dignity into his power,
the deluded one. In the town of Sitāvaka the King known 5
by the name of Rājasiha, for a time did good, devoted in faith
to the Order. But one day the King, after he had brought 6
a gift of alms, asked the Grand theras full of anxiety: "How
can I undo the crime of my father's murder?" Then the wise 7
theras expounded him the doctrine², but could not win over
the wicked mind of this fool. They spoke: "To undo the 8
committed crime is impossible". Full of fury like some terrible
poisonous snake which has been struck by a stick, he asked 9
the adherents of Śiva³. The answer they gave him that it

1925, 3rd ed.) and *Fernão de Queiroz, Conquista temporal e espiritual de Ceylão*, Colombo, Government Press, 1916. These sources have been utilized by P. E. Pinnis. Taking up the work begun by D. FERNANDES (cf. above, as well as note to 94. 16), Pinnis published in the JHAS, XXII, No. 65, p. 267 ff., first the important article "The Date of Bhuvanachakrān VII.", the result of which was a complete transformation of the chronology of Ceylon in the 15th century. Then there appeared "Ceylon, the Portuguese Era" in 2 vols. Colombo, 1913-14 and "Ceylon and the Portuguese 1505-1552", Ceylon, 1920. (Cf. with this S. G. Pinnis, the 'Conquista de Ceylão' by Fernão de Queiroz, S. J. in C. A. L. R., II, p. 158 ff.; 283 ff.; H. W. COMMERCE, DC., p. 94 ff.) Then for a part of the 16th century there are the lately published Portuguese archives: "Ceylon in the time of King Bhuvanachakrān and Franz Nereis 1539-1552", published and annotated by G. SCHEERMAEKER and E. A. VANSTEEN, 2 vols. Leipzig, 1928. Again "Ceylon and Portugal", pt. I., Kings and Christians 1539-1552, from the original documents at Lisbon, by P. E. Pinnis and M. A. H. FRANKS. SCHEERMAEKER's introduction to the first volume of the work mentioned above, gives a complete bibliography, a sketch of the history of the Island 1539-1552 from the Portuguese documents and a detailed analysis of the narratives hitherto existing.

¹ Whether Rājasiha who was a magnificent general and had distinguished himself at the age of 11 by his bravery, was really his father's murderer, may be doubted. Cf. note below to v. 9.

² I now prefer to read *tassa dhammay* instead of *tass' adhammay*.

³ The motives alleged here for Rājasiha's conversion to Hinduism scarcely accord with the facts. The real reason for it was that the Buddhist priesthood who had always been favoured by him and his father Māyādānne, actually joined a conspiracy got up against him by

was possible, he received like ambrosia, smeared his body with
 10 ashes and adopted the religion of Śiva. He annihilated the
 Order of the Victor, slew the community of the bhikkhus,
 11 burned the sacred books, destroyed the monasteries and thus
 barred his way to heaven. Become a (dead) tree-trunk in the
 12 cycle of rebirths, he adopted a false faith. He placed miscreant
 ascetics of false faith on the Sumanakuṣa to take for them-
 13 selves all the profit accruing therefrom. In this way the
 impious fool as he did not know what he should accept and
 accepted what he should not have accepted, brought great evil
 upon himself.

14 At that time through fear of the King, bhikkhus left the
 Order; those among them who were swayed by fear of the
 cycle of rebirths, went hither and thither.

15 Harming the welfare of the whole laity and of the stainless
 Order of the Buddha, he carried on the government only in
 16 virtue of merit formerly acquired. Dowered with sovereign
 might, the criminal brought the whole island of Lankā into
 his power and carried on the government¹.

17 Thus this monarch, equipped with royal might, manifested
 his sovereign power; but after heaping up every kind of crime,
 he fell under the dominion of Māra. When one thus perceives
 the misfortune that meets one who through sinful and false
 belief has become the victim of delusion, one should in fear,
 free from all inclination to carelessness, bring about much
 blessing.

Here ends the ninety-third chapter, called «History of the
 Two Kings, of Māyādharmu and of his Successor», in the Mahā-
 vaṃsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

the Portuguese. To justify their treacherous conduct, these clerics may
 also have invented the murder of Rājastha. Cf. PIERIS 2, p. 91. See also
 W. P. GUNAWARDHANA, Rāja Sīghra I, Parricide and Centenarian, JRAS.
 C. D. xviii, Nr. 56 (1905), p. 382 ff.

¹ The year of his death is given by the RājEv. as 1514 of the Śaka
 era = 1592/3 A. D. How great was the admiration of the people for
 this "last great king of the Sinhalese race" is shown by the fact that
 even today he receives divine honours under the name of Ganegoda
 Devīya. PIERIS 2, p. 114.

CHAPTER XCIV

HISTORY OF KING VIMALADHAMMASURIYA

In the days of this King a scion of the Sun Dynasty in 1 Gaṅgāsiripura had betaken himself to the harbour of Kolamba¹. As he did not receive permission to remain there, he went to 2 the province of Gova. After he had dwelt here a long time, he slew a mighty and famous chieftain by name Gajabāhu². 3 After the victory he received distinctions of many kinds, and because in his prudence he understood the favorable moment, 4 returned to Laṅkā. The mighty one brought the troops of the five districts of the highland country over to his side and after the death of (Rājasiha) the slayer of his father,³ 5 when the year two thousand, one hundred and thirty-five from the nirvana of the Master⁴ had arrived, he (the prince), 6 full of faith, mighty by reason of his merit, became king under the name of Vimaladhammasuriya, highly famed, in the town of Sirivaddhana.

¹ Konappa, later Vimaladhammasuriya was a son of Virasundara who belonged to the royal house. Virasundara was partisan of Rājasiha, but was slain by him for having conspired against him. His son fled to Colombo (*Kolaubattittha*) to the puppet king Mummappāla. Later he was banished to Goa (*Govataṭṭha*) where he succeeded in gaining the confidence of the Portuguese. Pians 2, p. 92 f., 112; Coxeiros, HC., p. 105.

² It was the case of a duel with a pugnacious officer. The episode is related also in the Rājāv. (p. 92 of B. Geyssens's translation). Konappa's success may have drawn the attention of the Portuguese to him.

³ Rājasiha is called *pāṇḍita* here not on account of the murder of his father Māyādhama, but on account of that of Virasundara.

⁴ A. D. 2185 = 1591 A. D. The date is right.

7 He surrounded the whole of the vast city with a massive
 8 wall on the heights of which he had placed at intervals eighteen
 9 tower structures. Then to ward off the foe, he posted sentries,
 10 freed the whole kingdom of Laṅkā from all oppression and
 11 after he had raised a princess of equal birth to the rank of
 12 first mahesī and had received his consecration as King, this
 13 famous (prince) who in his faith desired meritorious works,
 14 set about furthering the laity and the Order. The Ruler of
 15 men reflected where the tooth of the Enlightened One could
 16 be, and when he heard it was in the Labujagāma-vihāra¹, he
 17 rejoiced greatly. He had the Tooth Relic which had been
 18 brought to Labujagāma in the province of Sāparagamu² fetched
 19 (thence) and in order to venerate it day by day in his own
 20 fair town and to dedicate a ritual to it, the wise (prince) had
 21 a two-storeyed, superb relic temple erected on an exquisitely
 22 beautiful piece of ground in the neighbourhood of the royal
 23 palace. Here he placed the tooth and in lasting devotion
 24 brought offerings to it.

25 As there were no bhikkhus in the island of Laṅkā on whom
 26 the ceremony of admission to the Order had been performed³, the
 27 King sent officials to the country of Rakkhaṅga, invited
 28 Nandicakka and other bhikkhus, had them brought to the is-
 29 land of Laṅkā, made them take up their abode in the noble
 30 city of Sirivaḍḍhana and cared for them in reverent manner.
 31 Then in the Mahāvāsukagaṅgā, at the landing-place called
 32 Gaṇḍhamba, within a boundary drawn in the water⁴, he had

¹ I. e. Delgamuva, not far from Karaita, north of Ratnapura. The relic was preserved before that in Kotte. Cf. 91. 17 ff. Why it was taken from there to the monastery in Delgamuva is not known. Probably the idea was to save it from the Portuguese.

² Now Sāparagamuvu. The province which stretches in front of the south-western slopes of the central mountains, bounded on the West by the West province and on the South by the South province.

³ The cause of this decay of the Buddhist Church was in all probability due to the hostile attitude of Rājasiha towards it. Rakkhaṅga is the name of a district in Lower Burma, now Arakan. Cf. for this Panna 2, p. 141.

⁴ P. *vatukakkhepa-tvādyam*. For this term see note to 89. 70.

a fine building erected and thither in the year two thousand, 18 one hundred and forty after the nirvana of the Victor¹, he led the bhikkhus, had the ceremony of admission to the Order 19 performed in this Great bhikkhu community on many of the sons of good family and thus protected the Order of the Enlightened One. And he also made many sons of good birth 20 submit themselves to the ceremony of renunciation of the world and provided them also abundantly with the four articles of use, and after he had in this and many other ways, striving 21 after good, performed many meritorious works, he cleared himself a pathway to heaven. Later the selfsame wise King 22 made his younger brother² who had gone through the ceremony of renunciation of the world and (as member) was in the Order of the Buddha, leave the Order, entrusted him with the burden of the government and then passed away in accordance with his deeds³.

In this wise the Monarch equipped with kingly power, 23 after performing many meritorious works, adorning the Order of the Victor, made manifest a blameless sovereign

¹ 2110 A. B. = 1596 A. D.

² Senirātana was Vimaladharmasuriya's cousin. We know however (see note to 63. 54) that cousins who are brother's sons call themselves brothers.

³ Rājāv, gives as the year of his death 1525 of the Śaka era = 1603/4 A. D. Of the mighty events which took place during the reign of Vimaladharmasuriya I, the Mahāvamsa says not a word. The whole period was filled with wars against the Portuguese and their protégé Dharmapala which were carried on both sides with the greatest bitterness and even cruelty. In A. D. 1524 the Sinhalese destroyed a Portuguese force which had advanced to Kandy. Three years later Dharmapala died after reigning nominally in Kotte 47 years. In his will he left his kingdom to the King of Portugal. The Portuguese solemnly took possession of the lowlands in the name of their sovereign. The kingdom of Kandy maintained its independence. During the reign of Vimaladharmasuriya the Sinhalese came for the first time into contact with the Dutch through the embassy under *Joris van Spilbergen* which coming from the east coast of the Island in 1602, visited the court of Kandy. For the whole subject cf. Penna 2, p. 112-166; Conquerors, II C., p. 105 ff.

power¹. And yet such a discerning man whose highest good was religion², fell under the power of Māra: when one has once realised the permanent condition of misery and of all other (suffering), one must find his joy in unwearyed striving.

Here ends the ninety-fourth chapter, called «History of King Vimaladhammasuriya», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The first two lines of the strophe resemble in wording the final strophe of 93.

² The sing. *caturā sabbadhamma dāṇiṇo* must be referred to *mahipā*; it is, as so often, placed within the sentence, instead of behind *cāḍiṇo*.



RAMA VARMA RESEARCH INSTITUTE

TRICHUR, MALAYA LATE.

7 JULY 1931

CHAPTER XCV

HISTORY OF KING SENĀRATANA

After Senāratana by name had received consecration as 1
king, dowered with meritorious works, such as generosity and
the rest and at all times full of reverence, he inclined his 2
subjects to him by the four heart-winning qualities. He
celebrated a festival for the Tooth Relic and a great alms-
giving. The mahest of the (late) king who had been his elder 3
brother¹ he made his own first mahest and dwelt in that same
town (of Siriraj)dhana).

At that time merchants in the seaport of Kolamba who 4
had sojourned there a long time, had become puffed up with
pride². They were, all of them, the so-called Paraṅgi³, he- 5
retical evil-doers, cruel and brutal. They spread themselves
over several fair provinces, laid waste fields and gardens, 6
burned down houses and villages, destroyed the noble families
and in this wise brought ruin on Sihala. They broke into 7
the towns, into the relic shrines and monasteries, destroyed
the image houses, Bodhi trees, Buddha statues and so on, did 8
great harm to the laity and the Order, built at various places

¹ The wife of Vimaladharmasuriya I. (see note to §4. 23) Donna
Catherina, who was considered the rightful heiress to the kingdom
of Kandy. Vimala had married her to give his reign a semblance of
legitimacy. *Process*, 2, p. 125.

² P. *ussamvaka*. W. "they waxed very strong", which is of course
also possible.

³ I. e. Franks, designation of the Portuguese who are mentioned here
for the first time at a period when their power was declining. What
is said in the sequel about the Portuguese agrees with what we know
about Azavedo's procedure.

9 forts¹ and carried on war² unceasingly. King Sensirātana brought the Tooth Relic to a safe place in the province called Pañcassata³, almost impassable owing to forests, mountains and rivers, made people dwell there who were entrusted with the preservation of the relic and thus protected the Tooth Relic well, showing it the usual reverence. Then he left the city (Sirivadhūma). Movable goods, the sons of the former king and the admirable Mahesi, excellent by wealth and virtue, who was pregnant, he took carefully with him in a litter⁴ and betook himself to Mahiyāgaya⁵. While he sojourned in this town the Queen bore under a particularly favorable constellation, a splendid son⁶, dowered with brilliant marks. At that time the leader of the foe saw at night a terror-stirring dream. From the east⁷, from that town (Mahiyāgaya) there came a spark of the size of a glow-worm. Growing ever bigger it came to the centre of Kolamba, waxed here to unmeasured size and burned up everything at once. On that day in consequence of its splendour, the enemy who had penetrated to Sirivadhūma, took flight with the haste of those who are threatened with peril. The Ruler of men guarded his son

¹ P. *kalakottake bandhita*, Cf. the name of the town Jayavadhūmakotte 391 75 called Kotte for short.

² P. *vijjhamāna bhāta*, a periphrastic formation corresponding to the Sinh. combination of the present gerund in *oḥu* with the verb *sittinā*. See GUNAR, *Literatur und Sprache der Singhalesen* § 43a. The root *bhā* expresses a continuous state.

³ I. e. Pansirapattu or Panchara, NE. of Kandy.

⁴ P. *yoggeva*, no doubt rightly explained by W.

⁵ In the year 1611 A. D. the Portuguese general de Albuquerque advanced as far as Kandy. He found the town deserted and placing a garrison in Balane to secure the entrance to the mountains, he returned to Colombo. This is connected no doubt with what is related in v. 11-12. The date of the prince's birth must have been 1612 (see next note).

⁶ This is the son of Sensirātana and Dona Catharina, the widow of his predecessor. He was called Mahā-Asthāna and later as king called himself Rājasiha. His stepbrothers Kamsirāsiha and Vijayapāla were the Queen's sons by her first marriage. See below v. 22.

⁷ P. *paratthimavatsābhikāgā*. Wrongly translated "from the western side" by W.

who grew by degrees like another moon, and the other (sons) with the greatest care, and when he saw that the right time 18 had come, he took all his possessions and returned to the city of Sirivuddhana. When his sons, namely the sons of the former 19 king and his own son, were grown up he, because his heart clung to them in love, was minded to divide amongst them 20 his mountain-girt provinces, had (their names) properly written on three leaves, laid the leaves near the Tooth Relic¹, led the 21 princes thither and made them take their choice. Then when 22 the Ruler beheld the leaves which fell in this wise: to the eldest Kumārasīha the province Uva, to Vijayapāla the province Mātala and to the youngest Rājasīha the five highland 23 provinces² — he when he saw that the lot with the five highland 24 provinces had fallen to his own son, rejoiced greatly and he said: "He hath great merit."

The Ruler of men thus gave over the direx provinces to 25 his sons. Then, giving alms and performing other meritorious works according to his capacity, for the furthering of the people and the Order, he lived (yet) seven years³.

The Ruler who out of love had divided the provinces 26 among his own and his other sons in order to protect Laṅkā and this our Order was doomed then to inevitable death.

Here ends the ninety-fifth chapter, called "History of King Senāratana", in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The lottery becomes in this way a sacred action, an oracle. The division of the Kandy kingdom took place in 1628.

² P. *veḍḍha pūjā saṭṭhaṭṭa*. These are districts lying round about Kandy, the most important parts of the kingdom with the capital. Uva embraces the eastern, Mātala the northern districts. It should be noted that the form *Mātala* for Mātala is only found in the latest part of the Cūḷavamsa (96. 4, 98. 65); in 66. 71 we have *Mahātala*.

³ The year of his death is therefore 1635 A. D. The Rājāv. gives 1555 of the Saka era = 1633/4 A. D. One must assume that from 1628 to 1635 Rājasīha was reigning along with his father. Kumārasīha had died before Senāratana, as is pointed out by the Rājāv. The struggles with the Portuguese lasted with fluctuating success throughout Senāratana's reign. Of importance are the negotiations of the Sinhalese King with the Dutch which began in the year 1612. For a time (in 1628) the Danes tried to get a footing on the island. For the whole subject see PIERCE, 2, p. 171-221; CONNORON, I. c., p. 109 ff.

CHAPTER XCVI

HISTORY OF KING RĀJASĪHA

1 Now while these Rulers of men, sojourning in different
 2 places, enjoyed for a short time the pleasures of the royal
 3 dignity in harmony, they carried on war against the Paraṅgis
 4 and gained here and there victories¹. But then they quarrelled
 5 among themselves, the three brothers, the Lords of men, One
 6 of them, the renowned Rājāsīha by name, dispossessed the
 7 older brothers and made them his vassals. After one (Kumāra-
 8 sīha) had been put to death by poison, the other (Vijayapāla
 9 who dwelt) in Mātula, mounted a chariot, and started off with
 10 one man whom he took with him and betook himself after
 11 crossing the frontier of the province, abroad². But the other,
 12 Rājāsīha³, a man whose commands were not lightly to be

¹ In the year 1630 A. D. the prince won a brilliant victory at Randesivela in lower Uva over the Portuguese who had occupied Madulla and had plundered and set fire to the town. The Portuguese general, Constantino de Sa y Noronha fell himself in the battle. Four years later (1634) Kumārasīha was removed by poison, and to this time belong the first disagreements between Vijayapāla and Rājāsīha. There must however, have been a reconciliation, for Vijayapāla took part in the battle of Gannoruwa in 1638 and the victory of the Sinhalese was largely owing to him. The Portuguese under the leadership of their captain-general Diogo de Mello had occupied and destroyed Kandy, but they evacuated the town and on their retreat were surrounded and annihilated. See below note on v. 22. The successes in war of the Sinhalese against the Portuguese are glorified in the poems *Koṣṭantinu-haṭṭuṇṇ* and *Mahabāṭaṇṇ*. See A. DE SILVA, JRAS. C. B. 1918, No. 68 (1915-16), p. 56.

² For Vijayapāla's tragic fate according to Portuguese documents, see P. E. PERES, *The Prince Vijayapāla of Ceylon, 1634-1654*, Colombo 1928.

³ Or perhaps "the second (or *para*) Rājāsīha".

slighted, difficult to attack, hard to vanquish, of a lion-like courage, took possession of the kingdom as it had at the beginning belonged to his father; as if he had been created by gods, pious in the faith, for the furthering of laity and Order, he was mighty, dowered with the bravery of war-skilled heroes.

Once upon a time indulging in youthful sports, he went a-riding with a companion who had mounted an other horse, himself on horseback. At a given sign, the horse ran along the street, but sunk in a marshy place. Determined and courageous, the powerful (prince) sprang aloft, swung himself on to the horse of his next companion throwing off its rider and rode on his saddle further. At the dangerous ford of the Gaṅgā, which is called Svayambhambha¹, he sprang from the rock on this side and reached the rock on the opposite bank.

After manifesting in this and in many other ways, his strength, the greatly renowned (prince) cherished the wish to care for the furtherance of laity and Order. He prepared every kind of implement of war and the rest, took in order to open the fight, the battle-equipped Siṅhalas and set forth under a favorable constellation, at a happy moment from the town of Sīrīvaddhana with elephants, steeds and princely retinue, with great warriors and so on, with great dignitaries and so on, with foot soldiers who bore bows, swords, spears and other weapons, in front the music with drums, kettledrums and other instruments. In order to acquire merit by the giving of alms and the like, the King took also the sons of Buddha² with him, marched hither and thither, made the sound of the war drums resound like the terrible clash of thunder and fearless began the fight. At first he fought a great battle with the foe in the five highland provinces³, slew many of

¹ Now Ranten-tota, ford over the Mahaveliganga.

² I. e. bhikkhus.

³ P. *pañcavaddharatthayeṣe*. Here we have another example of the influence of the Sinhalese language. *-eṣe* is equivalent to the Sinh. *-o*, the genitive suffix, and is used as postposition with local meaning. As to the beginnings of such forms in an inscription of the 10th century see Wiesnermannson, EZ. I. 182.

18 the miscreants and drove the powerful wretched enemies from
 every place; breaking down their strongholds, the Ruler of
 19 men remained victorious. The foes fled, looking on every side
 (for safety), tortured with fear, flung themselves from the
 20 mountain precipices, sprang into the mountain gorges and were
 scattered as cotton in the wind, when he rushed into the
 battle-field like a terrible lion that has broken into a herd
 21 of elephants¹. After fighting again and again in different
 places with the foe and killing and putting to flight numbers
 22 of people on the side of the enemy, he conquered several
 provinces, freed them from oppression, destroyed the strong-
 holds and so manifested his great power².

23 There were however, many of the enemy who tortured by
 fear, had hidden themselves and escaped. They stayed for a
 24 time in the fortresses at the various places near to the sea,
 then these heretical villains began again and again to plunder
 25 the different provinces. When Rājashā whose commands were
 not lightly to be slighted, heard thereof, he betook himself
 26 to Dīghavāpi³ which lies to the East. While he, experienced
 in all the statecraft taught by Manu, sojourned there, he
 27 received news of the Olandas⁴. He thought that good, sent

¹ The language of the passage is in the form in which the MSS. have it and as I have adapted it in my edition, absolutely incorrect. It is however very doubtful whether we are justified in altering it, as the fault may lie with the author. The Col. Ed. alters *mīṣavāṇa* or *vibbhaṇa* into *vāṇa* or *vibbhaṇa*. I should nevertheless prefer to keep these words and to read *sampatto* in v. 20a instead of *sampatto*, which may be influenced by *yāṇaṇa*.

² There can be no doubt that the preceding verses refer to the victories of the Sinhalese arms mentioned in the note to v. 2. But the events are described in quite general terms.

³ For the district Dīghavāpi see 74-89 and note.

⁴ Vimaladharmasūriya I. had already been in touch with the Dutch (see note to 94.22). Under Rājashā II. Dutch envoys already appeared in 1547, and the King on his part sent three of his own people to Admiral Westerwold, who lay with his vessels at Goa, to blockade it. Dutch vessels appeared at Batticaloa where a Portuguese garrison lay, and the united forces of the Sinhalese and the Dutch forced the Portuguese to surrender the fort (18th May, 1558). A treaty was made with

two dignitaries to their fair land, had a number of people
 fetched from there in many ships and when these arrived in 28
 the rich, prosperous, thickly populated coast lands near Digha-
 vāpi, he showed them favour. As he wished to display to them 29
 the military forces of his Laṅkā, he sent them the command
 to look quietly on. Then he began the fight with the foe 30
 stationed near, slew a great mass of the foe and captured the
 stronghold. The Ruler of men made over the place to the 31
 inhabitants of Olanda and showed them many other favours
 and made everyone contented.

From this time onward the Ruler of Laṅkā began at the 32
 head of both armies¹, to carry on war by land and water on
 every side. He destroyed the fortresses situated at different 33
 places and protected by massive stone walls, slew the enemy,
 erected in the whole of Laṅkā strongholds garrisoned by strong 34
 forces and after absolutely annihilating the foe who had ra-
 vaged so long (in Laṅkā) and freeing (the country) from their 35
 oppression, he in order to ward off the enemy, charged the
 inhabitants of Olanda with the protection of Laṅkā in the
 places situated on the sea. After arranging that these were 36
 to appear before him every year with presents of divers kinds,
 the Ruler of men returned, like Vajirapūgi² when he had 37
 conquered in the battle against the Asuras, with his retinue
 to his town (of Siriyadhjāna)³.

Westerwold which was entitled in Dutchia whither Rājashā sent two
 envoys. It enabled the Dutch to gain a firm footing on the island.
 These are the events to which vv. 25 ff. refer. The narrative describes
 in one-sided fashion — not surprising in chronicles — the achievements
 of the Sinhalese. That they alone conquered Hattigama is not in
 accordance with the facts. The chief merit belongs to the Dutch guns.
 Pines 2, p. 227 ff.; Coomaraswamy, *HO.*, p. 117 ff.

¹ That is the Sinhalese and the Dutch.

² Name of Indra: "who carries the thunderbolt (*vajra*) in his hand."

³ Here again in the *Mhva.* only the one-sided Sinhalese standpoint
 is given. In diplomacy the Dutch were without doubt superior to King
 Rājashā, while on the other hand, he was a very unreliable ally for
 them. Rājashā's reign was not so void of friction after the treaty
 with the Dutch as one might assume from our chronicle. It was disturbed

38 Now while the Ruler of men, Rājasīha, dwelt here in safety,
the wise (prince) sought out in fitting manner those people who
were worthy of a position and granted them various positions
39 such as that of *senāpati* and the like. Villages, fields and so
on, everything that had belonged to the Buddha and the
gods, in accordance with tradition, the Ruler of men gave
40 back as it had been formerly. He brought kings' daughters
hither from the town of Madhurā, and after holding sway
41 powerfully for fifty and two years¹, the mighty Monarch
Rājasīha, who had guarded as his own eye in the best way
the Order of the royal Sage of the line of the Sun and the
laity, he the best of men went over to the king of death.

42 Thus this exceeding mighty King, the ruler, who under-
stood how to annihilate hostile forces, was yet unable with
his strength and his other qualities to gain the mastery over
death. When the discerning have grasped from the first, at
the very beginning this superiority of Māra, they must with
great zeal continually do meritorious works, such as alms-
giving and the rest.

Here ends the ninety-sixth chapter, called «History of King
Rājasīha», in the *Mahāraṃpa*, compiled for the serene joy
and emotion of the pious.

internally by risings, as in 1641 by that plotted by Vijayapāla. The
struggles between the Portuguese and the Dutch went on, the luck
being sometimes on the one side sometimes on the other. Finally the
Dutch triumphed. With the capture of Colombo (A. D. 1656) the fate
of the Portuguese dominion was sealed. Immediately after that there
was a breach between Rājasīha and the Dutch. The conflicts of the
years which follow were multiplied for Rājasīha by inward strife. Last-
ing peace was not achieved, in spite of a peace farnable to the Sin-
halese being signed in the year A. D. 1677, until the death of the King
ten years later. *FRANS 2*, p. 228-290; *FRANS 3*, p. 1-35; *COORNAERD*,
HC., p. 119 ff., 133 ff.

¹ *FRANS A. D.* 1635 (death of *Senāratana*) till A. D. 1687. Rājāv. makes
the mistake of giving 1614 of the *Saka* era = 1692/3 A. D. as that of
Rājasīha's death.

CHAPTER XXVII

HISTORY OF THE TWO KINGS, OF VIMALADHAMMA
AND HIS SUCCESSOR

Now his son Vimaladhammasūriya became king whose 1
ornament was his faith and other virtues, who was a friend
of the three jewels. As his first mahesī he took the daughter 2
of the mahesī in the town of Madhurā who had been fetched
thence, gladdened his subjects by the four heart-winning
qualities and protected uninterruptedly in peace and justice 3
the realm of Laṅkā as a lord of men whose ornament was
his virtue.

Having attained his consecration as king, the King in pious 4
faith in the doctrine of the Victor, prepared in divers ways every-
thing needful for a sacrificial festival for the Tooth Relic. In 5
honour of the Tooth of the Prince of the wise he erected a
fair, three-storeyed *piṣāḍa*, resplendent with all kinds of
(artistic) work, and for the sum of five and twenty thousand 6
silver pieces he had a reliquary made which he covered with
gold and ornamented with the nine precious stones. In this 7
great reliquary that resembled a cetiya of precious stones, he
laid the Tooth of the Victor.

As the Ruler thought to hold the festival of admission to 8
the Order, he prepared fair garments and other articles of
use, five hundred of each kind, made everything over with 9
gifts and the like, together with a royal letter to prudent
officials. These he sent to the country of Rakkhaṅga and 10
invited¹ the bhikkhu community with the *thera Saṅgha* at

¹ The embassy to Rakkhaṅga (= Arakan, see note to 94.15) took place in the year A. D. 1697. The Dutch supplied the vessels for conveying the monks from Burma to Ceylon, which contributed not a little

11 the head. Thus he brought thirty-three bhikkhus to the
 beautiful town of Sirivaddhamma, made them amid tokens of
 12 respect, take up their abode there and provided them with
 the four necessities. Then after he had erected in the right
 way, as formerly, a building at the landing-place of the
 13 Gaṅgā, within a boundary drawn in the water, he brought
 the bhikkhu community thither, had the ceremony of ad-
 mission performed on thirty-three sons of good family and
 14 so helped the Order of the Victor to attain new glory. Then
 full of faith he had one hundred and twenty sons of good
 15 family appointed to the position of śramaṇeras, provided them
 abundantly with the four necessities, had them instructed in
 the true doctrine and thus laid up a store of merit.

16 Thinking of the great merit that lies in the use of the
 feet¹, he betook himself to the Sumanakūṭa and celebrating
 17 with jewels, pearls and the rest, with offerings of gold and
 precious stones and with divers stuffs and so forth, a great
 festival, he tarried there seven days.

18 He sheltered with a great umbrella of silver the foot-print
 of the Sage which was stamped on the Sumanakūṭa and ce-
 lebrated a great festival.

19 Day after day he listened to (the sermon of the) doctrine
 and since even on days which were not uposatha days, he
 20 kept the ordained fasts, he did much good. In this and many
 other ways, longing for good, he day and night unweariedly
 21 did much good. The King having thus cared for the welfare
 of the laity and the Order, fell under the power of death
 after a reign of twenty and two years².

to the friendly relations established between them and the court of
 Kandy. The ceremony of the *uposampadā* took place again (*pure riyā*)
 at Gaṅḍhambatittha (Getaṃba). The description in v. 8 ff. has a great
 resemblance also in the wording to that describing analogous circum-
 stances under Vimaladhammasuriya I. (94. 15 ff.). Compare for instance,
 v. 12cd with 94. 17cd, v. 15ab with 94. 20cd.

¹ I. e. the merit of the pilgrimages. See 92. 15 ff. where the pil-
 grimages of Viravikkrama to Mahiyasgaya and to Adam's Peak are
 described.

² Vimaladhammasuriya II. reigned from A. D. 1667-1707. He was

Generous in all that is good, as in the giving of alms and 22
the like, with great wisdom, full of devotion he helped the
excellent teaching of the excellent King of the wise, the one
and only guide of the world, to attain glory. Help ye, there-
fore also evermore and unweariedly the excellent doctrine to
attain glory.

Thereupon his son Sirivīraparakkamanarindasīha be- 23
came king. This King who was an abode of discernment and
manly virtues, in order to protect the royal dignity in Lankā, 24
fetched princesses from the town of Muḥhurā and made them
first mahests. He performed meritorious works such as the 25
giving of alms and the like, celebrated daily a festival for the
Tooth Relic and thus laid up a store of merit. He showed 26
care for the bhikkhus who had been admitted to the Order
during his father's life, had many sons of good family submitted
in faith to the ceremony of world-renunciation and thus
furthered the Order. In order to venerate the Mahiyāṅga- 27
cetiya that was erected already in the lifetime of the Buddha,
the mighty King betook himself thither, sacrificed to the cetiya 28
with all kinds of coloured stuffs and while celebrating a sa-
crificial festival with silver and golden flowers, abundantly 29
with divers fragrant blossoms of the kind that grow on land
and in water¹, with food solid and soft, he laid up much merit.

At the head of a great army he went forth twice to the 30
same Mahiyāṅga and celebrated a great sacrificial festival.
Twice the Lord of men went in faith to Sumanakūṭa, sacrificed 31

extracordinarily pūjā compared with his predecessors. Although at first
he had again and again to remonstrate with the Dutch about the non-
fulfilment of obligations to which they had pledged themselves in the
treaty of 1677 (see Conarscos, HC., p. 135; Piers 3, p. 46 f.) and al-
though the Dutch managed to put the King off, there was no war during
this whole period.

¹ The compiler must have had something of the sort in his mind.
But I am doubtful if we should simply change *śāṭheḥaḥaḥa* into
śāṭheḥa as does the Col. Ed. It might be better to assume an obscure
expression on the part of the author. His knowledge of Pāli was by
no means excellent. It is also hard to imagine that the second reading,
if it did stand there originally, could have been corrupted into the first.

32 there and so laid up a store of merit. At the head of a great
 retinue he left the great city, went forth to the great (city)
 33 Anurādhapura and celebrated a great sacrificial festival. He
 had a robe made the size of the robe of the Deliverer¹ and
 sacrificed to the Tooth of the Deliverer in diverse ways with
 34 articles befitting the sacrifice. Not far from the capital², on
 the fair bank cliff of the Gaṅgā, the Lord of men laid out
 35 in a great cocopalṇa plantation a suburb by name Kuṇḍasālā
 and dwelt there³. And there at that self-same spot he had
 dwelling huts put up in fitting manner and made sāmaṇeras
 take up their abode in them. He performed day by day many
 36 good works like the giving of alms and the rest, had books
 copied and when he saw that the temple which his royal
 37 father had erected in the capital for the Tooth Relic, had
 fallen into decay, his heart was grieved. The Lord of men
 38 had the beautiful (temple) rebuilt, two-storeyed, splendid; he
 provided it with a portal resplendent with all kinds of bril-
 liant ornaments, made it so that with its stucco coating it
 39 resembled a mountain of silver, provided it with a graceful
 roof and had thirty-two jātaka depicted in coloured painting⁴
 on the two walls of the courtyard: the Vidhura-jātaka⁵, the
 40 Guttāla- and Ummaggajātaka; the Ādabivāhana-, Mahākāṇha-,
 Sutanu- and Chaddanta-jātaka, the Dhammaddhaja-, Dhamma-
 41 pāla- and Mahājāṇaka-jātaka; the Padumāsava-⁶, Dhamma-
 sonḍa-, Mahānāradakassapa-, Mahāpaduma-, Telapatta- and
 42 Collapaduma-jātaka; the Sattubhatta-, Auḍabhatta-, Campeyya-

¹ P. *seṅgaṭṭh*, lit. "he who has gone well" who has gone ahead on the path to deliverance. R. O. FAUSSELL translated the word by "Fadvolhender" the "path blisher" or "path accomplisher".

² P. *mālapura*, Sīrāḍḍhana (Kandy) is meant. The Gaṅgā is, as often, the Mahaveliganga.

³ Kuṇḍasālā about four miles E. S. E. of Kandy, situated on the Mahaveliganga. The popular name for the King was Kuṇḍakāla after this place which was his favorite residence.

⁴ I am anticipating the words *ime dvattitisaṃjātaka vicittarattakammassa kōṣṭhapaṇṇa* in v. 44 d. 46 a.

⁵ The Vidhuraṇḍita-jātaka, no. 545 of the FAUSSELL edition.

⁶ Padukasakumāsava-jātaka, no. 432 of FAUSSELL.

and Sasajātaka, the Visayha-, Kusa-, Sutasoma-¹, Sivi- and 43
 Temajātaka²; the Culladhamuddhara-³ and the Saccapkiraka- 44
 jātaka, the Dummedhajātaka and the Kūlingabodhijātaka;
 the Silavajātaka⁴ and the Maṇḍavyajātaka⁵, as well as the
 Vessantarajātaka. While thus having these thirty-two jātakas 45
 faultlessly represented in coloured painting, the Lord of men
 laid up an immeasurable store of merit.

In the midst of the town he had erected round the great 46
 Bodhi tree, the cetiyas and the temple of Nāthasura⁶ -- en-
 closing them on all sides -- a fine wall of stone, massive, 47
 lofty, brilliant in its coating of stucco, like to a necklace of
 pearls adorning the necks of the ladies of the town and created
 thereby for himself an abundance of renown.

Among the sūmaperas who lived at his own time (was one) 48
 who was dowered with the virtue of a moral life, who ever
 rejoiced in unweariedness, in the many works of elucidation 49
 and in the words of the Enlightened One, a poet, one learned
 in the scriptures, ready of speech, teacher of a host of disciples,
 renowned, who devoted his life to his own and to others' weal, 50
 who shone like the moon in the heaven of the Order in Laṅkā.
 For this sūmapera, Sarapatkara by name, who was an abode 51
 of faith and of knowledge, rejoicing in unweariedness, the
 Ruler -- distinguishing him again and again by honours 52
 spiritual and secular -- had a reliquary made one and a
 half cubits high for preserving the relic of the King of the 53
 wise, the Enlightened One, the highest Protector of the world.
 He covered it with gold, set it with 700 jewels and made
 over the shimmering casket to the sūmapera together with 54

¹ There are two jātakas of this name, the Mahā- and Cullasutasoma-jātaka, no. 537 and 525 of FAHSENALL.

² Temiya- or Mīrapakkhujātaka, no. 538 of FAHSENALL.

³ Culladhamuggajātaka, no. 374 of FAHSENALL.

⁴ Silavāgajātaka, no. 72 of FAHSENALL.

⁵ Apparently the Kaṇḍūpāyana-jātaka in which the ascetic Maṇḍavya plays the chief part, No. 444 of FAHSENALL.

⁶ Like Nāthadeva (100, 248) the name of Viṣṇu as the protecting deity (*vācha*) of the island.

the relic as well as many books about the true doctrine and
 55 so distinguished him. The Lord of men granted him clothing
 and other necessities as well as numerous people for service
 and honoured him thus with secular gifts.

56 To procure a long existence for the true doctrine, the Lord
 of men invited (that same) Saragamkara in befitting manner
 57 and had composed by this discerning *sāmañera* who strove
 after pure enlightenment, that work on the true doctrine
 entitled the *Sāratthasamgaha*, furnished with eleven thousand
 sections¹, further a commentary in the tongue of Laṅkā on
 58 the *Mahābodhivaṃsa*², as well as a commentary on the work
*Bhesajjamanjūsā*³ which was composed at the time when the
 former King Parakkamabāhu held sway in the town of
 59 Jambuddon⁴ by that discerning *thera*, assiduous in well-doing
 who was head of the (*bhikkhus*) dwelling in the *Pāncapari-*
 60 *vega*⁵, with the wish that thus those who have devoted them-
 61 selves to the spiritual life should be spared illness. After the
 wise (prince) had performed these and many other meritorious
 works and had carried on the government for thirty and three
 years, he fell into the power of death⁶.

¹ P. *gaṇṭha*. The meaning "section" is uncertain. In no case are we justified in referring to *Wason*, as does W., according to whom the skr. *gāṇṭha* denotes a distinct number of syllables (32), because *Wason* is speaking of a metre, which however W. himself admits.

² For this see GREEN, *Pālī*, p. 25, no. 29. 2; MALALASEKERA, *Pālī Literature of Ceylon*, p. 156 ff. Whether by Saragamkara's "commentary" (*utthasayana*) the *Mh-Bodhivaṃsa* is meant seems doubtful.

³ "Medicine-chest". Probably a collection of recipes of the character of the Indian *Bhaiṣajyaratnāvalī* DONAT, *Medicin*, p. 2f.

⁴ Parakkramabāhu II. is meant.

⁵ A monastery called *Pāncaparivegānṭha* is mentioned 67. 61. One could also translate: "of the *bhikkhus* living in the five *parivēga*".

⁶ The *Chronicle* concerns itself solely with the king's relation to the Church and is fulsome in its praise of his merits. It does not mention a single word about the conspiracy which nearly cost him his life. As little does it mention the very unsatisfactory conditions existing for the most part in the territories occupied by the Dutch nor the conflicts, arising out of questions of commercial policy, between the people of

After the King had attained the highest bliss on the is- 62
land of Lankā, he left behind his kinsfolk, his friends and
his life, and went to that state where all that is left behind.
When ye have grasped that, ye remembering the truth of the
oral admonitions of the highest Sage, should practise meri-
torious doing that surpasses all else, that brings the bliss of
deliverance, that grants the bliss of the world of the gods,

Here ends the ninety-seventh chapter, called «History of
the Two Kings, of Vinvaladhamma and his Successor», in the
Mahāraupsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the
pious.

Kandy and the foreigners. Like his predecessor Narindaśiḥa he kept the
peace. At any rate the Dutch understood by occasional gifts to keep
him in good humour. *Prioux* 3, p. 62—63.



CHAPTER XXVIII

HISTORY OF SIRIVIJAYARĀJASĪHA

1 After Narindasīha's death the younger brother¹ of the
 2 Mahesi of this king² became king, adorned with the ornament
 3 of virtue. Known by the name of Sirivijayarājāsīha, he
 4 was after the attainment of his consecration as king, piously
 5 attached to the Triad of the jewels. He was diligent in
 6 hearkening to the sermon of the doctrine, unwearied, discern-
 7 ing, ever full of zeal intent on intercourse with pious and
 8 good people. To establish his own dynasty he fetched prin-
 cesses from the town of Madhurā and made them his chief
 5 mahests. He won over the people in Laṅkā in the best manner
 possible by the four heart-winning qualities and took up his
 6 abode in the fair town (Sirivaddhana). The Mahesis of the
 King, too, gave up the false faith to which they had been
 long attached, and adopted in the best manner possible the
 7 true faith which confers immortality. They heard the in-
 comparable, true doctrine of the Buddha, the highest Protector
 of the world and thus adored with constant devotion the
 8 Buddha and the other (sacred) objects. In their faith they

¹ In *Asaṅgaphabbāsa* I see the influence of the Sinhalese on the Pāli of the chronicler, *vā* being added in Sinhalese at the end of attributive adjectives.

² According to 97, 24 (cf. 98, 43), Narindasīha's Mahesī was a princess from Madhurā. With the ascent of the throne by her brother a foreign dynasty is thus introduced into Laṅkā. The series of Sinhalese kings ends with Narindasīha. The succession of Vijayavājasīha meanwhile, was not undisputed. A strong party at court supported the claims of Urambava, a son of Narindasīha's by a concubine. It seems however, that he voluntarily renounced the throne. Later on he lived safe and sound at the court of Kandy.

worshipped the Tooth Relic day by day with sacrifice, with
 jasmine and other blossoms and with all kinds of flower
 festivals, with sweet betel mixed with camphor and other 9
 things, with lamps with fragrant oil, with sweet-smelling
 sandal wood and so forth, with divers kinds of fragrant in- 10
 cense, with sugar and honey and with other drugs, with gar-
 ments, ornaments and so on, with silver and golden bowls 11
 which were abundantly filled with all that one can chew, eat,
 sip, drink and taste, with curtains, carpets and the like, with 12
 many articles of use and with costly robes — and thus and
 otherwise laid up a store of merit. They kept constantly 13
 the five moral commandments¹ and the uposatha vows even
 on days that were not uposathas, diligent in hearing the
 (sermon of the) true doctrine. Even as the yak cows (protect 14
 their tails)², so they preserved the memory of the Buddha
 and the other (sacred objects)³. They worked for their per-
 fection, had sacred books copied. They strove after the bless- 15
 ing that lies in generosity. They understood to perfection
 the regular offering of food and other (occasional) distribution
 of food to wandering or sick (bhikkhus). They were not 16
 attached to acquired wealth but dispensed (it in) continual
 feeding and the like. They made young people renounce the
 world, showed them favour of many kinds. They had good in- 17
 struction given in the knowledge of the sacred scriptures and
 of pious duties and by dispensing always what was desired
 they were like to a wishing-tree. Kind beyond measure and 18
 very full of pity they thought of all people in Lankā as a
 mother of her children, and were merciful and mines of virtue.
 They had images and reliquaries fashioned in the best manner 19

¹ P. *pañcasīlāni*. Cf. with this *Mhvs. text* I, 62.

² Cf. with this passage *Buddhavarṇan* 2, 124 f. *yathāpi amari vāḥaḥ
 kiṇḍalī, paṭirāḷaggatam | apeti maraṇam tattha va rikopeti vāḥadhī | ta-
 then catuḥ bhūṭaṇa sīlāni paripūriya | parivāḥa sabbadā sīlāni amari
 riyā vāḥadhī* — an allusion to the legend that the yaks would rather
 die than have any harm happen to their greatest ornament, their tail.

³ There are six different *anussatiya* — *Buddha*, *Dhamma*, *saṅgha*-,
śīla-, *vāḥa*- and *devatā-anussatā*.

possible and always fearing every sin and ever rejoicing over
 20 every meritorious deed, adorned with the ornament of such
 and many other virtues, they were highly regarded in the
 21 whole island of Lankā. The King had dwelling-places erected
 here and there and made the sāmaṇeras take up their abode
 22 in them and pious as he was, he showed them full of zeal,
 much favour with garments and other necessities, heard the
 23 splendid true doctrine from these sāmaṇeras and revered
 (especially) the sāmaṇera Saṃpaṃkāra by name who strong
 in faith dwelt in the Ūposathārama, who was a mine of virtues.
 24 He invited him and had a commentary on the four bhagavatas¹
 made by him in the language of Lankā and thus protected
 the knowledge of the sacred scriptures.

25 Since the Lord of men had heard from foolish people out-
 side (of the Buddhist Order) that great evil would befall if
 26 he were to place the relic in a new relic temple, he gave
 orders that this should be done by other people² and betook
 himself thence to another town. While he sojourned there
 27 the dignitaries assembled and together with the caretakers³
 and other people, they tried with all their might to open the
 28 reliquary. But although they tried the whole night long they
 did not succeed. The dignitaries went thither and told the
 29 matter to the Great king. When the King heard that, he
 came in haste to the splendid town and after the Ruler had
 reverently made offerings with all kinds of fragrant flowers,
 30 with lamps, incense and the like and shown his reverence,

¹ For purposes of recitation the whole of the Tīrthuka is divided into *śāḍḥapāḍḥas*, sections of equal length. There are said to be 2547 of these (*Chūḍaṃga*, 3, v.). It seems to me, however, as if the word in our passage is used instead of *śūḍḥa*. The commentary would then have embraced Uḍḍha-, Majjhima-, Saṃyutta- and Anguttara-Nikāya.

² The passage is wrongly rendered by W. *śāḍḥas* *paraga* is not governed by *kāḍḥa* in 26b, it belongs to *paraga*, but *kāḍḥa* must be supplemented by the object ("it") from the preceding.

³ *Vatṭakāraḥ* (meaning literally "fulfilling the duty or the task") refers I believe, to the guardians who were appointed just at that time, to look after the shrines and see that they were kept in proper condition. See *Prasen* 3, p. 70.

he took hold of the lock and at once opened the reliquary without difficulty. Then after opening one after the other the caskets inside it, he beheld the Tooth of the Enlightened One. "It is accomplished, with success" uttering these joyful words, he assembled the inhabitants of the town, prepared a great feast and celebrated a great sacrificial festival. As he gazed on the wonderful (relic) the Monarch was transported with joy and enthusiasm. As offerings he presented an elephant and a horse, jewels, pearls and the like, took the sacred Tooth of the Prince of the wise in the lotus of his hand, showed it forth and so caused all to rejoice in perfect fashion. The relic temple built in the time of former kings he furnished with all kinds of stuffs interwoven with gold, lit lamps with divers-smelling oils, had filled jars placed about, and then in this gaily decorated temple, like to a heavenly temple, he placed on a silver throne the Tooth of the Prince of the wise. He arranged a great festival, made a sacrifice to the relic and after cleansing the whole town in a worthy manner and strewing it with sand he placed during this festival of the Tooth Relic, round about the temple, within in the court and without on the terrace, further in the royal court and in all the streets on either side with lofty poles placed upright, an unbroken series of festive arches, bound thereon banana stalks and adorned them fair with areca and coconut blossoms and other flowers. With the brightly hued, gleaming and shimmering streamers tied bunch-wise to the points of the poles, the sky above the town looked pleasant as if it were filled with flights of cranes. Here and there he placed in due order filled jars and in the *mapajapas* in a circle in front of the temple terrace he fastened canopies shimmering with silver and golden and other embroideries, hung thereabout brightly gleaming curtains, spread there in fair fashion carpets resplendent with many a work of art and also strewed around the five kinds of flowers, *laja* and the like¹. Then after the Ruler had put the whole

¹ P. *lajapajapamalahā*, lit. "that in which *laja* is the Bṛh". See for this PTS. P. D. x v. *laja*. This is the name for the blossom of the

city in order so that it looked as if the former kings of Laṅkā were celebrating a festival with the thought that in like
 48 fashion the King of the gods makes a feast in the city of the gods¹, he himself with royal ornaments adorned, gathered
 49 together in that town the sūmaneras who dwell in Laṅkā, further the lay brethren and lay sisters, all the inhabitants of the town and the people who dwell outside in the provinces.
 50 Out of mercy towards them² the Ruler of the earth for whom pity was the highest, flung himself on the ground in most
 51 humble posture³ and so worshipped the Tooth of the Prince of the wise. Then the King took it in the lotus of his hand
 52 and his heart filled with the highest joy, he left the relic temple. With silver umbrellas, with a golden casket, with
 53 row upon row of fair fly whisks, with manifold offerings of flowers, consisting of silver, golden and other blooms, with
 54 divers jewels and pearls, with robes, ornaments and many other sacrificial articles, with the firefold music⁴ he celebrated a great sacrificial festival, like to a stream flowing on uninter-
 55 ruptedly. Then the King, the Ruler of Laṅkā betook himself

dhūmegha ardhora. W's version is quite different from the passage. He takes *kīṣa* in the sense of "roasted rice" and remarks "Probably when roasted bursts and the grain inside the husk expands in the shape of a beautiful white flower. These are used on public occasions and festivals as a mark of respect, for showing the ground whereon a shrine is taken or on which a high person walks over."

¹ The style is extremely stilted. Literally the passage should be translated thus: "showing the town in such a way that one would be obliged to say: in such wise did the former princes of Laṅkā celebrate a festival, whereby they thought: thus doth the King of the gods etc. etc." The idea is this: the King has adorned the city as magnificently as the kings of yore were wont to do on like occasions, and the splendour they displayed was due to the fact that they imitated divine models.

² He will not rob the people of the purifying spectacle of the sacred relic.

³ P. *pañcagatibhīḥśaḥ*, lit. with a body in which five (parts of the body) lie fast. Candana thus explains the term: "to prostrate oneself before a superior so completely that the forehead, elbows, waist, knees and feet rest on the ground."

⁴ See note to 55.30.

to the maṇḍapa outside (in front of the temple) which was adorned with divers bright ornament and standing here, displayed the sacred Tooth. Having thus given the greatest joy 56 to the mighty multitude gathered round, he brought the Tooth Relic back to its place. Thus by bringing full contentment 57 to all as if by the sight of the Buddha in person, he laid up a store of much good.

Now after the Lord of men had offered abundantly with 58 all kinds of ornament, such as gold, jewels, pearls and the like, with sacrificial offerings like elephants, horses, slaves 59 male and female, with flowers like jasmine, champaka¹ and other blossoms, with fragrant sandal wood and the like, he 60 bethought himself of the great blessing inherent in a sacrifice of lamps. Hence the Lord of men issued the command that in their own town and in the eṭṭiyas in the divers provinces on one and the same day², people should make an offering 61 of lamps, and in that selfsame night he gathered together the people and celebrated a sacrifice of lamps with seven hundred 62 and ninety thousand, six hundred lamps. Thus with burning 63 lamps the Ruler of Lankā made the land of Lankā like to the star-strewn firmament. With an offering of three hundred³ 64 thirty and three thousand, eight hundred flowers he laid up a store of merit.

This King rich in virtue who found joy in causing images 65 of the Buddha to be made, had erected in Alakalenna⁴ and other viḥāras in the province of Mātula, as well as here and there in the rock temples of the various (other) provinces, Buddha 66 statues in life-size, in recumbent, standing and sitting posture and new eṭṭiyas which bring happiness to living creatures, and he had many decayed image houses restored and increased 67 thereby showing favour to the people, the quantity of his merit.

¹ *Michelia champaka*; Sinh. *sapa-mol*.

² The words *ekadhe va* must be taken in the oratio recta.

³ For *baṭi* which here probably means 100,000, see PTS. P. D. a. v. In has the general meaning of an extremely high number.

⁴ Now the Alu-viḥāra not far from Matale situated in the cleft of a mighty primordial landslide.

68 In the town of Sirivadhana the Lord of men did away
 with the royal palace and many other buildings that had
 69 been founded formerly but had meanwhile fallen into decay.
 In place of these the Lord of men built new houses which
 70 excelled by reason of their mason work and the like, made
 fine gates¹ and erected a magnificent gate-building furnished
 with iron gateways, adorned with ornaments² of divers form
 and consisting of two storeys.

71 While he resided in this town, he full of zeal when listen-
 ing to the sermon of the doctrine, had mandapas erected
 72 within the royal courtyard. He furnished them completely
 with coloured arches and the like, put up canopies, spread
 73 seats, brought then with great ceremony³ many preachers of
 the true doctrine thither, made them be seated and lay hold
 74 of their white fans. Then he hearkened to the good, heart-
 penetrating doctrine as it was preached by them along with
 enlightening explanation and the like, and filled with pious
 75 joy the Ruler honoured it with gold and silver, with lamps,
 incense and the like, with divers coloured stuffs, (in short)
 76 with sacrificial articles of every kind, the Monarch himself in
 common with the dignitaries and the troops and so on many
 occasions laid up a store of abundant good.

77 Now when the King heard through the true doctrine that
 spiritual offerings⁴ are a great thing, he intent on the wel-
 78 fare of the people dwelling in the various provinces, had
 dwellings and sermon halls erected here and there in places
 79 fitted for the assembling of a great multitude of people. Then
 the Lord of men sent to the various places numerous preachers
 of the doctrine and others, had the people gathered together
 and the true doctrine preached to them and in this way he
 offered a spiritual offering.

¹ One is tempted here to join *cāraṇāntreṇi gajeteṇa* with the following
apadrāsasamāyateṇa, but for its giving a scarcely tolerable tautology.

² P. *hastakamasa*, lit. "creeper work".

³ P. *madhusūdana*, not as W. translates "with much trouble". That
 would be *mahāsādhana*.

⁴ P. *dharmamūḍa*, every kind of religious instruction. The opposite
 is *ānārambha* "secular offering" (food, clothing etc.).

The infamous Parasgis, the infidels, the impious ones who 80
at the time of King Rājasinha had still remained behind in
the town and now dwelling here and there, rich in coming, 81
endeavouring by gifts of money and the like to get their creed
adopted by others, led a life without reverence for the doctrine 82
(of the Buddha). When the King heard thereof he became
vehemently indignant, issued commands to his dignitaries, had 83
their houses and their books destroyed and banished from the
country those who did not give up their faith¹.

On the Sumanakūṭa made sacred by the footprint of the 84
Enlightened One the Ruler celebrated a sacrifice of lamps and
all other festivals. In Anurādhapura, in Mahiyangaya and in 85
other places he likewise celebrated a great sacrificial festival.
To east and west (of the town) where water made the road 86
impassable, he had stone bridges put up for the comfort of
those coming and going.

When the Monarch realised that the Order of the Victor 87
was declining because a bhikkhu community was not to be
had in Lankā he was greatly moved. As he was minded to 88
invite a bhikkhu community, he considered in every possible
way where the Order of the Sage could possibly still exist.
Then he heard from the Olandas² the welcome news that the 89
Order still existed in various countries, in Pegu, Rakkhaingā,

¹ The King's measures are thus directed against the Roman Catholic Church and against the Portuguese still settled in the country. For the Catholic mission in Ceylon at the time of the Dutch settlement and its ultimate suppression see PIERIS 3, p. 70 f.

² The only passage where Vijayarājasinha's relations with the Dutch are noted. If in spite of the friction caused by trade, these relations led to no open rupture, this was largely due to the easy going and at times really feeble policy of the Dutch. Their forbearance was met by increased claims on the part of the court of Kandy. An embassy to Pegu was first sent off in the year 1740. The Dutch Company placed a vessel at its disposal which was however wrecked off the coast of Pegu. A second embassy seems to have gone to Siam in 1741. Envoys of the Sinhalese king came also in 1746 to Siam and succeeded in persuading a number of bhikkhus to undertake the journey to Ceylon. Vijayarājasinha however, died 1747 before their arrival. See COMBERSON, HC, p. 119 f. and especially p. 164; PIERIS 3, p. 71 f.

90 Sāmiṇḍa¹. Now in order to test the condition of the Order
 of the Sage in these various countries, the King had letters
 91 carefully written in the sacred language², gave them over to
 ministers and other dignitaries and sent these forth singly.
 When the Lord of men heard the news that in the kingdom
 92 of Ayodhyā³ the Order existed in all its purity and in the best
 condition, in order to bring from that same country sons of
 93 the Victor to Laṅkā, he sent dignitaries thither to whom he
 gave a writing together with many gifts and sacrificial implements.
 94 For the placing therein of the Tooth of the Prince of the
 wise the Monarch had a fair, golden reliquary made one and
 a half cubits high and encrusted with costly jewels and pearls.
 95 But before it was finished his merit was exhausted⁴ after he
 had reigned eight years.

96 This prince who was adorned with the ornament of faith
 and of many other virtues, who was at pains to purify to the
 utmost the splendid Order of the Buddha, that best of men after
 he had done much good, went finally thither to Nāguci⁵.

97 In this wise did the King of Laṅkā whose joy was in the
 welfare of others, who worked for his own and others' salvation,
 carry on the government, as best among the best, the Ruler
 of men who loved virtue. Ye who wish for your prosperity
 in this world and for abundant happiness in the world beyond
 must therefore wholly give up indolence and do a multitude of
 meritorious works which will bring you many a happiness.

Here ends the ninety-eighth chapter, called «History of
 Sirivijayarājasūta», in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene
 joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ Name of Siam.

² P. *ambhāsā* "fundamental or main language", i. e. Pāli.

³ Ayodhyā, now Ayodhya, name of the old capital of Siam, north
 of Bangkok, situated on the banks of the Menam. Cf. J. DEGENHAR,
Indische Fahrten (1927) I, 111 ff.

⁴ The *puṇḍra* in virtue of which he had attained the royal dignity.
 For "reigned" the original has *jhīva* "lived (as king)".

⁵ Skr. *namuci* is the name of one of the demons slain by Indra. In
 Pāli Nāguci is a designation of Māra (S. I, 67¹⁰; A. II, 15²⁰) specially
 of Kilesamāra (Jāt. V, 465²⁸), in our passage of the god of death.

CHAPTER XCIX

ACCOUNT OF THE KING'S CONSECRATION
AND OF OTHER FESTIVALS

After the passing of this Monarch dowered with splendid 1
virtues, his brother-in-law¹ became king of kings. Gifted with
physical beauty (he was) a delight to the eyes of the people,
filling the whole superb island of Laṅkā with splendour, a
prince of glorious grace.

When in the island of Laṅkā the year two thousand, two 2
hundred and ninety since the nirvāṇa of the Enlightened One
had come² this Ruler of men whose joy was the welfare of 3
Laṅkā, comforted his subjects who were afflicted by their part-
ing from the Great king. This whole people racked by 4
suffering, like to the darkness (which sets (in) when the sun
after it has illumined the whole world, goes down — the fur- 5
famed King made free from grief, like to the (newly) rising
sun which illumines the whole world (afresh) and having taken 6
over the royal dignity of Laṅkā, he made everyone joyful to
the utmost. After attaining his consecration as king, the
Lord of men who was devoted in faith to the Triad of the 7
jewels, Buddha and the others, strove unweariedly after merit.
The highly famed one had the whole town (of Sīrivaddhana) 8
cleansed and decorated with stuffs, triumphal arches and the
like. Then he gathered together the whole of the inhabitants
of Laṅkā completely in the fair, glorious town and moving 9
along with royal magnificence, the Great king whose merit

¹ The brother of Vijayarūjassāha's Mahesī who according to §8.4,
came from Maḍhurā. He had come to the court of Kandy with his
sister and with his father Naresappa Nayaker.

² — A. D. 1746. The right year for Vijayarūjassāha's death is 1747.

was now having its effect¹, marched round the town, his right side turned towards it, thus making known that the realm of Lanka hereft of its king had again a king. The Lord of men dowered with abundant merit, resided in Sīrivuddhāna. The virtuous one had (already aforetime) made the firm resolve² to shelter the Order of the Sage and now under the name of Kittisirāṣaṭṭha he ruled gloriously this our Lanka. Enjoying the good fortune of the royal dignity of Lanka, full of discernment, recognizing that his wealth consisted in faith, he mindful of what things are of worth and of what things are worthless, prepared in piety a festival for the three sacred objects, Buddha and so forth³. He gave up evil friends and enjoyed intercourse with the learned people; he passed his time with the good and hearkened to the incomparable doctrine. Pious and wise as he was, the Lord of men distinguished between what should be done and what should not be done. What should not be done he avoided, but to that which should be done he held fast. By the four heart-winning qualities he made all people well disposed to him and he was worthy of the praise of the learned. Hearing that reward lies in a spiritual offering⁴ and success in the hearkening to the true doctrine and merit in the copying of works of the true doctrine, as also in sacrificial festivals for the doctrine he thought; that which is in accordance with the true doctrine⁵ must be done. He had maṇḍapas erected in

¹ For *puṇṇaṇaya* — here used as an adjective — see note to 37. 139.

² P. *paṇḍitaṇaṃ kateṇṇa*. I regard *kateṇṇa* again as a compound verb formed under the influence of the Sinhalese, of the type *gacchamāṇ*; *gacchēṇ*. The King had already made the resolve in a former existence. The effect in the present of his meritorious *kamma* is that he becomes king of Lankā (P. *puttāva Lankāya āvare*), and he can now carry out his resolve.

³ V. 6c to the close of v. 11 is a single sentence. The construction is however, quite inorganic and it is impossible to translate the sentence as a whole. It is the same with the following.

⁴ See note to 98. 77.

⁵ P. *saddhammaṇa* must be understood adverbially. Cf. *śāṣ. dharmataḥ* "according to law or rule, lawfully."

many places for sermons, made canopies therein of stuff of 17
 varied colours, furnished them in every possible way with
 arches and other ornaments, lit lamps and spread seats, brought 18
 thither with worthy service and honour preachers of the true 19
 doctrine, invited them full of reverence, made them sit down
 on the well prepared seats, made these preachers recite parts 20
 of the true doctrine and listened with devotion the whole
 night long to many suttantas, such as the Dhammacakka
 Suttanta¹ and others. Since he recognized the worthlessness 21
 of body, life and wealth as worthlessness and the worth of
 listening to the true doctrine as worth, he was pious and 22
 joyful and celebrated in common with the dignitaries and the
 troops, a great festival with articles of sacrifice of every kind.
 For the welfare and blessing of the multitudes dwelling within 23
 and without the town the Lord of men repeatedly had spiritual 24
 offerings offered and thus performed a meritorious work con-
 sisting in spiritual offerings.

Full of reverence towards the bhikkhu community² who 25
 had come from Rakkhaṅga, towards the bhikkhus of Lokaṇā
 and towards the many sāmaṇeras, who had renounced the
 world, the Lord of men showed them favour with offerings 26
 of robes and other necessities and had the Paritta and other
 salutary texts recited by them. Thus on many occasions he 27
 furthered the true doctrine, made offerings of necessities and
 so increased the store of his merit.

At a cost of nine thousand, six hundred (kaḥāpapas) he 28
 in his piety had a magnificent golden book made. On its 29
 golden leaves he had many Suttantas inscribed such as the

¹ What is meant is the story of the Buddha's first sermon in
 Bārāṇasī to the *pañcavaggiya bhikkhu*, the companions of his earlier
 period of asceticism. The account is given in the *Vinaya*, *Mahāvagga*
 I. 6. 10 ff. (= I. B ff.). Cf. S. V. 420 ff.

² Bhikkhus from Rakkhaṅga had come to Ceylon under Viṇaladhamma-
 suriya I. (31-35) and under the second king of this name (47-100). Kitti-
 siri had some brought from Siam. This is narrated as a kind of ap-
 pendix in 100. 54 ff. In all probability the Siamese monks are to be
 considered as included in this passage.

30 Dhammacakkha Sutta and others and had these recited by
preachers of the true doctrine the whole night long. Honour-
ing them with many articles, he listened repeatedly to the
31 incomparable doctrine. The Lord of men called scribes together,
made them copy out in one day the Dīgha-Nikāya¹, showed
32 them much favour and then had the sacred text preached the
whole night long in the right manner. He celebrated a great
33 sacrificial festival, listened to (texts) and recited himself. In
his piety he had the Samyutta-Nikāya and many other books
34 copied and gave the scribes money. People who had renounced
the world and inhabitants of houses² had other sacred books
carefully copied and when these were shown to him he was
35 highly pleased, showed them with money and other gifts much
favour and thus in his pious zeal took a share in the merit of
other dwellers in Laṅkā.

36 Yearning for merit the Lord of men betook himself with
his retinue to superb Anurādhapura. Here the King sacrificed
37 to the Bodhi tree and the sacred cetiyas with elephants, and
horses, with gold, silver and the like, and thus in divers ways
38 laid up a store of pious works. Then too in royal splendour
the highly-famed Lord of men visited the Mahiyāṅga-cetiya
and the superb Nakkhā-cetiya and revered them by the
celebration of a great festival and so laid up a store of merit.
39 In order to honour with sacrifices the beautiful cetiyas and
vihāras erected by the Lord of men Parakkama in superb Pu-
40 laithinagara, the highly famed King rich in faith, betook
himself thither with a great retinue and sacrificed to them in
41 the right way. Endowed with faith and other virtues the King
also honoured the Rajata-vihāra³ and brought together a store
of merit.

42 After a sacrificial festival for the lotus-hued patron god
and other deities such as was popularly recognized as bring-

¹ P. *Dīghāyamaṇi*; *āyama* is synonym for *nikāya*. The same in 23 *samyuttāyama*.

² P. *pubbajāṇa* and *gahapattā*, i. e. priests and laymen. The sentence in 34-35 is linguistically quite incorrect.

³ Now Hidi-vihāra, north of Kurunegala.

ing luck even in the days of former sovereigns of Laṅkā¹,
 he had for the purpose of a military display², the whole town 43
 without exception put in order like the city of the gods. He
 gathered together all the inhabitants of Laṅkā and in the town 44
 he had the people from the individual provinces separated and
 made them dwell in different places, provided with standards. 45
 Then he had the symbols³ in the temples of the gods placed
 on the back of an elephant. He had the elephant surrounded⁴ 46
 by divers beaters of the drum and the tambourine and by
 crowds of dancers⁵, by various groups of elephants and divers
 groups of horses, by people wearing the Brahman dress of 47
 various stuffs and with (divers) ornaments, by people carrying
 divers umbrellas and divers fly-whisks; by various groups of 48
 women and various groups of dignitaries, by people carrying
 divers shields and divers swords, by such as carried divers 49
 spears and various symbols⁶, by such/as carried various stuffs

¹ Something of this sort must have been in the mind of the chronicler when he wrote this passage with its absolutely confused style. *Maṅgala-samavāya* must be taken as attribute to *paṇḍa* contained in the compound which follows [42c d]. The Cat. Ed. tries at least to smooth away the difficulties by reading instead of the "śāloka" of the MSS. "śāloka" ca. I fear this amounts to a correction of the author.

² P. *veṇṇigadavantaṭṭhāya*. W. does not give the full sense of this expression. That a military tournament is meant is clear from verses 44-45 ab. The assembled people are divided according to the individual local contingents of which the army is made up. Each contingent has its special flag. The army thus forms the main element in the festive procession.

³ P. *devatāhīna-āraṇḍhāni*. Skr. *āraṇḍha* means besides "weapon", "implement" in general. W. translates quite correctly "the emblems of the gods that were in the temples".

⁴ Anticipates *antthim parivāṛiṇa* in v. 51.

⁵ The compound is not in the least clear. *Madhalaṅkata* at the end seems to be an adjective form; *saṃkīṇṇa* might be used substantively as is often the case with the past part = "accumulation". The wearisome repetition of *vāṇa* in the sequel is probably meant to express the endlessness of the procession. The same occurs in 85. 112 ff. and 88. 117 ff. The words *soṇṇa* and *rūpiṇa* are repeated in the same way in 85. 26 ff. and 89. 19 ff.

⁶ Here again *draḍḍha* is used. I should prefer here to take the word

- 50 and various banners; by people who had come from various
regions and who understood the different tongues; by such as
were practised in the various arts and by divers artisans —
51 with such and many other people he had the elephant sur-
rounded, ordering them to go immediately in front or behind.
52 Thereupon the King set forth, like to the Prince of the gods,
with great (and) royal splendour and marched round the whole
town, his right side turned towards it. Finally¹ they all
arrived again and entered (the town) according to their rank².
53 When our King of kings³, dowered with faith, wisdom
and other virtues, was wont every year to hold the Āsāḥi⁴
54 festival, he was minded beforehand to celebrate a sacrificial
festival for the Buddha. He had a canopy fastened on the
55 back of the royal elephant beautifully ornamented with gold
embroidery. Then he had the elephant whose task was as
56 the bright moon⁵, decorated with ornaments and then sur-
rounded by (other) elephants whose riders held in their hand
silver umbrellas and fly-whisks⁶ and flowers of every kind, by

in the same sense as in v. 45, as "weapons" are already mentioned in the foregoing.

¹ P. *sūḥhite* used as adverb, as also in v. 58.

² This verse is a good example of the utter neglect of style where the subject *o rājā (sakkhamānava, katra)* in the same verse is followed by the plural predicate *paribanta*.

³ P. *sachāḥam rājazājanam*. The expression "our King" is particularly noteworthy. In the whole of the Mahāvagga it occurs only here under Kittisīrīrājasaḥa (cf. also v. 133 and 163, as well as 100, 229) and seems to prove that our section was composed under this king and during his lifetime, cf. v. 76 ff. and note to 100, 300. The construction of the sentence is again quite confused. The subject stands in the acc.; *-gagāḍaḥo* which I regard as a transposition of *-āḍiḥaḥo*, is changed by the Col. Ed. into *-gagāḍaḥo*. But does this help us much? The sentence remains in disorder.

⁴ The Āsāḥa month corresponds to June-July. The festival held in this month brings in the rainy season. H. Kern, *Manual of Indian Buddhism*, p. 100.

⁵ P. *suddha-candī-ratna*. I separate the compound thus, *candī* seeming to me to stand for *skr. candīa* or *candria*. The explanation is however, uncertain.

⁶ The acc. *raḥasācchattacāware* is governed by *gahaka* in the follow-

people having in their hand articles of sacrifice and wearing garlands of flowers, by people with various banners and pennons 57 and by such as wore divers garments, by various royal dignitaries and by people come hither from various regions. Finally 58 the Lord of men placed the splendid sparkling casket of gold in which the bodily relic¹ of the Buddha was contained 59 carefully under the canopy and by the strewing of flowers let a rain of flowers rain (upon it). With the shouts of the 60 cries of "Hail!", with the sound of the shell trumpets and the cymbals and with the rattle of the various drums celebrating high festival², good and pious people their hearts filled 61 with astonishment and admiration, with hands folded before the brow, paid lasting reverence (to the relic). But the Lord 62 of men had the Tooth Relic revered with all kinds of particularly costly sacrificial gifts by people who bore lamps on poles and who were festively attired. Then placing at the 63 head the relic which holds the first place among all things worthy of reverence by gods, demons and men, he ordered 64 all the rest, such as gods³ and men to follow behind. He himself in royal splendour to the strains of hymns of praise which promised happiness, set forth in all the majesty of a Great king, with great magnificence showing men how even 65 thus the King of the gods in the city of the gods is wont to celebrate high festival for the relics.

Dowered with faith and many other virtues, devoted to 66 the Buddha, his Doctrine and his Order, collected, mindful of what is worth and of what is worthless, ever performing meritorious works, such as almsgiving and the like; distinguish- 67 ed by splendid virtues, piety, wisdom, mercy, shining over the

ing compound. Thus we have again to do with a compound resolved into its component parts (= *rañḍasakattacāwuraṇḍapṇṇāyāhakaṇḍaśāhaka-māhi*).

¹ Not "relics" (W.); it is only a case of the Tooth Relic.

² I am inclined to think that *śāṇḍa* which might be the direct equivalent of the skr. *śāṇḍanta*, belongs to the following *juraḍḍa paṇḍa*.

³ By *surā* are meant the figures of deities or divine symbols which are carried in processions.

island, with faith in the Enlightened One, living according to the good doctrine of the Sage, dowered with the ten powers¹, ever giving alms and performing other meritorious works unweariedly and full of zeal, mindful of what is worth and of what is worthless, he ever acted in this way for the welfare of all men.

- 68 With great ceremony he instituted day by day a great
 69 festival for the Tooth Relic, reverential towards the triad of
 the jewels. His own community which had been received into
 the Order in his own time, he provided in pious reverence
 70 from his own property with the four articles of use. Devoted
 in piety to the true doctrine he listened again and again to
 (the preaching of the) doctrine and accumulated in pious re-
 71 verence numerous meritorious works. He furthered as during
 the lifetime of the Buddha the Order of the Victor and in-
 72 creased the happiness of the people dwelling in Lankā. When
 he heard of the doings of former kings, of Parakkamabāhu
 and others, he recognized it as right and imitated their doings.
 73 He learned the duties of a king, was filled with reverence for
 kingly duties, shunned the (four) false paths, schooled himself
 in the four heart-winning qualities, showed his brothers and
 74 others all favour by befitting action, made them contented
 and won their hearts by caring for them in the right way.
 75 In this manner the Sovereign of Lankā, the Lord of men,
 whose joy was in the welfare of others sheltered in the best
 way, ever unweariedly the Order of the Master as likewise
 the laity, and when he learned the history of the many rulers
 of men who had formerly been kings in Lankā, he mused on
 their deeds and made the resolve: "I also will fulfil the duties
 76 of a king." In making this resolve he thought of the work,
 entitled *Mahāvamsa*², in which the ancient history of the
 kings of the great dynasty as of those of the lesser dynasty
 77 is narrated in the form of verses, from *Mahāvamsa* to (the

¹ See PTS. P. D. n. v. *bala*.

² For this passage see my edition of the *Cālavamsa*. I, Introduction p. IV/V.

kings of) Hattiselapura¹. And the King of Laṅkā caused an 78
 examination to be made in due order of this book existing on
 the island of Laṅkā and² of the same chronicle of the kings
 of Laṅkā brought from the Sāminḍa country —, of these two 79
 books separately — and when he heard that the Mahāvamsa 80
 was deficient, he also caused the unknown history of the kings
 of the latter time — beginning with Parakkamabāhu up to the
 kings of the present time — to be written down and to be
 continued (thus) the royal chronicle.

Thus while he neither transgressed the commandments (laid 81
 down) for a king nor the precepts of religion, the Lord of
 men carried on the royal government in justice and peace. In 82
 accordance with the duties of a king he daily did good, such
 as almsgiving and the like, mindful of the sublime religion,
 practising the four heart-winning things, practising generosity 83
 and friendly speech and care for the welfare of others, and con-
 stant in condescension. To show the world that he respected 84
 his royal brothers³ as himself he assigned the two uparājas
 vehicles and retinue and every kind of distinction, made them 85
 thus completely contented and thus showed forth in the best
 way the fourfold heart-winning qualities. These two who 86
 in this wise attained distinction, celebrated each for himself
 a great festival for the Tooth Relic. They had books copied

¹ I. e. Kurunegala. According to this passage the chronicle came down to the time of Parakkamabāhu IV., who resided in Kurunegala. The MSS. confirm this where after 80.103 a new section begins. The mode of expression in this passage (v. 80) is only in so far incorrect as the reign of Parakkamabāhu IV. does not begin the new part but stands at the close of the old. That the Sinhalese Mahāvamsa goes further than the original Mahāvamsa of Mahānāma is not expressly stated. The Mahānāma of the Malvā-vihāra in Kandy, Tībhātucava, was entrusted by the King with the task of comparing the two chronicles and of completing the Sinhalese Mahāvamsa (cf. P. E. PIERRE, 3, p. 142). In all probability, therefore, he was the author of chapters 90.104 to 100 of the Mahāvamsa.

² The King had two brothers of whom the one was brought with him and his sister to Ceylon by their father Narenappa Naynker (PIERRE 3, p. 78) while the youngest was born there.

87 and gave the scribes money. They invited the bhikkhu com-
 munity and each for himself continually gave them alms, such
 88 as constant maintenance and the like. By listening to the
 pious doctrine they learned to distinguish between what should
 be done and what should be left undone, abhorred sinful
 89 actions and were full of zeal for meritorious deeds. By testing
 they discovered the ablest, most skilful and most pious sāmaṇeras
 and to these sāmaṇeras they presented as gift the eightfold
 necessities¹, so that they were worthy of a king, had the
 90 ceremony of admission to the Order performed for them and
 took care that they were rightly instructed in the precepts of
 monastic discipline and in the suttantas. Then they had
 dwellings erected which was a great blessing² (for themselves),
 91 made the monks dwell therein caring for them meanwhile in
 worthy fashion full of reverence. They considered in every
 92 way what should be done for the laity and the Order, developed
 in accordance with the intentions of the King, kindness to-
 wards the good and sternness towards the bad, according to
 93 their deserts, strove in this wise and with other means after
 good and acted according to the intentions of the King as
 good friends of the laity and of the Order.

94 Many former kings for the sake of gaining the royal
 dignity or for other reasons did not look on each other as
 95 brothers or otherwise (as friends), but fought one another and
 as a result of their discord their subjects were even so minded.
 But these three (brothers) who had yet attained such royal
 96 power, shunned all discord and showed no weaknesses. They
 dwelt together in one town and were ever friendly with one
 97 another as their own shadows. Thus there was never the least
 enmity among them on account of the royal dignity and they
 developed the virtues of the Bodhisatta in the Sīlavajātaka³

¹ See note to 60, 71.

² On account of the merit, the *puñña*, inherent in such performances.

³ Cf. Mahāsīlavajātaka (Nr. 51), Facsimile I. 261 ff. The point of the comparison lies in the fact that the Bodhisatta as King Mahāsīlava of Benares, although his position was threatened by the Kosala king, undertakes no deed of violence in order to preserve his kingdom.

The Licchavis too of Viśālā carried on the government in 98
harmony and without discord and won thereby the victory¹.
Rulers of men of little discernment, infatuated by the beauty 99
of the maiden Laṅkā, did what they ought not to have done
and fell in consequence into much misfortune. But rulers of 100
great discernment, made happy by the beauty of the maiden
Laṅkā, did what they ought and were thereby happy and
famous. As rulers of this kind have these three Lords of men 101
held fast to harmony, and I say: that was wonderful.

When the Great king, rich in virtue, saw his brother to 102
whom he had granted the umbrella and other distinctions
enter (in pomp) with royal retinue, he rejoiced, gazed at him 103
again and again and realized thus in himself the unique,
sublimest spiritual perfection².

As the highest in the dynasties of the princes of the earth, 104
as supporting pillars of the Order, possessed of immeasurable
virtue, living according to the pious doctrine, shunning to
follow the path of evil, associating with pious friends, desirous
of reaching the road to the salutary path of deliverance — thus 105
these Rulers dowered with pious virtue, who saw in faith their
highest good, did honour with sacrifice in piety to the 'Tooth
of the Blessed Enlightened One and to the Doctrine and the
Order, accumulated abundant merit assuring the fullest sal-
vation and piously sheltered the Order of the Sage and this
stainless Laṅkā. For ever (therefore) shall one honour this 106
Ruler of Laṅkā, distinguished by virtue, who ever remembers
the fulness of valuable qualities of the Sage, the sole Lord
protector of the world, having piously accepted them in his
heart, and who then further remembers³ his sublime doctrine
and his Order⁴.

¹ Viśālā, name for Vesālī (note to 37, 80). Our verse alludes to the fact that the Licchavis were able to maintain themselves against the advancing Kosakas while the Sakiyas succumbed to them. Ruge Davos, *Buddhist India*, p. 269—60.

² P. *abharuṇṇa* . . . *brahmanūhāraṇam cchokam*. W. translates freely "only turned his mind to contemplate the virtue of benevolence to all men."

³ I translate *anussarati* thus in contrast to the preceding *sarati* . . . , the former being a necessary corollary of the latter.

⁴ *Dhammasaṅgaha* is a *dvandva* compound and *gaya* = *saṅgha*.

107 Thus this Monarch dowered with great royal power, the
 great King of kings, protected the Order of the Sage and
 this stainless Laṅkā in pious fashion; making men of all
 countries contented and dispensing to them great happiness
 he made gods and men beam with joy, discerning, strong in
 merit, miraculous power and dominion.

108 While the highly famed Great king, dowered with great
 power, resided in the great town and protected the laity and
 109 the Order, the powerful Olandas, sea merchants who had been
 entrusted with the protection of Laṅkā at the time of King
 Rājasiha¹, fulfilled the task of envoys to the kings who ruled
 110 in Laṅkā. Every year they were wont to bring with great
 reverence and great ceremony as gifts and lay before the King
 111 various stuffs, made in different countries, along with many
 other articles, fitted for the use of a king, which they had
 112 carefully chosen out. In consequence of former actions of the
 inhabitants of Laṅkā or in consequence of their neglect of
 the deities and so forth who were entrusted with the care of
 113 the laity and the Order, they were now angered in the
 highest degree and in every way cruelly tortured the inhabi-
 114 tants of Laṅkā². When the highly famed Great king heard
 of these events he thought this was not as it should be, and
 115 sent dignitaries forth. The dignitaries set forth with the
 people living in Laṅkā, fought a fearful battle with the Olanda
 116 people, destroyed the foe, burned down his strongholds and
 terrified him in every possible way.

117 Now when the enemy were thus tortured by fear a cruel
 treacherous man³ placed himself at their head, low-minded,

¹ Rājasiha II. Cf. 96. 35.

² The meaning is this: The inhabitants of Laṅkā have obviously
 failed in their duty to the deities who like Viṣṇu are the protectors of
 the country; they have neglected their worship. To punish them the
 offended deities rouse the wrath of the Dutch for the oppression and
 injury of the people of Laṅkā in every possible way.

³ Baron van Eck is meant here. He succeeded Schroeder as
 governor of Ceylon in 1762. The word *Śatāyana* is an allusion to the
 fact that van Eck died suddenly, immediately after the unfortunate
 campaign against Kandy. Cf. v. 135.

a villain, the end of whose life was near, and with a great 118
 following consisting of Jīvaka and many other people he
 laid waste in every (possible) way the various provinces and
 villages, the vihāras and the temples of the gods, the bridges,
 rest-houses and the like. The dignitaries charged by the Ruler 119
 of Laṅkā fought here and there in every way with their war-
 skilled troops, but although they defeated the foe in various 120
 places, the enemy were not to be warded off, and they ad-
 vanced against the town. The war-equipped high dignitaries 121
 hindered the foe on the way by every means, took up a
 frontal position against them and checked their gradual ad-
 vance. The discerning Great king, the Ruler of Laṅkā, who 122
 understood the conditions of the time, thought: it is impossible
 to stop the advance of the foe who are like a forest fire, and
 he entrusted the two uparājās with the sacred Tooth Relic, 123
 the Maheś, his sister and all valuable treasures, to watch
 over them well and sent them to a province which was 124
 scarcely passable owing to mountains, forests and difficult
 roads. Thereupon the hostile hosts like cruel armies of yakkhas, 125
 forced their way into the town and destroyed the sacred
 books and everything else. Surrounded by his great digni- 126
 taries like the senāpati and others, and by war-skilled heroes
 who knew the right occasions from the wrong, the Great 127
 king took up a position at the head of his great army here
 and there in the suburbs situated not far from the capital,
 and invested the town on every side. The people dwelling 128
 in Laṅkā who had remained true to the teaching of the Buddha
 adopted the plans of the King and cut down here and there
 many of those who had gone over to the enemy, whomever 129
 they caught sight of, but the envoys of the King and the
 other officials and the community of the bhikkhus they took
 under their protection. The bold warriors gifted with heroism 130
 who were on the King's side played the war game, and as their
 aim was the protection of the Order of the Victor, they fought 131
 surrounded by their warlike men in every way with the enemy
 who were posted at various positions on the road, put them 132
 to flight, began then to fight also with those who lay in the

133 town and repeatedly caused them great losses¹. I think it
 was no wonder that men adopted the plans of our King: the
 134 deities did the same. Hence after a short time the greatly
 deluded leader of the enemy was smitten with fear, horror
 and delusion which came over him owing to the might of the
 135 gods and owing to the power of the merit (of the King). He
 left the fair town, fled without prestige and landed in the
 136 fire of death. Victims of the power of infatuation all the
 hostile armies who had advanced, were helpless and shelterless,
 137 and came to a bad end. Some were visited by illness, some
 tortured by hunger and disease, some were slain in fight,
 some had lost themselves in mountain and wilderness: thus
 were the miserable people on the enemy's side destroyed.
 138 "Protected in such wise by gods, men and others", one said.
 "this Monarch is certainly of great power: he is rich in
 139 merit. Who in the world will be able to neglect the com-
 mands of so mighty a king who is so rich in merit?"

¹ Verses 130—132 describe the guerilla tactics employed by the Sinhalese. The attacks are directed first against the communications in the rear, the positions in the line of march. The troops in Kandy are thereby isolated and so exposed to attack.

² The whole section vi, 108-133 (cf. iv. 169 ff. and note) is perhaps historically the most valuable part of the latest *Çilavamsa*. It refers to the military events of the year 1765 (see H. W. Cassinarius, *BC.*, p. 142 f.; P. E. Ponn, 3, p. 118 ff.). The causes of the conflict again lay in the sphere of trade policy. The King wanted to secure his share in the area and elephant trade, and to compel the Dutch to yield this he harmed and hindered the business of the Dutch Company in every possible way, particularly in their export of cinnamon which was for them specially important. At first the Dutch sought to keep the peace by weak surrender. It was not until 1763 under the Governor van Rek that they decided on warlike measures. Their first venture in this year was a failure. Two years later the Dutch troops entered Kandy, but suffered so under the perpetual attacks of the Sinhalese that they were soon obliged to evacuate the town and withdraw with the severest losses to Colombo. These facts are passed over by the chronicle in silence: 1) There was a conspiracy in 1761 against Kittisirî, important so far as it was obviously the work of the nationalistic circles at Court and was directed against the Dravidian dynasty. 2) At the beginning of the hostilities the King started negotiations with the

When after the hosts of the enemy had been done away 140
 with, the Great king no longer beheld a hostile army, the
 Ruler had the fair town¹ cleansed as formerly and in fitting 141
 manner the temple of the Tooth Relic and the other sanc-
 tuaries specially beautifully decorated. He was filled with 142
 pure reverence towards the sublime doctrine of the Enlightened
 One, meditated ever on the sublime words of the Enlightened
 One, was filled with remembrance of the virtues of the sons
 of the Enlightened One and ever revered the Tooth of the
 Royal Enlightened One. The Ruler of men who in such wise 143
 was completely devoted to the three sacred objects, could not
 bear the pain accruing to him from his separation from the
 Tooth Relic. So the Great king, strong in faith, betook him-
 self² with his retinue to the most impassable part of the
 province, and when there he caught sight of the reliquary, 144
 he revered it piously, his heart full of astonishment and
 admiration. He bent his head to the ground, worshipped (the 145
 relic) with his head, greeted reverently the community of the
 bhikkhus and so chased away his pain. Filled with good 146
 comfort, he raised the casket with the relic to his head, held
 a great feast and celebrating with the sound of the cries of 147
 "Hail!" and the fivefold musical instruments a great cere-
 monial festival, he entered into his town. Then when the 148
 people of Lanka saw the Ruler with the relic, they rejoiced
 greatly and sent forth their cries of "Hail!". He brought 149
 the relic into the former Tooth temple and instituted all the
 former festive customs in increased measure.

The Saṃgharājs³ and many other sons of the Buddha in 150

British, which however, led to nothing. The British emissary to the Court of Kandy was Pybus. 2) A famine in his own country caused by the neglect of agriculture during the war forced Kittisirir in 1768 to make a peace treaty with the Dutch very unfavourable to himself. By this treaty he made over to the Dutch the whole coastal district of the island, so that the kingdom of Kandy was completely cut off from the outer world and absolutely dependent on the good will of the Company.

¹ One expects of course a *gautā* to govern the *net, mahādeggam rattham*.

² This was the Saṃyagupkāra mentioned in 97. 61 and 98. 23. The

all the monasteries of the town who saw that the danger of
 131 the cycle of rebirths is far greater than the danger of the
 foe, had not given up the monastic life but had departed
 152 with books, relics and articles of use, and dwelling outside
 of the country had protected the Order. The King of kings
 153 brought them all speedily back to the town, had the mo-
 nasteries in the town cleansed and made the bhikkhus take
 up their abode in them. Then he sought out from among
 those who were charged to school themselves in the study of
 the scriptures and in the carrying out of the commandments,
 154 the appropriate preachers, invited them and listened ever and
 again to the Rājovāda¹ and other portions of the sacred
 scriptures.

155 The many Olanda people who had been our foes thought
 156 of the custom of the country. They all came together, took
 counsel with one another and said: "to capture the whole of
 Lankā is impossible." After they had finally realised this
 157 they consulted ever and again: "The people here who rebelled
 against the King, the ruler of Lankā have gone to perdition;
 158 it will be the same with us. It is fitting therefore, that we
 dwell here in the town with humility, love and reverence
 159 towards the sovereign of Lankā." Together with gifts for
 the King they took full of reverence the beautiful, empty
 160 silver reliquary which had been carried away by the great
 fool and which sparkled like a cetiya, as well as the golden
 161 canopy². They thought: we shall seek pardon for the wrong

title of *saṃghavarāṇa* borne by the head of the whole priesthood but which had fallen into disuse since the 15th century, had been conferred on him by Kittisirī in 1750. P. E. Piaras 2, p. 76.

¹ I. e. "Admonishing of the King" Perhaps this is the same as the Rājavagga of Aṅguttara, III. 147 ff.

² When the Dutch under van Eck advanced on Kandy the Sinhalese secured the Tooth Relic (v. 123 ff), but the *śaragghala*, in which it was preserved and the *siṅḡa* erected over it in the temple fell into the hands of the enemy. Van Eck took them with him on his retreat to Colombo. His successor however, J. W. Falck, returned these highly sacred objects. The result of this prudent and conciliatory policy was

committed by our countrymen and shall from now onwards live (in peace), betook themselves to the Ruler, praised him, showed him reverence and spake many friendly words. The King, the sovereign of Laṅkā, pardoned them; their great wrong and showed them distinction in every way. In this wise by friendly negotiations our King achieved with them firm and lasting¹ friendly relations. The Olanda people also became thoroughly reconciled with the King of Laṅkā and were wont every year to present him along with valuable gifts, the products of various countries, with a royal letter which had been handed to them. But the Ruler had the sacred casket which had fallen into the hands of the infidels, covered with gold and silver and set with jewels. After having thus made its beauty like to that of the sun² he had the Tooth Relic placed therein and revered it as the King of the gods.

Thus was the pride of the wicked hosts of the infidel foe destroyed. Ha, (so great was) the power of the merit of the pious, believing Ruler of the Siṅhas. Thinking of this astonishing, wonderful thing, people should devote themselves full of reverence to the virtue of the true faith which is incomparable, praised by the good, splendid.

Since at that time there was not a single bhikkhu on the fair island of Laṅkā, he had after taking over the burden of government, residing in Sirivadhana, made many sūmayas and as many sons of good family go through the ceremony of renunciation of the world and of admission to the Order. Of these bhikkhus some were preachers of the doctrine and acquainted with the precepts of monastic discipline, some led a life of contemplation or that of hermits. After he had thus ordained so many hundreds of bhikkhus dowered with this and other virtues³ he beautified the whole of Laṅkā (formerly)

that the beleaguered garrison left behind in Kandy and reduced to sore straits, was granted a free passage.

¹ P. *thirap katāma* must, I think, be referred to *mettibhāra*.

² P. *sahasasū*, the "hundred-rayed", name of the sun.

³ Pāda n is of course defective. We expect *sumadāyagāgutta*. But

172 bereft of bhikkhus. Day by day he performed meritorious works, invited the community and dispensed to it daily food and food for the sick, mindful of the welfare of the bhikkhu community.

173 For bhikkhus and sāmaṇeras there were two kinds of disease, such as had to do with the body and such as affected the mind. To cure mental disease the best of men had the Vinaya
174 texts and the Suttantas preached. After he had had the bhikkhus instructed in the Vinaya and the Suttantas which are the cause of the removal of desire and other diseases among mental
175 diseases, the Ruler — when suffering arises through bodily disease it is difficult for the bhikkhus to school themselves in the study of the scriptures and in the carrying out of the
176 commandments¹ — to calm disease like fever² and the like for this reason invited the community. He appointed for them
177 two physicians, well schooled in the medical art, and nurses. To these he granted villages, and fields and facilities in the
178 way of garments, ornaments and the like, and as price for medicines he gave them yearly a hundred (money pieces) from
179 the royal treasury. In the various monasteries the Ruler asked after the health or ill-health of the sāmaṇeras and the bhikkhus and gave them the requisite care.

180 In this wise also the King of kings dispensed gain for the community. "Of all gains³ the gain of health is the highest
181 and best", thus the Buddha taught and therefore even he also dispensed⁴ it. He furthered in the best way the Order of the Enlightened One by making it lustrous.

emendation is inadmissible. The fault is the author's, the MSS. are not to blame.

¹ V. 175 is a kind of parenthesis. In correct language the sentence would be accompanied by an *iti* or *iti cintiya* as a reflection of the King's. Cf. note to 180. 52.

² W. is probably right in connecting *jara* here with skr. *jara* (not P. *jarā* "age").

³ Note that *lābha* means a gain or advantage of an external kind.

⁴ *Apūjaya* is here used as synonym for *dispayi* in 180 b.

Formerly the rulers of Lañkā, the best of most excellent 182 men, the supports of the Order, removed the infidelity of the hosts of the foe and then bore the burden of the royal dignity. When the King heard thereof and himself compassed in spirit the doctrine revealing itself to him and fraught with immeasurable blessing, he performed continually meritorious works, unweariedly, a support of the Order¹.

Here ends the ninety-ninth chapter, called 'Account of the King's Consecration and of Other Festivals', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The panegyric character of many strophes occurring in this chapter of the chronicle seems again to prove that it was composed when the king Kittisirājāsūtra was alive. The poet flatters him with the conventional phrases.



CHAPTER C

THE HISTORY OF KITTISIRIRĀJASĪHA

- 1 The highly famed Lord of men¹ honoured the Tooth Relic with constant reverence even as (a world ruler) his wheel² and worshipped it in every way sacrificing³ with all kinds of flowers, such as samana, campaka, punnāga, nāga, kapikāra, 2 ketaki⁴, white and blue lotus flowers and the like, as well as with perfumes of every sort, such as sandal and aloe wood; 3 with divers kinds of fragrant incense, with sugar, honey and so forth and with delicious remedies like betel nut, camphor 4 and betel leaves; with various prepared dishes such as sweet food, rice and cake, with golden bananas and rose-apples, with bread fruits, mangoes and phārusa fruits⁵, with date 5 plums⁶, oranges⁷ and sweet mupakas, with yellow and green

¹ I anticipate the subject *śaśāyasa* (v. 8c) and *jambhola* (v. 12 ab. The sentence goes on to v. 22 in which the first finite verb appears. Various gerunds occur before this and the subject "the King" is repeated several times.

² P. *cakka*. This is the first of the seven jewels (*ratanaṇa*) peculiar to the *rāja cakravatti*, the world ruling king (cf. for this D. II. 172 ff., III. 61 ff.; M. III. 172; PTS. PD. s. v. *ratana*), a marvellous chariot that carries him victoriously over all countries.

³ I anticipate *phijeta* in v. 8.

⁴ The botanical names are successively: 1) *Jasminum grandiflorum*, 2) *Nichelia champaka*, 3) *Rottleria tinctoria*, 4) *Mesua ferrea*, 5) *Pterospermum acrifolium*, 6) *Pandanus odoratissimus*.

⁵ Cf. also Mhva. 89. 43 and note.

⁶ P. *timbarāka* a kind of *diospyros*. The fruit called *timbara* is compared in Jn. VI. 457¹ to the youthful female breast. We do not know what the *phārusa* is.

⁷ P. *nāraṅga* = skr. *nārāṅga* which is borrowed from the Persian *narang*. *Mupaka* again is unknown.

coconuts, with ripe pomegranates, with dates, grapes and various 6
 other fruits, with many fine roots¹ and sprouts of every kind.
 With such and other offerings, with the five kinds of musical 7
 instruments, with many of the things taken over from former
 kings and with new thereto he worshipped the 'Tooth Relic 8
 day by day, thereby intent on merit, increasing the store of
 his meritorious works. With gold and silver, with fair precious 9
 stones and pearls, with countless, brightly embroidered,
 gleaming stuffs; with canopies, curtains and robes, with many 10
 articles of use and manifold ornaments, with many elephants 11
 and steeds, as well as with cattle and buffaloes, with many
 slaves male and female and with numerous villages and fields
 he sacrificed full of zeal to the Tooth of the Enlightened One 12
 and when the Prince of men beheld it he was filled with pious
 joy. He was minded to have the golden casket completed 13
 which had been begun under former kings but had never
 been finished. After a splendid, jewel-encrusted² casket had 14
 been made for two thousand *suvarṇas* and seven *nikkhas*³,
 the Lord of men ever intent on meritorious action, had a 15
 costly, splendid, magnificent, large diamond placed on the point;
 one hundred and sixty-eight beautiful, costly, splendid (smaller) 16
 diamonds, well worth seeing, and one hundred and seventy-
 one topazes⁴ he had put on it, further he had it set with 17
 five hundred and eighty-five blue sapphires and four thousand 18
 eight hundred and eighty rubies, also he had it set with seven 19
 hundred and seventy-eight pearls, and when the costly casket

¹ P. *śālikakandahī*. The word *kanda* „root“ (skr. the anmet) is missing in Curtains and also in the PTS. P. D.

² P. *mañjuṣṭha*. The word *raṇa* does not mean „colour“ here, but „beauty, ornament“, as is often the case.

³ *Suvarṇa* as well as *nikkha*, as also skr. *śaṅkṣa* and *nikṣa* denote a weight and a coin. The *nikkha* is = 16 *suvarṇa* (PTS. P. D. s. v.).

⁴ P. *paṇḍarāgamaṇiratana*. It is true that *paṇḍarāga* by itself means „topaz“ (= skr. *paṇḍarāga*). What is expressed however, is the fundamental meaning „flower coloured“. Thus we have in the same way *ulāmani* „blue gem“ (17 d) for „sapphire“ and *ratnamaniratana* „red gem“ (18 c d) for „ruby“.

20 was finished he had two further caskets made in which to
place it and had these also set with costly splendid, beautiful
21 jewels. The Ruler of men had the casket made by the famous
22 King Vimaladhammasuriya¹ overlaid with gold. Then the
Ruler of men, celebrating a great festival, placed the Tooth
23 of the Sage in these same (caskets). Full of pious joy the
Ruler dedicated a large village, Akarabhagga by name, to the
Tooth of the Prince of the wise.

24 At the festival of the relic the Ruler in his mercy thought
25 to show the Tooth Relic to the inhabitants of Laṅkā. After
the Ruler had had the whole town of Sīrivaṇṇa carefully
cleansed and decorated throughout with arches of many-
26 coloured stuffs, with rows of arches of banana leaves, with
bunches of coco blossoms and with all kinds of flags and
27 pennons, he gathered together in the town all the people of
Laṅkā. The Ruler of men himself, adorned with all the royal
28 ornaments, like the King of the gods, betook himself after
he had previously celebrated many great sacrifices of all kinds,
to the temple of the Tooth Relic, sacrificed to it in every
29 possible way, worshipped it, he the Ruler by throwing himself
in humble posture² to the earth out of reverence for the
30 Tooth Relic of the King of the wise. Then he took the
golden lotus flower together with the Tooth in the lotus of
31 his hand and went forth from the temple with it. With sa-
crificial ceremonies, celebrated³ with silver umbrellas and fly-
whisks of yak tails⁴, with golden and silver flowers, with the
32 five kinds of flowers, *lāja*⁵ and so forth, with many jewels
and pearls, with gold and silver, with various coloured stuffs

¹ In *Mhv.* 91.11 ff. it is related that he brought the Tooth Relic from Laṅkajagāma to Kandy. Nothing is said in the passage about the making of a *karuṇḍa*.

² Cf. 98. 50 and note.

³ P. *āhāriyamaṇḍapajāṇa* in v. 34 c.

⁴ P. *camaricāmarakā*. The fem. *camarī* is also employed in *Skr.* (Br. s. v. *camrā*). See above 98. 14, as well as Jāt. IV. 256 *camaricāmarajḍha*.

⁵ Cf. 98. 40 and note.

and many kinds of ornaments, with divers fragrant flowers, 33
 with many lamps and incense, and amid the sound of the five
 musical instruments, the shell trumpets, the cymbals and the
 rest, and amid the noise of the many thousandfold cries of 34
 Hail! — it was like foam-crowned billows¹ — the highly 35
 famed King marched in procession like a world ruler in his
 chariot². In the superb, beautiful mapḍapa, decorated with 36
 all kinds of brightly embroidered cloths, like a heavenly
 mapḍapa stood the King, the Ruler of men, like the King of 37
 the gods at the head of the company of the gods, and then
 the King showing the multitude of the people the sacred
 beautiful Tooth of the Prince of the wise, right hard to attain
 in hundreds of thousands of world ages, filled them all with 38
 bliss, heaped up a store of merit and laid (the relic) again
 in the casket.

In this wise, feeling every kind of bliss, as at the sight 39
 of the living Buddha, the multitude also increased the store
 of their merits.

Intent on good, he repeatedly exhibited the Tooth Relic 40
 in the same way and so stored up much good. Of villages 41
 and fields devoted by former kings of Laṅkā to the Tooth
 Relic he took not away the very least. Day by day holding 42
 a great sacrificial festival in joyful faith, he dedicated many
 elephants and horses and in the same way bulls and buffaloes,
 as well as a prosperous, populous village by name Rajakāthala, 43
 and another large village by name Muttāpabbata³ and gained
 thereby for himself the value of meritorious works.

He was mindful of the purity of the Order. Amongst the 44
 bhikkhus who were formerly present on the splendid island
 of Laṅkā, and amongst all the sāmāyeras who had undergone

¹ P. *kaṭṭhamāṇḍalā* ca stands quite independently of the construction of the sentence, as a kind of parenthesis. It refers to the whole procession.

² See note to 100. 1, Note 2.

³ There is a village Radagoda in the Kandy District, Medapalata Koralu, a village Mutugala in the Kurunegala District, Udakma Koralu West (Census 1921, II, p. 60, 328).

the ceremony of world renunciation, were some who had fear
 46 of evil, respected the true doctrine, living in good moral
 discipline, in pure fashion. Others cherished evil, were of
 46 bad moral living, followed false doctrine, took pleasure in the
 maintaining of women and children and in domestic duties
 and devoted themselves to unseemly professions such as astro-
 logy, medical activity¹ and the like.

47 When the Ruler heard tidings of such unprincipled
 (bhikkhus) he sought out² with care from among the pious
 48 (bhikkhus) who were on the side of the high principled, the
 respected sāmāgama, named Saranampaka, who led a pure life,
 dwelt in the wilderness, took pains for the furthering of the
 Order of the Victor, was careful of moral discipline, virtuous,
 49 well instructed, experienced in the interpretation of the words
 50 of the Enlightened One. With the reflection that this was the
 right thing to do, the Ruler with his support, ordered accord-
 ing to precept, an investigation, took strong measures against
 51 them and had them seriously admonished that from now on-
 wards those who had renounced the world should for ever avoid
 unseemly task, like astrology, medical activity and the like and
 52 should foster³ the study of the words of the Buddha. As the
 King was minded to further the Order which had fallen into
 53 decay, he strengthened the influence of the high principled,
 54 and in many ways gave the Order support. The Ruler was
 appalled at the thought that with the lack of bhikkhus on
 whom the ceremony of admission to the Order had been per-
 55 formed, the pure Order of the Victor should perish on the

¹ That is the activity of the *kapurāḍa*, the sorcerer or devil-priest
 whose help is sought in cases of illness and for warding off the harm-
 ful influence of the planetary deities.

² P. *samāha vijāṇitā* cannot belong to *passatīya*, as W. seems to
 think, but must govern the following accusatives. For Saranampaka
 cf. above 97. 51, 60; 98. 23; as well as note to 99. 150. The Saṅgharāja
 died in the year 1778.

³ The construction of the sentence is quite wrong. It would be right
 if instead of *rakkhitaṃ* in 52 b we had *rakkhaṇāṭṭhī* whereby vv. 51
 and 52 a b would be characterized as *anāṭṭhā neta*.

whole island, and with the reflection: if a Ruler like myself carries on the government in the island of Lanka, then the 56 Order of the Victor ought not to perish, — further with the reflection: the furtherance of the Order which was not attained in the time of former rulers in spite of their sending 57 hither and thither for bhikkhus, this will I now bring to pass, the Ruler of men, the Monarch, rich in merit, since he desired a long continuance of the Order of the great Seer, when 58 the year two thousand two hundred and ninety-three after the final nirvana of the Prince of the wise¹ had come — sent messengers to whom he gave besides gifts of many kinds and 59 many sacrificial articles, a splendid royal letter, to the superb town of Ayodjhā², to fetch hither sons of the Buddha. In 60 this wise the Ruler of Lankā who was minded to purify the Order of Buddha, began the furtherance of the Order of the Prince among victors.

The dignitaries took the royal letter and the rest and 62 started with great ceremony and with great zeal on their way. With the Olanda people who were entrusted with the pro- 63 tection of Lanka, they embarked and sailed to the land of Sāninda. When the town of Ayodjhā was reached the Ruler 64 of men in that country accepted the royal letter and the rest, as was the custom. In best fashion the prudent one showed 65 the dignitaries the honour befitting them and took note of the excellent royal letter. When the Ruler of men Dhammika 66 by name, who striving after the dignity of a Buddha, fulfilled the ten pāramis³ and took the Order under his protection,

¹ — 1749 A. D. What is meant is the time of the close of the embassies to Siam which had already begun under Kittisiri's predecessor Vijayarājāsīha. We have an interesting account of these embassies by a number: "An Account of Kirti Sri's Embassy to Siam in 1672 Saka, 1750 A. D., published by P. E. Pears in *JRAS.* C. II. xxvii, no. 54, 1908, p. 17 ff. I see no reason to doubt the genuine character of the document. The relations established by the coming of the bhikkhus from Siam are potent in their influence even to-day. The Siamese sect is the wealthiest and the most influential in the island of Ceylon. For the vicissitudes experienced by these embassies see Pears 8, p. 74, 75, 75 ff.

² See note to 38, 31.

³ See for this note to 37, 130.

67 heard the news of the decline of the Order of the Victor in
 Laṅkā, and of the other (evils) he was most deeply moved.
 68 The Ruler thought: "I will be a helper in order to achieve
 there the furtherance of the Order of the Enlightened One."
 69 He summoned the Saṃgharāja in the Sāminḍa country and
 many other well instructed Grand theras, versed in the doctrine
 and acquainted with the rules of the Order, who had for a
 70 long time renounced the world, who were capable of carrying
 out the business of the Order and took counsel with them
 71 carefully about the matter. He called together a Chapter
 consisting of a group of ten (bhikkhus), an abode of virtues,
 easily satisfied and content, dowered with the virtues of a life
 of piety and discipline, and besides the Thera Upāli as head.
 72 These the Ruler who was well inclined to the Great king on
 the island of Laṅkā — like to King Vessantara¹ — sent² to
 73 Laṅkā, to the splendid relic temple of the Victor and (with
 them) books on the doctrine and on monastic discipline which
 74 did not exist in the island of Laṅkā, further a golden image
 (of the Buddha) and a superb golden book, a magnificent royal
 letter, gifts of various kinds and dignitaries of the King of
 75 Ayojjhā (as envoys)³. The great vessel⁴ which after the golden
 image and the other gifts had been put in order, was sent off
 came without disaster over the sea⁵ rich in perils, hiding many
 76 a disaster, to the fair, splendid island of Laṅkā and reached
 77 the harbour of Tikugaṃḍā⁶. When the Great king, the Ruler
 of Laṅkā had tidings of this, he had all the inhabitants of

¹ The last human incarnation of the Bodhisattva; cf. Vessantara-jātaka (Nr. 547; VL 479 ff. in Fausbøll's edition).

² All the accusatives in vv. 71-74 are governed by *apasesā*, to those in v. 71 must be added the gerund *nimantayitvā*. The gifts, among them the golden image, are enumerated in the narrative quoted above (note to v. 69). The number of the theras with Upāli at their head, is however given as twenty-one, with eight sāmāneras in addition.

³ Three in number according to the narrative.

⁴ The subject *vāra* in 75 c is repeated with *vaḥānā* in 75 d. The language in the whole section is extremely careless.

⁵ P. *gaṇḍhīre*, used substantively and supplemented by *samudra*.

⁶ I. e. Trincomalee.

the town of Sirivaddhanā called together. In joyful faith the 78
 Ruler of men celebrated a great feast. From the sea as far
 as superb Sirivaddhanapura he had the road put in order and 79
 rest-houses¹ erected at various places. Then the Ruler sent forth
 the Mahāsēnāpati and other dignitaries and made them fetch 80
 in the right order the golden image and the sacred books,
 the bhikkhu community and everything else. When with great 81
 pomp and great ceremony they making their way had reached
 the vicinity of the Mahāvūlukaguṇḍā which comes down from 82
 the Sumanakūṭa, the Ruler of the town Sirivaddhanā, the Ruler 83
 of men desirous of gaining the reward accruing from the festive
 reception of the three sacred objects², the highly famed Great
 king intent on merit, went forth with the army in piety to meet 84
 them with elephants, steeds and so forth. He showed reverence
 to the august Grand then and to the others and at the same 85
 time greeted the great community. Having exchanged with
 them in the best way possible the customary speeches of wel-
 come, he came with the three sacred objects at the head, to 86
 his town. In the fair Puppahāra³, in a graceful brick-roofed
 building erected by him, in this decorated monastery he made 87
 the august community of monks take up their abode. Then
 he provided them in fitting manner with the necessities and 88
 charged officials to enquire day by day after their health or
 ill-health. The Ruler of men accepted the splendid royal letter 89
 sent by the King of Ayodhā and he made the royal envoys who 90
 had arrived and the other officials take up their abode in a
 fitting place and showed them all the distinction to which they
 were entitled. In the year two thousand two hundred and 91
 ninety-six after the final nirvāṇa of the Enlightened One⁴,

¹ P. *āraṃs*, thus buildings which were specially intended for the sojourn of the monks.

² In the train of the envoys from Siam there were 1) a golden figure of the Buddha (*Buddhā*), 2) sacred books (*āḥamaṇa*) and 3) the bhikkhus with Upāli at the head (*sangha*).

³ "Flower monastery" the now so-called Malvata-vihāra situated immediately on the lake of Kandy.

⁴ = 1752 A. D.

92 in the month Āṣāḍha¹ when it was full moon, the all-powerful
 93 Great king, dowered with vast royal power, betook himself
 to the monastery. He had seats carefully spread in the middle
 94 of the fine Uposatha house contained therein. Then he invited
 the Grand therā Upāli, dowered with the quality of a life
 led in moral discipline, experienced in all clever methods, who
 95 had his pleasure in the welfare of all beings, and second to
 him the Thera Āriyamuni² together with the (rest of the)
 community and bade them be seated. Then with the cele-
 96 bration of a great festival the Ruler of men, the Ruler of
 Laṅkā, made these perform on the most distinguished of the
 sāmaṇeras of Laṅkā the ceremony of admission to the Order.
 97 From that time onwards he was wont to fetch hither
 sāmaṇeras and others who were versed in the linguistic text-
 books on the sacred scriptures, and have performed on them
 98 the ceremony of admission to the Order. In the same way
 he sought out rightly all those who were worthy of the
 ceremony of world renunciation and of admission to the sublime
 99 Order of the Enlightened One and had the ceremony of world
 renunciation and of admission performed on them according to
 precept. Among the bhikkhu communities who thus had become
 100 numerous in Laṅkā, he again sought out those bhikkhus who
 were full of bustling zeal in preserving the study of the sacred
 scriptures and of the rules of monastic life and who were
 101 qualified for and worthy of the position of a teacher, and
 charged them to take instruction from the brethren of the
 Order who had come from Ayojjhā. Now among those high
 principled bhikkhus who carried out the commands of the
 102 Victor, there was one who³ had long been at pains to make

¹ The month June-July.

² In the narrative (p. 84) quoted above (note to v. 39) the Grand therā Āriyamuni is mentioned as second to Upāli.

³ All the relative sentences beginning with *yo* in vv. 102-107 refer to *tān* in v. 107 c. This part of the long-winded sentence is but loosely connected with the preceding which ends with *viṣajhiya*. If we might alter *viṣajhiya* into *viṣajya* and put a full stop after it, the construction of the sentence would be all right.

lustrous the Order of the Sage which for a long time had been on the verge of ruin in Laṅkā, — who in accordance 103 with his insight, as far as possible untiringly, day and night, made lustrous the sacred scriptures of the Prince of the wise and his rules for monastic life — who also instructed as dis- 104 ciples many others in the sacred scriptures and the rules for monastic life and thus in worthy manner brought splendour to the Order, — who striving for his own salvation and that 105 of others, with the wish to obtain long continuance for the Order of the Sage, ever took pleasure in a pure life, — who 106 as regards virtue, discipline and devotion to duty was as a mirror for all the sons of the Victor in Laṅkā who were intent on their salvation, — who during the time that he was a 107 śāmyera was called Sarayamkara: this son of the Victor living in pious discipline now that he had been admitted to the 108 Order, he (the King) invested with the dignity of a Saṃgharāja¹. Amongst the bhikkhus who had joined him, he sought out in both monasteries² such as were skilled and well versed in the carrying out of the duties of the Order of the 109 Master and assigned them positions of rank. Explaining to them: ye all who live out the doctrine of the Victor, should 110 act in harmony, day and night unweariedly, in accordance with the rule of the Order and according to the sacred scriptures, the Ruler showed them much favour and in this wise made 111 the Order lustrous so that it should continue for long in Laṅkā.

The royal envoys too, arrived from the Sāninda country, 112 and the others sought out the King, handing over to him the royal letter and the other gifts. The Great king, the Ruler 113 of Laṅkā, accepted everything, and after the Monarch had made a close inspection of the superb royal document he highly 114 pleased, had favours conferred on them. Now the Ruler who for his own good, the good of others and the good of the Order, had again and again performed meritorious works, who 115

¹ See above note to 99. 150 and to 100. 69.

² In the *Māvata* and the *Aṅgīra-vihāra* in Kandy, which are the seats of the two *nishāṇḍakas*, the heads of the Church of Ceylon.

was devoted to the true doctrine, a light of the Order, greatly
 116 wise was wont to visit the monastery and to test in every
 way in the midst of the community, the means for long con-
 tinuance of the Order. As he wished to make lustrous the
 117 Order, he invited in fitting manner the Grand *thera* Upāli
 and listened with believing heart from the *Digha-Nikāya*, the
 118 *Samyutta-Nikāya*, the *Suddhammasaṃgaha* and from various
 other books, the (sections on the) tenfold royal duties and the
 119 four heart-winning qualities. To faith awakened, of deep
 discernment, he thus learned to distinguish between what ought
 and what ought not to be done, between what is meritorious
 action and what is sin, what is blameworthy and what is not
 120 blameworthy, and he left undone all things which should not
 be done, which are sinful and blameworthy, and strove as
 best he could after the things which ought to be done and
 121 are not blameworthy. Almsgiving and other meritorious works
 he performed day by day, and after he had had the whole
 122 town decorated as formerly he full of reverence invited the
 dignitaries who had come from *Ayojjiā* and all the people of
Laṅkā, the Grand *thera* (Upāli) with the other *bhikkhus* (from
 123 *Sāminā*) as well as the *bhikkhus* from *Laṅkā*, the *sūpavēras*
 and all the others, and celebrating as formerly with royal
 124 ornaments and all kinds of other sacrificial gifts a great festival
 he exhibited the Tooth Relic for the salvation, blessing and
 happiness of them all.

125 Since the royal envoys wished to do reverence to the
Mahiyāṅgaṇa-cetiya and the other *cetiya* places, he sent them
 126 in the company of *Laṅkā* officials, to the various places, let
 them as they desired, perform their devotions and sent them
 127 home after showing them to the utmost befitting favours. In
 the same way giving them sacrificial articles and appointing
 officials (charged with their care), he enabled the *bhikkhu*
 128 community with Upāli at the head, to visit the sixteen sacred
 places¹ in *Laṅkā*, *Mahiyāṅga* and so forth, as well as the

¹ According to W. these were: 1) *Mahiyāṅga*, 2) *Nāgādipa*, 3)
Kaṭṭhāṭṭhā, 4) *Saṃvuttakūṭa*, 5) *Dīghavāṭṭhā*, 6) *Dīghavāṭṭhā*, 7) *Mahiyāṅga*.

ceṭṭiyas in Sīrīvaddhāna and other towns. Then he had sacred 120
 boundaries¹ fixed, and intent on the good of the bhikkhus,
 Uposatha houses and dwellings erected here and there. Devoted 130
 in faith to the bhikkhu community he had in three years
 monasteries founded and made bhikkhu communities take up
 their abode in them. In the periods of the rainy season² he 131
 provided the fitting maintenance, listened to the sermon of
 the true doctrine and kept the uposatha fasts. When the 132
 bhikkhus were presented³ with the various necessities he gave
 them in addition to the otherwise customary robes⁴, kaṭhina
 robes⁵. In the course of these three years he had the cere- 133
 mony of admission to the Order performed on seven hundred
 persons in the august community, and for three thousand sons 134
 of good families he caused the granting of the ceremony of
 world renunciation as sūmaṇeras for the good of mankind.

For the good of the world the King, the Ruler of men, 135
 effected the furtherance of the Order: for that reason must
 all gracious Brahmas, Suras and Asuras grant the Monarch
 happiness and long life!

In the year that bears the name of Sūkara the Ruler of 136
 men Dhammika the sage, who had helped so much to further
 the Order in Lankā, since he strove after the dignity of a
 Buddha, sent once more from the town Ayojjhā a group of 137

(in Bodulla), 8) Tissamahāvihāra (Tissamahārāma in Mahāgūṇa, Kobaṇa)
 9) the Bodhi tree, 10) Maricavatṭi-ceṭṭiya, 11) Ratanavāluka (Mahāthūpa),
 12) Thūpārāma, 13) Abhinayagiri, 14) Jetavana, 15) Sahacetiya (9 to 15 in
 Anurādhapurā), 16) Kājaragūṇa (Kobaṇa).

¹ P. *karotevā brahḍhaśāṇḍa*, lit. "he had fixed boundaries made". The
 expression *śāṇḍa* *brahḍha* is used for the fixing of the territorial boun-
 daries of a monastery which was carried out with particular ceremonies
 (Mhvs. 15, 131 ff.; 78, 61 ff.).

² P. *antarasava*. That is the rainy period lasting three or four
 months which the bhikkhu along with his companions, must spend in
 a settled abode (in the monastery).

³ P. *paricārika*. What is meant is the Pāvāṇā ceremony held at
 the end of the rainy season.

⁴ P. *paricāricāraṇī*. *Paricāra* here has the sense of 'ingrédient
 accessories' (P²ES. P. D. s. v.).

⁵ See note to 41. 45.

more than ten priests with two theras at the head — the Grand therā Visuddhācārīya¹, who was an abode for the virtue of a life lived in discipline, whose ornament were faith and the other virtues, who was a mine of virtue, and the capable, learned second therā Varasāgamuni — to Laṅkā for the furtherance of the Order in Laṅkā. When this community arrived the highly famed King of Laṅkā accompanied them as formerly with great honours into the town, made them take up their abode in the Puppārkāma and dispensed to them daily regular food and everything else as formerly.

After accumulating a store of merit the distinguished Therā Upāli who during these three years unweariedly day and night had done all that was to be done for the furtherance of the Order, was severely troubled by a disease of the nose which befel him. The Sīhala Ruler had the best medical treatment given to the incomparable Grand Therā (thus) seized by illness. Again and again the highly famed King went to the monastery, visited the Grand therā and when he learned, his heart deeply moved, that the disease was incurable he celebrated with sacrificial objects of every kind, a sacrificial festival for the Buddha and ascribed the merit of it² to him (the Grand therā). When the Therā was dead the Ruler of men had the corpse with great ceremonial laid in a covering of fine stuff, had many sacrificial ceremonies performed, the corpse brought to the pyre and the prescribed rites carried out and thus accumulated merit.

The King was aware of how helpful the Ruler of men, Dharmmika, the sovereign of the Sāmaṇḍa country, had been in the furtherance of the Order of the King of the wise in Laṅkā, by twice sending a pious bhikkhu community and by bringing about the presence of many hundreds of bhikkhus, whereas formerly there had not been a single bhikkhu on the

¹ As regards the word *maḍḍasāmaḍḍhācārīyaputttheraṃ* we must I think, join the *maḍḍ* with *theraṃ* in order to get the counterpart to *anātheraṃ* in 138 b.

² For *puttāḍḍha* see note to 42.50. In this case the *puttā* is transferred to a dying man, not one already dead.

island of Laṅkā and by sending books of every kind which
 were lacking. He thought: "To a man like that who has
 given me so much help I will also pay in befitting manner
 fitting honours." He ordered ministers forth to whom he
 gave a model of the Tooth of the Sage fashioned out of a
 costly jewel and many varied gifts such as a likeness of the
 Victor, a shell curved towards the right¹ and other things,
 and also a splendid, specially artistic royal letter, and sent
 with them the bhikkhu community who wished to return to
 their own country (Sāminḍa). With great reverence all the
 dignitaries received this and journeyed forth to the country
 of Sāminḍa. When they arrived² there King Dhammika was
 joyful in heart. He gazed to his hearts content at the likeness
 of the Tooth of the Sage and at the rest, and full of joy as
 if he had (himself) received the Tooth of the Enlightened One,
 he celebrated day by day a great festival. Then when he
 heard and had taken note of the many words expressed in
 the royal letter: the transference³ of the merit of the further-
 ance of the Order and so forth, he put glad confidence in the
 King of Laṅkā. He gave over (to the envoys) many books
 which were not in Laṅkā, a beautiful likeness of the sacred
 footprint⁴, as sacrificial gifts for the Tooth of the Victor golden
 canopies and umbrellas and all kinds of beautiful and splendid
 presents, suitable for the royal use, as well as a royal letter
 in which expression was given to the share in all merits as
 his own admission to the Order⁵ and the like, wherein the

¹ Such shells are very rare and precious. Their possessor is supposed to be exceedingly lucky. Shells of this kind are mentioned among the gifts exchanged between King Devānampiyatissa and King Asoka (Mhva. II, 22, 30).

² The acc. pl. *sampatte* is governed by *apozesi* in v. 163 c. Vv. 156-163 certainly form a most clumsy sentence.

³ This refers to what is related in v. 146.

⁴ Cf. with this the note to v. 254.

⁵ I assume that *attāpārasāpāda* means that Dhammika belonged himself, if only for a time, to the Order, as is customary even to-day in the royal family of Siam. With this he had acquired great merit a part of which was to accrue to Kittisirājantha.

163 reasons for the friendly relations between the two kings found
expression, and sent all that to fair, holy Laṅkā.

164 All this the highly famed King of Laṅkā accepted. When
he beheld the books of the good doctrine and the gifts like
165 the footprint of the Sage, he rejoiced greatly and paid great
honour to the gifts. He celebrated a great festival and showed
166 them to all the people. Then when he had looked at the
royal letter and taken note of the many words expressed in
it, such as the transference of merit and the like, also the
167 friendly relations mentioned, the Ruler of the Sihalas was
filled with the highest bliss by satisfaction at the transferred
168 merit¹. He thought: "The reward accruing from the meritorious
works like furtherance of the Order I have experienced in this
169 life, what shall one say of that which may be perfectly en-
joyed in a future existence?" In this wise the Ruler believed
170 firmly in the three sacred things. The Ruler of Laṅkā betook
himself to the monastery and heard the sermon of the true
doctrine preached by the Grand theras who had arrived the
171 second time. He charged those bhikkhus who had been ad-
mitted into the Order by the chapter of monks who had arrived
first, to take instruction from the bhikkhu chapter at whose
172 head Visuddhācariya² stood, and had the ceremony of admission
to the Order performed in proper fashion by those theras on
numerous sons of good family.

173 Of the bhikkhus in Laṅkā some whose ornament was
their virtue, learned with the Grand Thera by name Visuddhā-
174 cariya, absorption which is the way to nirvāṇa; others learned
175 with the second Thera Varāṇāsamunī the content of the doc-
trine and monastic rules, as well as linguistic knowledge. Thus
the King pledged the bhikkhus of Laṅkā to the study of the
176 sacred scriptures and to the practice of moral discipline and
so sheltered the Order of the Enlightened One. And the
177 bhikkhus of Laṅkā were zealous and discerning. Received into

¹ P. *puṭṭhānāmedhūna* stands as is shown by the preceding verse,
for *puṭṭhānāma*.

² See above v. 136 ff.

the branch of those ascetics who are without wants, who have taken upon themselves a life of discipline, unwearied, never indolent, they made of the doctrine of the Victor a reality, zealous by day and night, absorbed in difficult texts; and the King showed them honour by the dispensing of dwellings and the like. The chapter of bhikkhus which had come the second time and wished to return to their own country he sent away with Olunda merchants. On a firmly fixed rock situated on a beautiful spot not too far to the east of the town of Sirivadhana he had hewn out by skilful workers, masons and others a splendid standing image of the Victor nine cubits¹ high and he had the radiant, shining stone image overlaid with gold plates so that it resembled the living Sage. Round about this Buddha statue he had erected a lofty, massive, beautiful stone wall and superb stone pillars placed and a splendid, beautiful two-storeyed temple built fair to look at, as well as a roomy court, outer walls, rampapas and so forth set up in the best way. Then he put thereon canopies and curtains of all kinds of coloured stuffs. Round about he placed arches one after another and provided them in every way with much ornament. Here and there he set up various flags and pennons and on the day of the sacrificial festival of the eyes² he lit a row of lamps, placed filled jars (about) and carried out in blameless fashion the various customs prescribed for festivals. To the people who supplied the coloured paintings, he dispensed abundantly robes, ornaments and the like and satisfied their wishes in every way. Then he made the splendid band clang of the musical instruments, like shell trumpets, kettledrums and so forth resound, like the roar of the wide sea, and under a good constellation, at a good hour, on a good day determined as favourable he put in the eyes and celebrated a great festival. Numerous silver bowls and many silver vessels, costly necessities and valuable monks'

¹ I. e. 13-14 ft.

² What is meant is the putting in of the eyes in the Buddha statue which always took place with quite special ceremonies.

193 robes, banners, white umbrellas, shields, fly-whisks and fans —
 194 all these and other fair objects of sacrifice the Ruler offered,
 mindful of the reward accruing from a sacrifice to the Buddha,
 with the thought that it was as if it took place in the pre-
 195 sence of the still living Prince of the wise, with a heart full
 of the joy of faith, intent on merit. Many and manifold foods
 196 also such as sweet di-hes, rice, solid dishes and others, sugar,
 honey, betel, lime, camphor and so forth, also remedies and
 197 perfumes of every kind like sandal¹ and the like, beautiful
 flowers, like jasmine, campaka blossoms and others — all these
 198 and other objects of sacrifice he offered in pious fashion. The
 makers of the Buddha image and the other people he rejoiced
 by an offering of many animate and inanimate things, elephants,
 199 cattle, buffaloes and so forth. If one reckons the sums spent
 in the making of the Buddha statue and the other offerings
 200 on the occasion of this vihāra festival according to their
 money value, the result was sixteen thousand one hundred
 and fifty (kahūpūgas).

201 The large, beautiful vihāra, well worth seeing, which is
 known as Gaṅgārāma because it was built on a fair spot near
 202 the Mahāvūlukagaṅgā was founded by the King under the
 203 name of Rājamahārāhita. This vihāra, thus superbly furnished
 with glory and splendour, was also destroyed by the enemy²
 204 who had penetrated into the town. The King had it in the
 best way restored to its original condition, and just as he had
 205 held a solemn ceremony at the former eye festival, so (now)
 he held another eye festival. After the Ruler of men had
 dispensed in great abundance to the painters and so forth
 206 garments, ornaments and other articles and had sacrificed
 with many sacrificial gifts, he erected near by a fair monastery

¹ I think *śivagandha* should be taken in this sense like the corresponding skr. word.

² Thus we learn here that all these festivities described in the foregoing took place before the capture of Kandy by van Eek in 1765, that on this occasion the Gaṅgārāma founded by the King, was also destroyed, but as related in the following, restored after the destruction of the Dutch expedition, when the change of name possibly took place.

for the community and made a chapter of bhikkhus who 207
devoted themselves with lasting zeal to the study and the ful-
filment of moral duties, take up their abode there, providing 208
them in every way with what was necessary. Then by hold-
ing in the way described formerly, full of reverence for the
Triad of the jewels, a sacrificial festival for the Buddha, and 209
at the same time sacrificing to the chapter of the bhikkhus,
he increased the fulness of merit for himself and the laity.

Now in order that this beautiful fair vihāra, worthy to 210
be seen, that was erected in this manner, and all the numerous
sacrificial ceremonies inaugurated there and the many meri- 211
torious works such as the offerings to the community - should
be continued for a long time in the right way, the Ruler
determined a village situated near the vihāra by name Arup- 212
pala, and many other villages and fields, and gardens also,
as well as the large, populous village by name Udaḡama¹ 213
in the district of Māyādhana and granted them (to the mo-
nastery). And the King confirmed this in perpetuity by 214
having an inscription graven on the beautiful mountain (in
the stone).

In this way the King of kings dowered with splendid 215
virtues, since he realised the worthlessness of acquired wealth,
in his piety had sacrificial festivals celebrated for the Buddha
and sacrificial festivals for the community of the excellent
sons of the Victor and so performed perpetually all valuable,
meritorious works². Therefore should ye all also perpetually
perform without wearying, meritorious works.

In the fair, splendid suburb by name Kuṇḍasāṭṭhā, the Ruler 216
of men had erected in a charming garden a vihāra fair to
look on, supplied in the best way possible with outer walls 217
and parapets, and brought thither relics and images of the

¹ Now Diyaḡama. Three villages of this name might be the one
in question: 1) Diyaḡama in the Kalutara District, Vaddubadda; 2) Diya-
ḡama in the Magul Otota Korale, Kuronegala; 3) Diyaḡama in Doya-
ladahamuna Pattuwa, Kegalla (Census 1921, II, p. 46, 292, 514).

² Lit. "the full value of meritorious action" (*catam* in contrast to
anāritam in *ap*).

218 Sage. Then he dedicated (to the vihāra) the garden that was
adorned with bread-fruit trees, mango trees, cocopalms and
other fruit trees, as well as many fields and villages and people
219 for the service of the monastery, and celebrated, intent on
merit, day by day all sacrificial ceremonies, such as offerings
of food and the like.

220 The wicked king known by the name of Rājāsīla in the
town of Sīlānuka¹ who had committed parricide and destroyed
the Order of the Victor, as he could not distinguish what it
221 was right to do, had adopted a false faith, was devoted to
the adherents of the false faith and ordered them to take for
themselves the income accruing from the worship of the sacred
222 footprint of the Enlightened One on the Summanakūṭa. From
that time onwards the adherents of the false faith destroyed
223 everything there. When the highly famed Great king heard
of these things he realised, reverently devoted to the En-
224 lightened One, that this was unseemly. He commanded the
adherents of the false faith from now onwards not to do so,
and charged the sons of the Buddha to carry out in the right
225 way the many sacrificial ceremonies which should be performed
there. He dedicated the flourishing, populous, large village
226 named Kuttāpīṭi to the sacred footprint and to shield it from
the heat of the sun, he erected above it a maṇḍapa with cur-
227 tains, adorned with an umbrella on the point, fastened it with
iron chains and accumulated much good by the celebration
of sacrificial ceremonies. But the income accruing therefrom
he assigned to the Order.

228 In this manner did our happy, sublime² Sihala Ruler in
the knowledge that what that deluded king had done, because
he knew not the virtues of the sublime Sage — was unseemly,
put away all the wrong and by entrusting the spotless bhikkhu
community of the sublime sons of the Buddha therewith, he

¹ Cf. for this 93. 3 ff., especially v. 12. Line 220 agrees in wording with the line 93. 5 n.

² Note that in this stanza the word *patosa* occurs in each of the four lines.

celebrated a ceremonial festival for the Buddha which granted sublime immortality.

The Majjhavela-vihārā¹ built by the ruler, King Vajja-
gāmaṇi, which had fallen into decay, and the cetiya belonging
to the vihāra he had rebuilt in the finest way and granted
it the village called Sīṅgaṭṭhala² that had been long separated
from it. Day by day he celebrated there in the right way a
sacrificial ceremony and so smoothed the road to heaven which
he would have to tread in the future.

To the Dutiyavela-vihāra³ the Ruler of men granted the
village by name Rutamadoṇi⁴, having learnt from the record
of a stone inscription that it had formerly belonged to it but
had been severed from it, and he the highly famed, intent on
merit, celebrated a sacrificial festival.

For the restoration of the Majjhapalli-vihāra⁵ the Ruler
conferred distinction on the bhikkhu Surpgharakkhita in pious
fashion. He caused a great recumbent image (of the Buddha)
to be made and finally he had a great festival celebrated there
and the festival of the eyes held. In order also to perform
the (customary) sacrificial ceremonies he dedicated the village
called Mālāgāma⁶ (to the monastery) and had a sacrificial
festival celebrated daily according to rule. To the sāmaṇera
called Siddhattha the Ruler granted the large Rajata-vihāra⁷
erected by King Duṭṭhagāmaṇi when inspired⁸ by the wish

¹ W.: Melavela-vihāra.

² Probably Singagoda, Kinigoda Koralu, Kegalla District (Census 1921, II, p. 514).

³ W.: Duvannagala-vihāra.

⁴ Perhaps Rutamadeniya, Galhoda Koralu, Kegalla District (Census 1921, II, p. 520).

⁵ W.: Maddepola-vihāra.

⁶ The Census 1921, II, p. 298, 303 mentions a village Mālāgāmaṇya and another Mālāgāmaṇya. Both are situated in the Kurunegala District, the first in the Galhoda Koralu, the second in the Madapattu Koralu East. The latter seems to be meant here.

⁷ See note to 29. 41.

⁸ P. *paṭṭhaceta* *ajatanā* is a composite verb formed after the Sinhalese model (*gacchamā, geyamā*).

for the august position of a chief disciple of Metteya¹, the
 239 King of the wise. After the Ruler of Laṅkā had caused the
 ceremony of admission to the Order to be performed on him,
 he granted this bhikkhu and all the sons of the Victor dwell-
 ing in the Uposathārāma rank and showed them favour in
 240 every way. Then in order to restore this vihāra which had
 long been in the state of a ruined house, the Ruler of men
 241 in Laṅkā assigned it divers artisans, painters and others, as
 well as much fine gold wherewith to gild the Buddha images,
 242 and all handiwork and so forth. That prince among ascetics
 — Siddhattha — accepted all this and removed in the best
 243 possible way everything that had been destroyed by age. He
 had a lofty, massive stone wall and a fine plaster floor built
 244 in the house, and outside a maṇḍapa, as well as (a picture)
 the figure of the Buddha in combat with Māra above on the
 rock face. Then when he had caused creeper work of flowers
 245 to be applied in the best manner possible and had caused a
 vast image of the recumbent Buddha to be fashioned out of
 good bricks, lime and clay and also many sitting and standing
 246 images of the Victor, he had represented in the best way
 possible in painting on the beautiful inner wall, enlightened
 247 ones like Mahuttamoni², a thousand in number. And at the
 foot of the vast statue of the recumbent Buddha he had placed
 248 one after the other beautiful images, that of the Buddha's
 constant servant and protector of the true doctrine³ — Ānanda,
 that of the Bodhisatta Metteya, that of the sublime patron
 249 deity (Viṣṇu), and that of King Gāmanī. He overlaid the five
 250 great images of the Buddha with gold, and when he had thus
 in every possible way finished the works which were to be

¹ Metteya is the future Buddha. Each Buddha has two pre-eminent disciples ascribed to him (*aggaśāvakā*). Those of the historical Buddha were Sāriputta and Moggallāna.

² I do not know who is meant here. W. omits the name in his translation.

³ *Saddhammasaṅgikā* refers to Ānanda. It is he who according to Vin. II, 287, was questioned as to the *dhamma*, by Mahākassapa at the first Council.

made in the inside (of the shrine), he had portrayed also outside on the wall a series of glorious figures of gods and Brhmma figures with flowers in their hands, which looked as 251 if they had appeared for worship. Then too he caused a great, beautiful triumphal arch to be made, well worth seeing, further 252 two lion figures on either side of the portal and in the empty interstices of the wall figures of demons. Also he had pictures 253 portrayed in coloured painting of the sixteen holy places¹, Mahiṃgana and the others, further of the famous foot-print 254 on the Saccabaddha mountain², of the ten pāramis³, of the three forms of (right) action⁴, as well as of many jātakas in which subjects like the five great renunciations⁵ are treated of. In the mapdapa he had all kinds of figures introduced, 255 series of lions, series of elephants, series of geese and creeper work of flowers. In the delightful cave above in the same rock 256 he built a vast image house, well worth seeing, splendid, beautiful with many sculptures fashioned to perfection and so forth. 257 There he had a beautiful, vast, life-like sitting Buddha made — splendid was this figure and fair to look at — and on either 258 side well fashioned, upright standing statues of the Bodhisatta 259 Metteyya and of the lotus-faced god⁶. He also caused many other figures to be set up: figures of sages, figures of many 260 hundreds of the perfect⁷, the four and twenty Buddhas, the

¹ See note to 100. 128.

² This is a sacred mountain in Siam, called Saccabaddhama in the narrative (p. 91) mentioned above (Note to 100. 59). There was a footprint of the Buddha on it which had come there miraculously. King Dhummika had sent a model of this footprint along with other gifts to the King of Laṅkā.

³ See note to 37. 160.

⁴ P. *tiḍḍa cariyā*. The three forms are *lokatthacariyā*, *lōkattān-cariyā* and *buddhacariyā* "action for the advantage of the world, for the advantage of one's kinsfolk and for one's (own) enlightenment." See DbCo, III. 441^o.

⁵ P. *pañcamahāpariccaya*. The surrender of the five precious possessions, the wife, the children, the royal dignity, life, limbs. DbCo. I. c. Chubbins, PD. n. v, *pariccaya*. ⁶ See note to 33. 49.

⁷ P. *asekha* "he who no longer undergoes training", synonymous with *arahant*.

261 whole of the Bodhi trees in the same number, the four and
 twenty intimations¹, the sixteen holy places, fair forms of
 spiritual beings and others, the five great Councils² and yet
 262 divers other beautiful pictures well worth seeing. Then he
 263 brought thither relics of the Sage and had a cetiya erected,
 adorned with a golden finial. In the image house itself he
 264 had placed on the lofty vaulted³ ceiling a sitting figure of
 the Sage surrounded by his five hundred followers, Śāriputta
 265 at the head. In the court he had walls and maṇḍapas erected
 at different places, as well as several gate-buildings and here
 266 and there stairs and other fine buildings, partly the restoration
 of much that had suffered by age, partly also many new
 (buildings).

267 All these fine structures the King dedicated (to the mo-
 268 nastery) at the festival of the eyes by dignitaries whom he
 had sent⁴, and in addition clothing, ornaments and much else.
 He had rows of various triumphal arches without gaps put
 269 up, placed on them the necessary ornament, gave orders for
 270 the sacred ceremonies and while celebrating in worthy fashion
 a great rite, he carried out the festival of the eyes under a
 lucky star and at a favourable hour.

¹ Each of the 24 Buddhas who according to the legend, precede the historical Buddha — they are enumerated Mhvs. I, 5 ff. — has his special sacred tree under which he attains enlightenment. To each in a former existence on a particular occasion, a Buddha gives the intimation (*vyākaraṇa*) that he too shall in time attain the dignity of a Buddha.

² The Mahāvastu 3, 4 and 5. 203 ff. gives an account of the three first Councils (*Aśmavamsa-samgāhā*) in Rājagṛha, Vesālī and Pāṭaliputta. Of the two other Councils the one is the Church reform under Parakkama-bāhu I (Mhvs. 72. 1 ff.), the other perhaps that under Parakkama-bāhu II (Mhvs. 84. 7 ff.). We get an idea of what the representation of such a council might have looked like from a fresco from Qyxi near Katscha (Central Asia) the subject of which is the first Council. See A. von Le Coq and E. Waddemann, Die buddhistische Spätantike in Mittelasien VI, p. 79 and Tafel 14.

³ P. *addhāra pabbhāra-maddhāra*. Very likely a picture on the ceiling.

⁴ The construction of the sentence is quite irregular. It seems to me, however, that *peṣa* 'more' is acc. pl. which like the preceding accusatives is made to depend on *darśana*.

From that time onwards there came hither many inhabitants of the whole Kingdom from all quarters, like the 271
 sea when it overflows¹ the land. When all the people who
 had gathered there beheld the many golden and other works 272
 of art which had been carried out, there their hearts were
 filled with joy, as if they saw the Enlightened One at the
 miracle of the double appearances². In joyful and high spirits 273
 they celebrated amid cries of Hail! a great festival and thus
 paved their way to Heaven. At that festival he invited the 274
 bhikkhu community of the vihāra, had seats prepared in the
 inner room of the vihāra, made bhikkhus who were preach- 275
 ers of the true doctrine sit down thereon, and had the
 Mahānāgala-sutta³ and other sacred texts worth hearing re- 276
 cited by them and thus celebrated in worthy manner a sacrificial
 festival of the doctrine⁴. All the people who saw and 277
 heard this, in that they at one and the same time beheld the
 Enlightened One⁵ and heard the true doctrine, were filled 278
 daily in every possible way with the highest joy and ecstasy,
 as if by a sermon of the living Sage. Thus he made manifest 279
 both: the beauty of his form and the charm of his sermon.

Outside in the court he placed pillars of stone, erected a
 mayāpa, spread seats therein and after establishing the great 280
 multitudes gathered round the mayāpa in the five major and
 other commandments relating to moral discipline, he made 281
 them listen daily to abundant texts. Full of reverence he⁶
 also invited the preachers of the doctrine to preach the doctrine
 repeatedly during the three watches of the night.

¹ The *gandhaka* metaphor is often mentioned, as is the case in the ancient Mahāvastu (See my translation, note to 17. 41; cf. DhCa. III, p. 190 ff.; Samantapāsādikā, ed. Takakura I, p. 88 ff.).

² In the Suttanipāṭa, Cūlavagga, Sutta 1 (ed. by Prince Assensus and Hermann Sauer, p. 46).

³ P. *dharmapajjāhi*. The *dharmas* itself is the *pajjvattho*, the "object of sacrifice", because the sacred texts are recited.

⁴ I. e. the images of the Buddha in the Rajata-vihāra.

⁵ The subject from v. 274 onwards is throughout the King. W. quite unnecessarily takes Siddhattha (see v. 233) as the subject of *anvāśīya* in 281 b.

282 In the year two thousand three hundred and one after the
 283 final nirvana of the Enlightened One¹ he had the vihāra called
 284 Rajata restored and the great festival celebrated. He then
 285 thought of repairing the splendid cetiya erected on a clear,
 286 fine large slab of rock to the south of the vihāra but which
 287 was so dilapidated that it resembled a heap of dust. Therefore
 288 he had fetched from all quarters lime, bricks, stones and so
 289 forth. Hereupon he had a fine, square throne built of stone
 290 in the best possible manner whereon he placed a relic of the
 291 sublime Enlightened One. At the restoration of the cetiya,
 292 he erected on a neighbouring, particularly beautiful piece
 293 of land for the community whom he invited thither in
 294 fitting manner for the purpose, setting up a marked out
 295 boundary, a monastery with an Uposatha house and other
 296 (buildings) provided with a brick roof and so forth. On the
 land round about he laid out beautifully a large park adorned
 with divers blossoming trees, with divers blossoming creepers,
 with divers fruit trees and the like, and where there were
 many bathing-ponds. And full of zeal as he was, he piously
 made the sons of the Victor dwell there and devote themselves
 to study and religious exercises.

297 In such wise was the place restored by royal power, vi-
 298 sited (in days of yore) by great saints and honoured by the
 299 former rulers of Laokū. When the highly famed King heard
 300 thereof he fixed the boundary of the vihāra solemnly in the
 301 same way (as before), performed there all the solemn cere-
 302 monies, arranged in still more abundant measure (than before)
 303 for an almsgiving to the community and the like and laid up
 304 a store of merit. Near the Dohola mountain² adorned with
 305 rows of trees like pūga, punnāga, nāga³ and others, resound-
 306 ing with the sweet twitter of all kinds of birds, provided
 with cool, spotless white stone slabs, enlivened with herds of
 divers animals, there was in the fair monastery situated there

¹ I. e. 1757 A. D.

² Mentioned in 44. 56. See note to the passage.

³ For the tree names cf. 73. 96, 74. 204, 79. 3.

which bore the name of Sūkara¹, an image house of the Victor, erected by a dignitary who was charged therewith by the King. There the councillor Savapagāma setting up 296 stone pillars, built an Uposatha house and dedicated it to the sons of the Sage. He also had supplies of wood collected 297 for pillars and the like and numerous dwellings built there. To the bhikkhus to whom dwellings had been assigned there, 298 the Lord of men devoted many villages, fields and so on for the provision of what was necessary. After that Ruler of men 299 had caused all this to be brought about he kindly dedicated it to that prince of ascetics, Dhammarakkhita.

After the Ruler of men had in such wise stored up divers 300 kinds of merit he passed in the thirty-fifth year of his reign from this world thither in accordance with his deeds.

When one reflects on the worthlessness of wealth and of the 301 life of the flesh one utterly rejects the yearning thereafter. Ye also, revering the Triad of the sacred things, ought to perform good works such as spiritual exertions and the like².

Here ends the hundredth chapter, called 'The History of Kittisirirājasūta', in the Mahāvamsa, compiled for the serene joy and emotion of the pious.

¹ The Col. Ed. reads *sūkaraśāstana-mūli* instead of the *śāstana-mūli* of my MS. W. gives Varāraja as the modern name of the monastery.

² The whole of the hundredth chapter has the character of a supplement to chapter 99 and treats especially of the services of the King to the Church. It repeatedly alludes to events which have been touched upon in the foregoing (cf. 98, 91 with the note to 100, 59, also the note to 100, 201). I have already pointed out (note to 99, 53) that Tibbotavave's contribution to the Colavamsa (see note to 99, 70) which deals with the reign of Kittisirirājasūta, is composed in praise of this king and completed during his lifetime. This is the case too with the greater part of the hundredth chapter. Here too in v. 228 we meet with the expression *mahārāja Sīhalaśa* and the benediction in v. 195 sounds as if it were addressed to a living person. At the end however Kittisirir's death is mentioned. The last part of the hundredth chapter must thus have been added later, whether by Tibbotavave himself or by another author. The break cannot be fixed with certainty, it might possibly be at v. 228.

CHAPTER CI

SUPPLEMENT¹

1 On his death, his younger brother Sirirājādhirajastha²
 2 received consecration as king in Laṅkā. After attaining his
 consecration as king, he devoted himself with pious joy to
 the Triad of the Jewels, zealous in listening to the true doc-
 3 trine, unwearied, discerning. The Ruler of men continued, as
 formerly without abatement that furtherance of the laity and
 4 the Order which his brother had carried out. The highly famed
 offered meat and drink and so on as before to the sublime Tooth
 5 Relic without depriving it of anything. He commanded that
 the regular almsgiving which had been established for the
 sons of the Victor should be given to them in the order in-
 6 troduced by the (former) king. The bhikkhus who with the Thera
 Upāli at their head had arrived from Sāmiṇḍa, came to the
 7 town of Sirirāḍḍhana. Here those bhikkhus who had come from
 there, with the Thera Upāli at their head, established a sacred
 boundary to the south of the town in the so-called Kusumā-
 8 rāma³, according to the *hāṭṭidutiya* process⁴. When he saw

¹ Chapter 101 of the *Mhve*, has been composed and added to their edition of the chronicle (1877) by H. SUNDARALA and BETHWENTHANA. See MALALASEKERA, *Pālī Literature*, p. 142. No MS. however of those which I could examine, reaches beyond v. 292 of ch. 100, and I do not know on which authority the vv. 109, 293-301 are based.

² Reigned 1780-1798 (cf. v. 18). It was during the reign of Rājājādhirājastha that the capitulation of Ceylon took place (15th Feb., 1798) and with that the passing of the dominion from the Dutch to the British. Cf. PIERIS 3, p. 142 ff.; COOMARASENA, HC., p. 199 ff.

³ Synonym for Puppāṇāma 100, 86, 141, now the *Malatya-vihāra*.

⁴ This is a particular form of a *saṅghakamma* or ecclesiastical act. See Vin. II. 89^a and 91^{ab} (= Colln. 4. 11 2 and 11).

that the Uposatha house built formerly by King Kittisiri, was decayed, the Ruler of men who was intent on merit, first of 9 all raised the ground on all sides and then by the adding of 10 still more stones he put up the walls inside the boundary. He put up stone pillars and so built the Uposathar house 11 which the Ruler made over¹ to the community from the four regions of the heavens.

The King was acquainted with various literary works, works 12 in Pali and Sanskrit, he rejoiced in the continuous giving of alms, was in form like the god of love². As expert in the 13 text books relating to language he made a poem in the Sihala tongue out of the Asadisajataka³ and had it written down. With a heart full of faith he revered⁴ the Tooth Relic in 14 faith with a hundred thousand lamps which he had lit in a single night. Hearing of the great merits of a kaphina offer- 15 ing over all gifts of alms, he every year presented kaphina⁵ robes to the community. He had an image of the Aṅgīrasa⁶ 16 made in bronze in the proportions of the King and since he strove after the dignity of a Buddha, he erected in the 17 monastery called Gaṅgārāma which was held to be pious, a graceful cetiya well worth seeing.

¹ The description of the building is obscure. V. 9 seems to refer to the securing of the whole base, v. 10 to the laying down of a walled terrace and v. 11 a b to the building of the house itself.

² P. *makurashhaja* = skr. *makuroshhaja* "whose badge is the makara, the dolphin".

³ Jātaka nr. 161 in *Parasara* II, p. 86 ff.

⁴ I believe that here we should read *ajjānāmeti* instead of *ajjānāmeti* as the meaning of the latter can hardly be harmonised with *dāṭṭhā-dāṭṭhā*. The instr. *uposathasāhasena* would also not fall within the construction of the sentence. We must, it is true, put up with a slight disturbance of the metre, when reading *ajjānāmeti*.

⁵ See note to 44. 48.

⁶ Aṅgīras in the Rīgveda is the designation of "beings half gods half men who act as intermediaries between the two, as sons of Heaven, as ancestors of men, as those who impart to mankind the gifts of the gods" (GILSUMAKH). The expression *ajjānāmeti* is already used of Buddha, *Therag.* 1252 (quoted S. I. 195). Cf. also A. III, 233²²; Jā. V, 141¹.

- 18 After the Ruler had accumulated these and other merits
 he passed after an eighteen years' reign from this world in
 accordance with his deeds.
- 19 The sister's son of Rājadhīrjasa, the Lord of men,
 Sirivikkamarjasa¹, the discerning ruler of the country
 20 hearkened to the doctrine preached by the Victor. The Ruler
 found pleasure therein and sacrificed to the sacred Tooth Relic
 21 jewels, pearls and other (valuables) and many villages and
 fields. To the community whose head is the Buddha, he
 22 dispensed often delicious foods and so strove after eternal
 happiness. These and other merits the Ruler accumulated.
 23 But as he indulged in intercourse with impious people he
 changed (for the worse). He had the chief councillors, the
 24 great dignitaries and many other officials gathered together
 and destroyed his subjects like a devil. He had the people,
 25 many hundreds in number, brought to different spots and had
 them impaled, merciless as death. Much wealth that had
 26 come to the people by inheritance, the King had confiscated
 like a thief that robs villages. And because the Ruler com-
 27 mitted in this way many evil-deeds the Sihalas and the in-
 habitants of the town of Colombo² rebelled. They all came
 28 hither, captured the criminal king alive when the eighteenth
 year after his consecration had passed, and brought him to
 29 the opposite coast³. After they had brought the King, the
 torturer of his people, to the opposite coast the Ingirisi by
 name seized the whole kingdom.

End of the Mahāvamsa

May there be prosperity!

¹ Reigned 1702-1818. For the rise of the British power in Ceylon during the reign of this king and for the reign itself see COMAROW, *HC.* p. 155 ff., where also on p. 169 f., 182 there is a list of the bibliography of the subject.

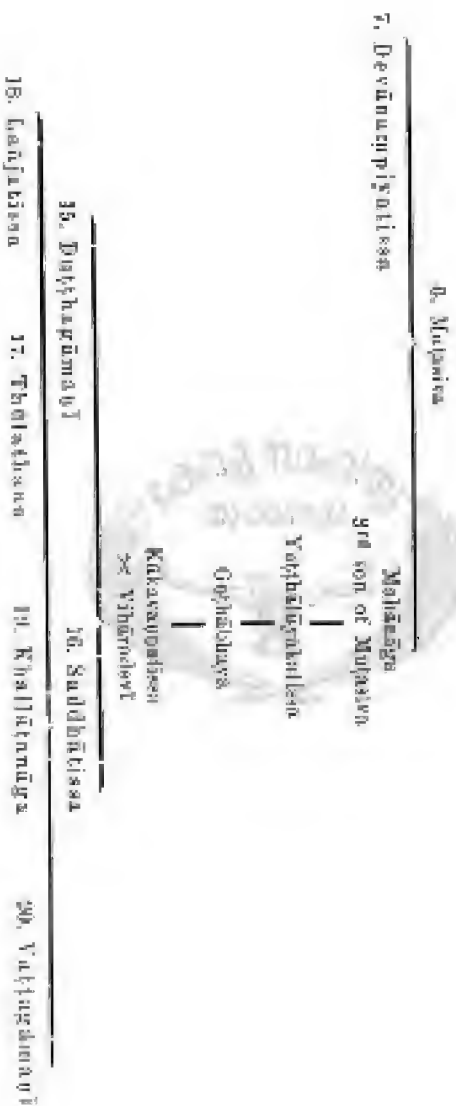
² This means the British.

³ I. e. To the Indian mainland.

II

Duṭṭhagāmaṇī,

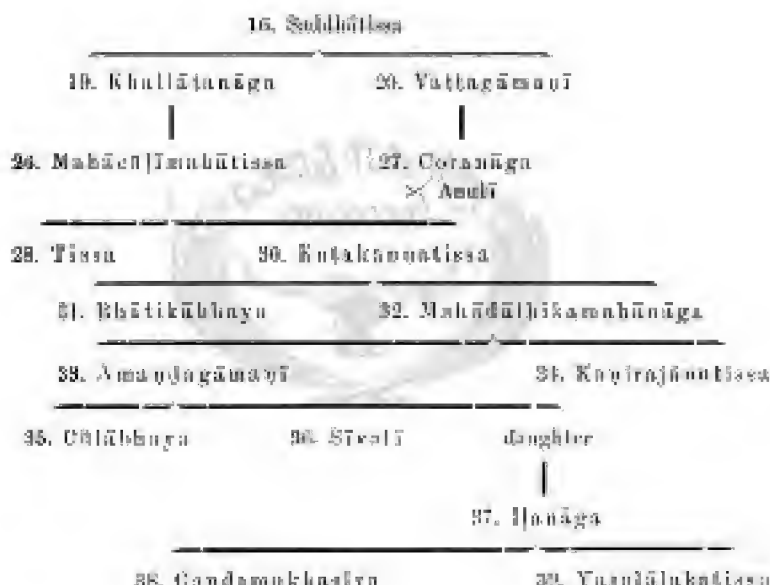
his descent and his successors



Vajragāmaṇī's reign was interrupted by that of Gaṇḍakisa (21—23).

III

From Mahācūḍamahātissa to Yasalālakatissa

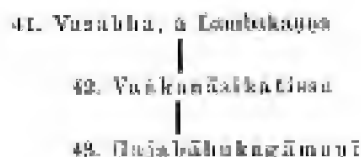


The successors of Tissa (27) are the partners of Queen Anulī 1, Sira, 2. Vaṇṇa, 3. Dārubhatikātissa, 4. Niliya and Anulī herself (29). — Yasalālakatissa's successor is the usurper Subharaṇa (40).

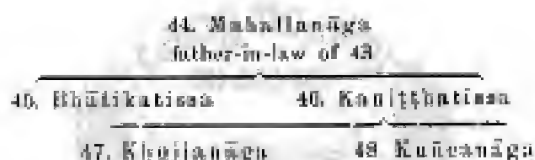
IV

From Vasabha to Mahāsena

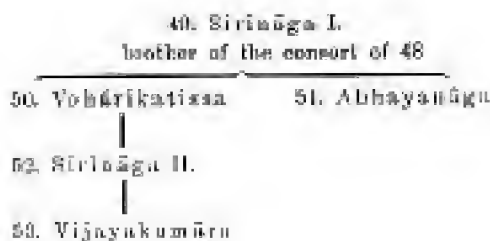
1.



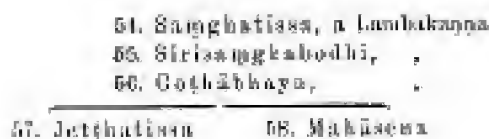
2.



3.



4.



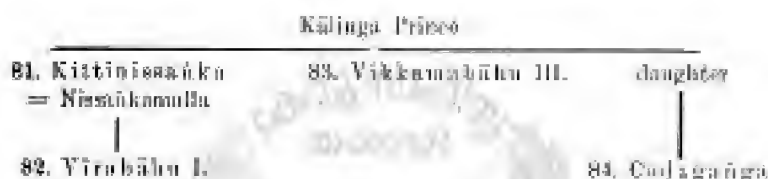
B The Oldest Part of the Cūlavamsa

See Cūlavamsa. vol. I, pp. 351-358.

C The Later Parts of the Cūlavamsa

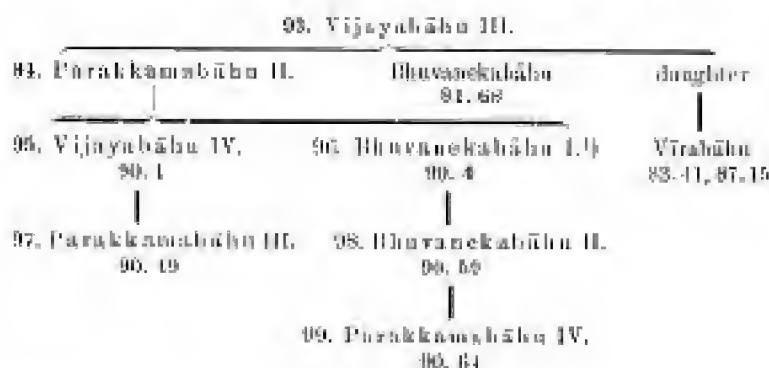
I

From Kittinissaṅka to Coṭṭagaṅga



II

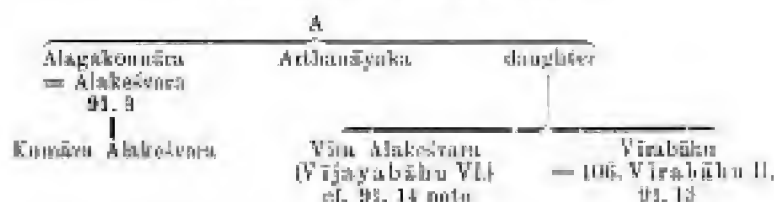
From Vijayabāhu III. to Parakkamaśāhū IV.



¹⁾ Other sons of Parakkamaśāhū II, are Titikamallā, Parakkamaśāhū and Jayabāhu (87. 16 f.)

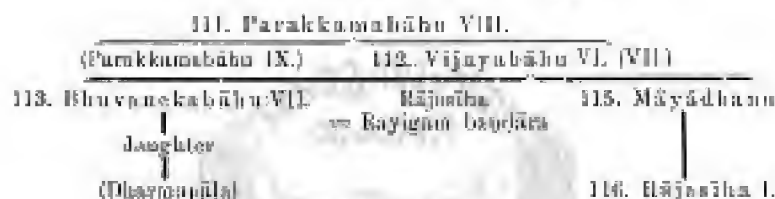
III

The family of Alagakkonāra



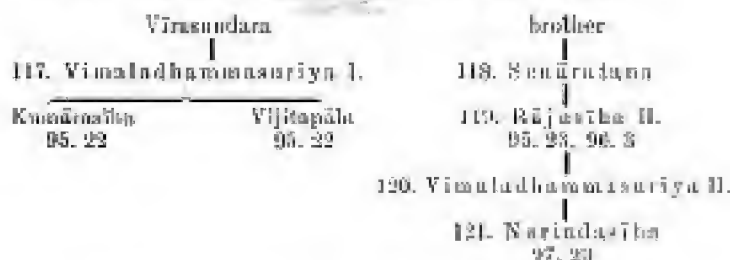
IV

From Parakkamabāhu VIII. to Rājasiha I.



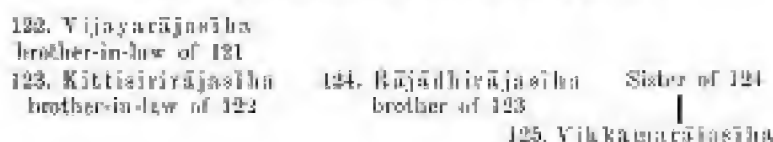
V

From Vimaladhammasuriya I. to Narindasiha



VI

From Vijayarājasiha to Vikkamarājasiha



Indices

The indices refer not only to the *Cūlavamsa* but also to my edition and translation of the old *Mahāvamsa* so that the whole chronicle is comprised within. The abbreviations are: **M. ed.** = The *Mahāvamsa*, edited by W. G., PTS. 1908. — **M. tr.** = The *Mahāvamsa*, translated by W. G., PTS. 1912. — **C. ed. I** = *Cūlavamsa*, being the more recent part of the *Mahāvamsa*, vol. I, PTS. 1925. — **C. ed. II** = the same, vol. II, PTS. 1927. — **C. tr. I** = *Cūlavamsa* &c., translated by W. G., vol. I, PTS. 1929. — **C. tr. II** = the same, vol. II, PTS. 1930.

I. List of words

- | | |
|----------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| akkhaṇḍavaddhi 72. 245 | arahant (M. tr. p. 292) 1. 14 |
| akkhamāḥ 46. 17; 57. 4 | agāmiya 44. 148 |
| akkhi "axe" 38. 94 | ajira 35. 3 |
| agati 37. 108; 99. 73; 104 | āli (in proper names) 44. 6, 122; |
| aggikapalla 69. 70 | 46. 1; 48. 50; 91. 2; 98. 2 |
| āṇa — saka 47. 10, 14 | āḍḍāda 53. 13 |
| aṭṭhamūlarīhārā 61. 59 | āyubheda 73. 42 |
| aṭṭhāyatanaṇḍi 84. 4, 18 | ārāṇika 37. 64 |
| aṣṭhāyoga 88. 34, 118 | ālinda 35. 3 |
| adlikārā 66. 66; 70. 278 | āṇabara 69. 20 |
| anālaya 42. 42; 46. 4 | āvaraṇa 79. (27,) 69 |
| anūyāsa 68. 58 | āvudha 99. 15 |
| anussati 98. 14 | āi (in the oratio recta) 37. 114; |
| annapāṇa 62. 53 | 44. 16, 90; 45. 20; 48. 30, |
| antaraṇḍadhara 69. 32 | 116; 54. 64; 77. 99; 94. 23 |
| apāya 72. 306 | āthāgāra 59. 33 |
| appamaññā 39. 18 | āyūpatha 3. 25 |
| abhinā 4. 12; 52. 38 | |
| abhisamaya 1. 92; 12. 27 | ulakokkhepasthā 89. 70; 94. |
| anaramantar 42. 3; 52. 38 | 17; 97. 12 |

upacāra 60. 82
 upanayana 64. 13
 upanissaya 5. 45, 172
 upasampatti 84. 42; 89. 50
 upāya 66. 143
 upāya (the four) 58. 3
 upāsana 24. 1; 51. 100
 uposatha (M. tr. p. 296) 37. 201
 ubbhāhikā 4. 46 f.

eka- 61. 13
 ekatthambhakapāsāda 73. 92
 ekatthambhā 60. 11

odakantika 72. 238

kaṇḍakūṭhaka 32. 6
 kaṇḍuka 48. 140
 kaṇṇavedha 62. 55
 kaṭamūgala 35. 111
 kapparuḷḷaka 51. 124
 kappiyakāraka 37. 173
 kaṇṇagata 69. 50
 kalanda 37. 204
 kavāṭaka 35. 25
 kiṇḍiṇijāla 73. 68
 kumbhapaḷaka 12. 20
 kulambaya 96. 26
 kusaloḍaya 71. 24
 kūṭāgāra 73. 62
 keta 35. 109
 koṭṭisa 88. 109
 koṭṭhaka 1. 56
 koṭṭhabaddhanājjhara 79. 28

khaggadatta 72. 102
 khagga 66. 105

khandhāvāra 73. 57
 khīṇāsara (M. tr. p. 292) 3. 9

gaya 51. 52; 74. 48
 gūpasamgaṇṇikā 60. 17
 gati 37. 51; 72. 286
 gantha 97. 56
 gandhabbi 74. 216
 gabbhaparibhāra 62. 36
 gamiyabhatta 51. 61
 garubbhaṇṇini 84. 39; 85. 105
 gāvuta 65. 4; 73. 157
 girisetu 79. 24
 gupā (the five) 26. 26
 gokaṇṇa 79. 36
 gopura 60. 12

cakkhumāna 81. 26
 caṇḍa 72. 252
 caturāṅga 76. 217
 catussālā 73. 23
 cumbha 24. 31
 celukkhapa 72. 288
 corayuddha 75. 135

chāda 66. 69

jaṭṭa 1. 16
 jara 99. 176
 jātakaṃṇa 62. 45
 jālakavaṇṇa 78. 49
 jettāpaccāyaka 41. 9

tapassin, tapovanna 41. 99
 tādā 15. 62
 tālāncara 17. 7
 tikkhaggapada 66. 87

ticivara 41. 29

tilaka 87. 67

tivaṅka 78. 39; 85. 66

tulasyatṭhi 88. 97

thūpikā 76. 105, 118

thupissara 52. 3; 53. 30; 60. 22

thūtkaroti 85. 41

thūḍubha 37. 132

thūḍi 76. 91

thosā (the five) 26. 26

thasajāta 58. 8

thammakamma 39. 57

thammadāna 98. 77; 99. 15

thammadhāta 41. 37

thammapābhata 84. 14

thammassaṅgaha; -saṅgati 3.
17; 4. 63

thātaka 57. 69

thātugabbha 60. 56; 68. 28

thandana 63. 38; 73. 29

thandina 85. 50

thāḍajvāra 76. 91

thāḍu 76. 261-2

thāmakarasa 62. 52

thāyaka 62. 56

thikkhala 76. 18

thiggatika 74. 22

thijavajjhita 67. 90

thijjara 79. 28, 66

thiḥhite 99. 52, 58

thidāna 37. 133

thibandha 99. 21

thiyatti 48. 108

thiyajeti 72. 207; 77. 59, 82

thirodha 35. 104

thissuigaha 39. 3

thita 67. 96

thittika 69. 11

thukalatta 78. 25

thuccayā (the four) 37. 76

thuccakabattin 72. 248; 76. 244

thuccapattitṭhilaṅga 98. 50; 100.
29

thuccakamma 5. 261

thūḍiputti 20. 30

thūḍiyatta 78. 35

thūḍivedha 20. 30

thūḍi 79. 27

thūḍikata 72. 91

thūḍipalāsa 45. 5

thūḍasakkujjana 45. 31

thūḍi 42. 50; 44. 109; 52. 69;
73. 47; 100. 116, 159

thūḍipajjila 60. 3

thūḍakkhiṅga karoti 37. 106

thūḍikkhāra (the eight) 60. 71

thūḍiccheda 42. 39

thūḍibhoga 51. 20

thūḍivattana 73. 71

thūḍiveṇa 37. 63 (M. tr. p. 294
is misleading)

thūḍi (the four) 70. 106

thūḍivita 73. 116

thūḍivekka 71. 27

thūḍevigāna 60. 75

thūḍasāsana 72. 186

thūḍava 72. 106

thūḍihāriyapakkha 37. 202

thūḍajala 38. 61; 52. 65; 54. 50

pāḍamūlaka 66. 66
 pūpurattilaraṇṇī 54. 24
 pāpena (pāpakummena) 52. 77;
 53. 8, 40
 pāṇṇaṅga 11. 28
 pāramitā (the ten) 37. 180
 pāsāda 37. 59; 72. 244
 piṭṭhito karoti 70. 314
 piṭṭhipāsāpa 68. 27
 piṭṭhasappin 49. 19
 pīti (five kinds of) 81. 24
 puṇṇakiriya (the ten) 37. 180
 puṇṇodaya 37. 139; 53. 23
 pupphādhāna 30. 51
 pubba (= ādi) 73. 122
 pubbahāra 64. 15
 purattha 38. 110
 pessiya 67. 58; 84. 5

pharati 72. 254

kulipaṭṭa 57. 7
 kūḷaja 59. 12
 bodhikoṭṭhaka 79. 72
 bodhigghara 38. 43

bhatti 74. 240; 85. 33; 93. 9
 bhaya 74. 49
 bhava 4. 66
 bhavavibhava 94. 19.
 bhājana 44. 70; 84. 16.
 bhūgavāra 98. 24
 bhānubandha 85. 101
 bhava 66. 39, 42
 bhūmi 64. 11

makara 73. 92
 māṅgalikāni (the eight) 27. 37
 maṇḍapa 37. 103
 marumba 29. 8
 mahacca 74. 225
 mahārukkha 72. 11
 mātula 57. 28
 mukha 70. 156, 217
 *mukha 50. 53
 mukhabbaṅga 63. 30
 muttacāgin 60. 81
 moddhavedi 32. 5
 muḥam 89. 60
 mūla* 74. 1
 mūlaghaccaṃ 58. 56
 mēdayaṇṇapāsāpa 1. 39

yatṭhīmadhuka 32. 46
 yathācāram 60. 1
 yavana 76. 264
 yogga 42. 8; 44. 84; 70. 207;
 95. 12

yōjana 38. 68; cf. C. I tr. p. 349

raṅgabbhūmi 31. 82
 raṅgamaṇḍala 85. 42
 raṭṭha 57. 71
 ratanavātuka 76. 101
 raedha 70. 212
 rasa 72. 94
 rūjadharanā (the ten) 37. 197
 rūjapābhata 84. 14
 rūjavesibhājaṅga 73. 91
 rūjini 50. 58
 rūyara 76. 94

laya 73. 79

lājapañcamaka 98. 16

līna 78. 13

lekha 49. 21

vaṭṭaṃsa 11. 28

vaḍḍhita 67. 52

vaḍḍhetai 50. 66

vattakāraka 98. 27

vattati 54. 59

vaṭṭhū 88. 97

vassavattin 86. 9

vassabhāra 23. 71

vātaroga 56. 5

vāṭābhā 37. 111

vācīpaṇa 48. 148; 68. 45; (79. 66, 67)

vaṭṭeti 74. 218

vāḥa 68. 50

vāhana 74. 225

vāhīnī 72. 255, 295

vijjambhāti 90. 71

viṭṭaṅka 88. 97

vidhūnita 67. 96

vibhūṭṭa 71. 21

vināsa 72. 923; 73. 107

vīlīvakāraka 88. 105

visodhetai 38. 53

vedaṅga 62. 33

vedikā 27. 10; 73. 88; 76. 117.

Cf. M. tr. p. 296

veṣa 76. 261

ropapañmika 67. 45

ryādāha 69. 29

saṃprambha 72. 18

saṃkḥata, saṃkḥāra 4. 66

saṃkhiya 89. 1

saṃgaha 91. 27

saṃgahavattḥūnī (the four)
37. 108; (41. 56)

saccakiriya 18. 39; 25. 16;
(51. 56); 70. 209; 82. 16

saṭṭhavaṭṭi 37. 150

saṭṭhāgama 67. 88

saṭṭhikata 73. 67

santi 73. 71; 85. 50

saṃpūḍḍheda 70. 168

sannira 39. 16; 74. 201

samāṇi 59. 21

saṃatṭha with gen. 48. 20

saṃavatti 42. 3

saṃūpatti 5. 123

samī 72. 9

saṃaya 1. 32, 62

saḥavaḍḍhita 67. 52

saḥeḍḍha 23. 11; 35. 11

saḥukāra 74. 223; 85. 48

sāpadhūṇa 37. 203

sābhīnata 61. 50

sāmaṇera 39. 18

sāragandha 100. 196

sāḥicca 82. 3

sākhānaba 63. 5

sāvīkāsotṭhāsala 10. 162

sa² before a finite verb 50. 27

sugandhika 49. 31

sudhakara 84. 41

sūri 60. 19

sekha 3. 24

sogata 76. 11; 83. 37

soḍḍha 85. 33

soṭṭapattī, -panna 1. 33; (12. 21)

hammiya 88. 361, 118
 harapḥaram 76. 114
 hassa 66. 56; 73. 117

hemavaddha 38. 64
 homa 62. 34

II. Names of Persons

Ajātasattu and successors 4. 10f.
 Alagakkonāra 91. 3, 9 N.
 Ajattūra 76. 180 N., 184, 211
 Asoka (Dhammasoka) 5. 19 ff.,
 11. 18; 38. 44 &c.
 Āriyamuni 100. 95
 Udaya I. 49. 1, 45
 Upāli 100. 71, 94, 117, 112
 Ukkāka 2. 11f., 45. 38; 80. 32;
 87. 34
 Kālāsoka 4. 31, 63; 5. 14
 Kuṭṭhaka 51. 88
 Kumāradāsa (and Kālādāsa) 41. 4
 Kulasekhara 76. 76, 80 N. —
 90. 47
 Kuvappa 7. 14 ff.
 Koṭṭhā 64. 3; 70. 56
 Gokappa 63. 34; 66. 35
 Candavajji 5. 120 ff.
 Cūṇakka 5. 16; 64. 45
 Citā 9. 1, 13 ff.
 Cōlakkonāra 76. 145, 173, 180 N.,
 181
 Tondriya 76. 180 N., 181
 Dāsaka 5. 105 ff.
 Dighasanda(na) 15. 212; 38. 16
 Duiyyodhana 64. 43
 Dassanta 64. 44
 Dhammakūṭi 84. 11
 Dharmasoka see Āsoka

Dhammika 100. 65, 136 &c.
 Nandā 5. 15 ff.; 64. 15
 Narasiha 47. 4, 7 N.
 Nālā 60. 9
 Nigrodha 5. 47 ff.
 Patañjali 37. 217
 Panāda see Mahāpanāda
 Parakkamacamunātha 80. 19,
 52
 Bimbisāra 2. 25 ff.
 Buddhaghosa 37. 215 ff., 224
 Bhaddaji 31. 7 ff.
 Mundhātara 2. 2; 37. 53; 81. 28
 Mahākassapa 3. 1; 5. 1; 78. 6
 Mahādhammakathin 37. 175
 Mahāsoma 39. 42
 Mahāpanāda 2. 4; 31. 8; 37.
 62; 51. 9
 Mahāsammata 2. 1, 23; 47. 2;
 99. 77
 Māna, Mānaramma 57. 4, 14, 25
 Moggaliputta 5. 95 ff.; 78. 6
 Rāma 64. 42; 68. 20; 73. 137;
 75. 59; 83. 46; 88. 69
 Rāvaya 64. 42; 75. 59
 Vajiragga, Viduragga 51. 105;
 53. 46
 Varasāyana 100. 138, 174
 Visuddhācariya 100. 137, 171,
 173

Vihśradevi 22. 12, 20, 29; 24. 53	10; 85. 73; 92. 6. — 44. 83;
Sagararājine 87. 34	46. 1; 59. 10
Samañi 59. 21	Sikāmeghavapne 44. 83 N.
Saravāpkaṇa 97. 51, 69; 98.	Sitā 73. 137.
23; 99. 150 N.; 100. 49, 107	Suñettā 91. 21
Siggava 5. 29, 120 ff.	Soyaka 5. 104
Sirisamphabodhi 36, 73 ff.; 81.	Hanumant 73. 161

III. List of Passages

1. 4. — 3. 6, 7. — 4. 30, 45, 51, 62. — 5. 23, 61, 145, 216, 227, 262. — 7. 56 ff. — 9. 8, 17, 23. — 11. 2, 5. — 12. 16, 55. — 13. 48, 19. — 15. 27 ff., 59. — 17. 41. — 19. 10, 28. — 20. 22, 30, 37. — 21. 4 ff. — 22. 17, 53, 67, 68. — 23. 11, 24, 37 ff. — 24. 35, 48, 56. — 25. 89, 93. — 26. 23-5. — 27. 46. — 28. 28. — 29. 2, 53. — 30. 25, 42-50. — 31. 21, 26, 43, 53, 124. — 32. 31. — 33. 4, 42, 51, 98, 103. — 34. 27, 36. — 35. 13, 116-8. — 36. 26, 31, 102, 116, 124. — 37. 35, 66 ff., 91, 100, 101, 114, 116, 120, 138, 159, 171, 184, 185 ff., 200. — 38. 3, 8, 9, 21, 29, 35, 59, 60, 94, 96, 98, 110. — 39. 6, 11, 17, 23, 26, 27, 34, 42, 52, 53, 59. — 41. 0, 41, 66, 71, 73, 82, 89, 99, 103. — 42. 1, 15-6, 26, 28, 62, 66, 69. — 44. 7, 13, 21, 38, 44, 56, 69, 87, 88, 90, 106, 119, 123, 151. — 45. 30, 54, 56, 70, 75. — 46. 1, 32, 34. — 47. 2-3, 10, 40, 45. — 48. 8, 20, 25, 29, 51, 61, 72, 79, 91, 101, 104. — 49. 1, 2, 3, 9, 18, 23, 24, 27, 47, 52, 58, 61, 62, 71, 81, 84, 86, 93. — 50. 9, 27, 31, 52, 53, 58, 73, 74. — 51. 20, 56-7, 98. — 52. 4, 12, 19, 22, 26, 29, 31, 32, 43, 46, 80. — 53. 7, 14. — 54. 9, 57, 59-60, 62, 68, 70-1. — 55. 16, 20. — 56. 16. — 57. 8, 9, 33. — 58. 15, 45, 56. — 59. 1, 2, 22, 32, 49. — 60. 11, 26, 30, 44, 84. — 61. 31, 36, 40, 53, 72. — 62. 10, 13, 65. — 63. 12-5. — 64. 3, 19, 22, 28, 40, 41-7, 53. — 66. 7, 12, 25, 47, 53, 56, 59, 62, 63, 66, 72, 78, 85, 86, 104, 109, 115, 116, 143-5, 150. — 67. 21, 44, 45, 46, 61, 65. — 68. 1-2, 25, 31. — 69. 20. — 70. 20, 42-4, 85, 92, 127, 128, 145,

181, 208, 289, 290, 292, 321. — 71, 10, 11-5, 32. — 72, 18, 28, 43, 58, 80, 91, 95, 101-2, 104, 106-7, 113, 122-8, 139, 140, 141-7, 152, 188, 205-14, 209, 211, 227-8, 236, 258, 318. — **73**, 2-10, 12-22, 41, 57, 71-81, 95-112, 111, 121-33, 133. — **74**, 22-35, 26, 55-66, 56, 61, 72-8, 79, 80, 82, 83, 96, 100, 105, 107, 129, 140, 142, 150, 165, 173, 178, 198-227, 199, 225, 228-31, 240. — **75**, 19, 85, 88, 97, 120, 134-5, 143, 156, 179-82. — **76**, 3, 8, 12, 18-9, 29, 31, 40, 55, 70-2, 87, 90, 98, 100, 112, 121, 130, 186, 192, 208-19, 212. — **77**, 20-4, 52, 58, 81-5, 97. — **78**, 2-4, 13, 52-4, 60, 62, 102. — **79**, 27. — **80**, 15, 33, 39. — **81**, 2, 6, 19, 22, 26. — **82**, 21, 33, 47. — **83**, 1, 5-7, 8-9, 15-21, 33-4, 40. — **84**, 14, 15, 38, 40. — **85**, 1, 3-10, 1, 38, 42-51, 45, 82. — **86**, 17, 22. — **87**, 4, 19, 37, 39, 46, 50. — **88**, 11, 86, 100. — **89**, 4, 16-38, 20, 47-56, 68. — **90**, 43, 46, 63, 68, 92, 104, 109. — **91**, 9, 25, 27. — **92**, 24-6. — **94**, 23. — **95**, 4, 14. — **96**, 5, 19-20. — **97**, 23. — **98**, 14, 24, 26, 47-8, 61, 69, 73. — **99**, 6-11, 11, 16, 43, 45, 46, 53, 55, 56, 60, 63, 101, 113, 163, 171, 175, 181. — **100**, 1, 35, 48, 52, 71-3, 75, 102-7, 129, 137, 157, 162, 167, 215, 248, 268, 281, 295. — **101**, 14.

IV. The Chronicle

1) Composition (Cf. C. ed. I, p. I ff.): **37**, 51; **38**, 59. — **79**, 84. — **90**, 102; **99**, 76 ff. — the author of the last portion contemporary with Kittisirirājasīha **99**, 53, 103, 103; **100**, 228. — — **2) Sources**: Different sources: **7**, 43-5 and **9**, 9-11; **73**, 12 ff. and **78**, 6 ff. — a new source? (the Rohana chronicle) **22**, 1; **45**, 37; **57**, 3; — (**47**, 1; **81**, 40). — puṇṇapothakāni **32**, 25; traces of p: dry numbers or lists of names **20**, 17-28; **24**, 12, 47; **26**, 25; **27**, 47; **32**, 26 ff.; **38**, 45 ff.; **60**, 48 ff.; **79**, 62 ff.; **82**, 12 ff.; **92**, 10-29; **100**, 14, 200; absence of a record **37**, 16. — annals kept at court **59**, 7 ff. — — **3) Chronological dates**: **4**, 1, 8; **5**, 21 f., 280; **20**, 1 ff., 32, 49; **41**, 27; **42**, 41; **44**, 111, 153; **47**, 15; **52**, 78; **53**, 41; **55**, 22; **58**, 41; **60**, 5; **80**, 32; **90**, 108; **91**, 15;

92, 6; 94, 5, 18; 99, 2; 100, 59, 91, 282. — — 4) **Style and language** (cf. C. ed. I, p. XIV ff.). *Alampkāra*: 18, 14, 68; 52, 42; 58, 15; 60, 44; 70, 292; 72, 51, 102, 144, 209, 255 f., 314, 323, 326; 76, 140 f., 233, 311 f.; 80, 56 ff., 60; 82, 5, 16, 41, 44 ff.; 83, 13, 25, 38, 40, 42; 85, 12 ff., 35, 44 ff.; 88, 91, 121; 89, 2 ff.; 90, 34, 47, 49; 96, 20; 99, 4, 122; 100, 30, 34 &c. — *Pans*: 1, 13, 25; 5, 256; 9, 29; 14, 43; 15, 27; 17, 8 f.; 26, 6; 31, 56; 33, 65; 37, 115; 50, 65, 83; 51, 108; 67, 92; 72, 295, 315; 85, 87 f.; 90, 2 &c. *Metrical licenses*: 37, 135ab, 138ab; 62, 49cd; 65, 11cd; 66, 14ab; 67, 44cd. See also C. ed. I, p. XI ff. — *Irregular grammatical forms*. See also C. ed. I, p. XIV ff.: 44, 11, 31, 44; 47, 55; 50, 10; 62, 60; 70, 282; 75, 26; 90, 109. — *Loc. inst. of gen.* 38, 115. — *Causative inst. of the simple root and the contrary*: 48, 102; 70, 287; 75, 156 &c.; 47, 18; 48, 61; 75, 171 &c. — *Simple verb inst. of passive and the contrary*: 44, 26; 59, 18; 51, 54; 76, 380 &c.; 70, 208. — *Gerund inst. of Loc. abs.*: 39, 26; 48, 79 N.; 77, 24 N.; 88, 67 ff. — *Irregular compounds*: 39, 59; 91, 6, 29; 99, 46. — *Irregular construction of sentences*: 41, 103; 49, 58; 72, 128, 249; 92, 17, 23-26; 96, 19-20; 99, 6 ff., 42 ff.; 100, 51 f. — *Influence of the metre* 74, 199; 75, 72. — *Influence of Sinhalese* 70, 85; 90, 101; 91, 36; 95, 8; 96, 17; 98, 1. —

5) **Literary references**. *Indian epic literature* 64, 42 ff.; 66, 143; cf. II, s. vv. *Dvayodhana*, *Dussanta*, *Rāma*, *Agurveda* 73, 42; *anti literature* 48, 80, 96; 55, 7; 64, 3; 66, 130 ff. (142); 70, 56; 73, 59; *yuddhagāya* 70, 56; the *rasa theory* 66, 56; 72, 94, 265; 73, 117; 75, 89. — *Canonical Pali literature*: Quotation of a *Buddha-word* 73, 143; 99, 180 f. — *Dhāmanassimgiti, -sangaha* 3, 17; 5, 270. — *Tipiṭaka and Aṅgikāthā*: 5, 84, 275; 27, 44; 33, 100; 37, 223; 41, 58; 60, 6; 84, 9, 29; 90, 37, 83; 91, 27. — 84000 sections: 5, 78 (cf. 5, 173 ff.); 33, 12. — *Navāṅgika sāsana* 89, 70. — *Vinaya, dhamma, suttanta*: 3, 30, 34; 5, 150 f.; 20, 56; 54, 34; 99, 90, 170, 173 f. — *Nikāyā* (the four) 33, 72; 99, 31, 34; 100, 117. — *Saccasamyutta* 14, 58. — *Abhidhamma*: 5, 150; 37, 221; 44, 109; 51, 79; 52, 49 f. — *Paritta texts*: 37, 226; 51, 80;

99. 26. — Single suttantas: 5. 68; 12. 26, 29, 31, 34, 39, 41, 51; 14. 22, 39, 63; 15. 4, 176, 178, 186, 195, 197, 199; 16. 3; 37. 191, 195; 51. 79; 99. 20, 29, 154; 100. 275. — Single jātakas: 5. 264; 12. 37; 35. 30; 64. 41; 83. 33 f.; 97. 39-45; 99. 97; 100. 74, 254. — Peta-, Vimānavatthu: 14. 58. — Dhammasaṅgapi: 37. 225; 52. 50; 69. 17. — Cūṭiyamāka 5. 146. Kathāvatthu 5. 278. — Younger Pāli literature: 37. 93, 225, 236; 39. 49, 56; 91. 27; 97. 57, 59; 100. 118. — Sinhalese literature 37. 228, 233; 90. 78, 80; 98. 24. — **6) External confirmation or correction of the chronicle** (cf. M. tr., p. XV ff.). a) Sinhalese books. Sīrimegharaya to Mahānāga: 37. 92, 105, 178, 208, 247; 38. 1, 8, 10, 45, 50, 112; 39. 58; 41. 1-5, 6, 26, 27, 37, 53, 63, 91, 102. — Aggabodhi I. to Dāṭhapatissa II: 42. 13, 15, 39, 40, 67, 68; 44. 1, 22, 64, 65, 82, 117, 144, 153; 45. 16, 35; 80. — Aggabodhi IV. to Aggabodhi IX: 46. 39, 44, 46; 47. 1, 66; 48. 19, 25, 38, 67, 74; 49. 37, 39, 42, 64, 82, 92. — Sena I. to Loka: 50. 1, 85; 51. 1, 26, 89, 134; 52. 36, 81; 53. 1, 4, 12, 27, 38, 51; 54. 1, 56, 72; 55. 33; 56. 6, 9, 12, 14, 16; 57. 1. — Vijayabāhu I. to Parakkamabāhu I: 60. 91; 62. 1; 63. 18, 19; 79. 86. — Vijayabāhu II. to Maṅgha: 80. 14, 15, 26, 29, 30, 32, 33, 34, 42, 44, 45, 48, 51, 53, 79. — Vijayabāhu III. to Vijayabāhu IV.: 81. 19, 44, 54, 56, 58, 79; 82. 7; 83. 30-1, 37, 42; 84. 9, 24; 85. 1-4, 35, 59, 118; 86. 49-50; 87. 9; 88. 35; 89. 71; 90. 1. — Bhuvanekabāhu I. to Rājasiha II: 90. 4, 59, 63, 64, 105-6, 108; 91. 3, 32; 92. 1; 93. 16; 94. 2-3, 22; 95. 25; 96. 40. — b) Ceylon inscriptions: 37. 53; 39. 11. — 42. 34; 44. 98. — 46. 20, 29; 48. 24. — 50. 9, 45, 68, 70; 51. 12, 26, 74, 88, 90, 105, 134; 52. 1, 11, 13, 17, 33, 45, 58; 53. 4, 13; 54. 1, 7, 35, 48. — 58. 1, 56, 59; 59. 49; 60. 5, 16, 21, 36, 66, 91; 63. 19; 72. 960; 73. 20, 87; 76. 68; 78. 5, 6 ff. — 80. 1, 18, 19, 20, 23, 24, 25, 27, 28, 32, 33, 34, 50. — 87. 16; 90. 108; 91. 1, 3, 16, 24; 92. 1. — c) South Indian inscriptions: Kassapa V: 52. 98. Dappula IV: 53. 9. Udaya IV: 53. 44. Mahinda V: 55. 22. Parakkamabāhu I.: 76. 80; 77. 103. Parakkamabāhu II.:

83. 52. Bhuvanekabāhu I.: 90. 17. Bhuvanekabāhu V. 91. 13. —
 4) Chinese Annals: Śrimeghavarṇana &c.: 37. 54, 175. Kas-
 sapa I.; 39. 27. Aggabodhi VI: 48. 42. (Vijayabāhu VI.):
 91. 14.

V. The World

A. Cosmology. 1. Three worlds, hell and heaven: 4. 38;
 34. 14; 37. 178; 44. 117; 60. 91; 72. 306; 90. 40; 92. 30;
 94. 21. — The moon and the tides 81. 44. — Regions of the
 heavens: 28. 13, 16, 18, 20, 36. 39; 51. 86; 63. 51; 72. 300,
 329; 74. 150; 95. 15; 96. 25. — 2. The earth: The dīpas
 73. 8. — Meru (Sineru) 31. 53; 37. 79; 42. 2; 54. 43; 78. 24.
 — Cakkavāḷa mountains 88. 116. — Udayācala 72. 326. —
 Uttara Kuru 1. 18; 30. 58; 51. 50. — 3. Destruction of the
 world 70. 253; 72. 93, 313; 75. 26; 83. 47. — — **B) Geo-
 graphy and Ethnography.** 1. India. a) Geographical
 Names:

Anotatta-lake 1. 18. Aparantaka 12. 34.

Ayojjhā 56. 13. Avanti 4. 17.

Ujjeni 5. 39; 13. 8, 10 (Dakkhiṇagiri-v. 13. 5; 29. 35).

Uttaramadburā 88. 121; 92. 25. Uruvelā 1. 12, 16 f., 43.

Kaṇṇepura 88. 121. Kandureṭṭhi 47. 7.

Kapilavatthu 2. 15; 89. 4. Kasmīra 12. 9; 29. 37.

Kāṣipura see Bāṇuasi.

Kusāvatī 2. 6. Kusinārā 3. 2.

Kusumapura see Pāṭaliputta.

Kelāsa 32. 53; 68. 1; 73. 62 &c.; 89. 45 (Kelāsa-v. 29. 43).

Kosambi 4. 17 (Ghositarāma 29. 34).

Guṇḍā 5. 253; 8. 23; 11. 30 &c.

Gandhāra 12. 9. Girībajja 5. 114. Gora 94. 1-2.

Caṇḍapuri 88. 121. Jetuttara 89. 2.

Tamburaṭṭha 84. 11. Tāmalitti 11. 23 N., 38; 19. 6.

Tirigaveli 76. 143, 288. Neṭṭāra 76. 189.

Payūga 31. 6. Palāṇkoṭṭa 77. 58. Pallavabhoga 29. 38.

Pāṭaliputta (Kusumapura, Papphapura) 4. 31; 5. 39, 120;

11. 24; 17. 10; 18. 8, 68; 92. 23 (Asokārāma 5. 80,
 163, 174; 29. 36).

Pāvā 4. 17.

Pupphapura see Pāṭaliputta.

Bārāṇasī (Kāśīpura) 1. 14; 41. 37; 88. 121 (Isipatana-v. 29. 31).

Bodhimāyāda 29. 41; 37. 215; 39. 47.

Madda 8. 7.

Madhurā (dakkhiṇā M.) 7. 49, 51; 50. 12 N.; 76. 76; 96. 40;

97. 2, 24; 98. 4 (cf. also Uttaramadhurā).

Malaya 76. 195. Mahārāṭṭha 12. 37.

Mahisamāyājāla 12. 29.

Mithilā 2. 6; 83. 34; 88. 121.

Nāgagaha 2. 6; 29. 30; 89. 3 (Veluvana-v. 15. 17).

Rāmissara 76. 97. Lāṭṭarāṭṭha 6. 5, 36; 7. 3.

Vaṅga 6. 1. Vanaṇṇa 12. 31; 29. 42.

Vijjhāvatī 19. 6; 29. 40.

Viśālā, Vesālā 4. 9, 22; 88. 121; 99. 98 (Mahāvana-v. 4. 12; 29. 34).

Sarpakassa 89. 4. Śāketa 89. 3. Sāgala 89. 2.

Sāvattī 88. 121 (Jetavana-v. 1. 44; 29. 32).

Sivaliputtāru 77. 41.

Sihapura 6. 35; 59. 46.

Sunsumāragiri 89. 3. Soreyya 4. 21. Himavant 12. 41.

b) Names of tribes or castes.

Āriyā 61. 36; 63. 15. Āriyā 90. 16 ff.

Kaṇṇāṇṇā 55. 12. Kallara 76. 246.

Kālīgā 6. 1; 37. 92; 42. 44 &c.

Kāśī 5. 114. Keraḷā 53. 9. Koliyā 31. 18.

Colā 21. 13; 36. 112; 52. 70 &c.

Daṇḍilā 1. 44; 21. 10 &c.; 38. 11 f. &c.

Paṇḍu 7. 50, 69; 50. 12; 76. 76 &c.

Muravara 76. 130, 246, 259. Yadhava 76. 163.

Yona, Yavana 10. 90; 12. 34, 39; 76. 264.

Licchavi 99. 98. Vaṅga 6. 1. Vajji 4. 9 ff.

Vallabhā 47. 15, 18, 24; 54. 12 ff.

Sakyā 2. 15 ff.; 8. 18.

2. Farther India

a) Geographical names, names of tribes

Ayojibā 98, 91; 100, 60. Arimaddana 76, 38.

Kamboja 76, 21. Kākadīpa 76, 57.

Kusumitīlha 76, 59.

Javakā 83, 36 ff.; 88, 63; 99, 118.

Pegu 98, 89. Malaya 76, 22.

Rakkhaṅga 94, 15; 97, 10; 98, 89; 99, 25.

Hāmahā 58, 8; 60, 5; 76, 10-69.

Sānindavisaya 92, 78; 100, 63 &c.

3. Ceylon

a) Physical character, climate &c.

The ocean: 22, 49, 85; 41, 79; 57, 5; 71, 18; 72, 255; 85, 44 f.; 88, 20. — Wilderness, swamps, forests, rocks: 33, 48; 39, 2; 61, 46; 66, 51; 68, 10; 70, 2 ff., 84; 81, 3, 5, 33; 86, 9; 87, 26; 95, 9. — Irregular rain: 21, 27; 70, 208. — Drought and famine: 32, 29; 36, 20, 74; 37, 189; 87, 1 ff.; 90, 43. — Wind, thunderstorms: 57, 56; 72, 3; 74, 228 ff.; 87, 7 ff. — Earthquake (as a miracle): 5, 259 ff.; 15, 26, 191; 17, 55; 18, 50; 19, 47; 29, 62; 31, 110.

b) Products of the island (or imported)

1. Minerals:

Jewels (maṇi, three kinds 11, 22) 28, 18, 40; 61, 6, 56; 62, 32; 64, 32; 68, 12; 72, 326; 97, 53; 98, 33, 95; 99, 165; 100, 16 ff.; and precious stones (ratana, seven or nine kinds 27, 37; 91, 18; 97, 7) 11, 8 ff., 16; 22, 60; 31, 60; 34, 73; 66, 44; 69, 33; 89, 41; 90, 71; 97, 17. — Beryl (veluriya) 11, 16; diamond (vaṣiṇa) 100, 15; ruby (kuruvinda, rattamaṇi, lohitaṅka) 28, 19; 100, 18; 11, 16; sapphire (indanila, uppala, nilamaṇi) 11, 16; 28, 19; 100, 17; topaz (puppharūga) 100, 17. — Pearls (eight kinds 11, 14) 11, 16, 22; 28, 36; 34, 47 f.; 61, 6, 56; 62, 32; 64, 32; 70, 92; 89, 19; 97, 47; 98, 33, 95;

100. 19. — Gold 11. 31; 22. 64; 27. 43; 28. 14; 29. 57; 33. 11; 61. 57; 66. 139; 68. 12; 89. 19 ff.; 91. 18; 97. 17, 53; 98. 44, 75, 94; 99. 54, 165; 100. 30, 72, 75, 241. — Silver 27. 27, 33; 28. 20, 33; 29. 57; 89. 20 ff.; 90. 71; 97. 18; 98. 44, 75; 99. 55, 165. — Copper (loha, tambaloha) 23. 87; 27. 42; 28. 16; 31. 85; 36. 31. — Iron (aya) 23. 87; 98. 69. — Rock-crystal (phaṭika) 27. 36; 29. 9. — Medavanapāsāṇa 1. 39; 30. 57, 59; 31. 121. — Yellow orpiment (haritālā) 34. 52. — Cinnabar (kuruvinda?) 29. 8. — kaṅkuṭṭha, kind of earth 32. 6. — Red arsenic (manosila) 15. 80, 114, 149; 29. 12; 34. 52. — Vermilion (hingoli) 27. 18. — Corals (pavāḥa) 27. 26, 31; 28. 37 f. &c. — Shells (śaṅkhā) 71. 25; s. dakṣhiṇāvajja 11. 22, 30; 100. 154.

2. Trees and shrubs; fruits, flowers

Akṣha (*terminalia bellerica*) 32. 29. āmba (*mangifera indica*) 14. 17 ff.; 15. 38; 22. 4 f.; 79. 3, 85; 100. 4, 218. āśama (*terminalia alata tomentosa*) 23. 87. āśoka (*jonesia asoka*) 79. 98. ādāri-creeper 17. 31. āmalaka (*emblica officinalis*) 5. 26; 11. 31; 28. 36; 54. 23. udumbara (*figus glomerata*) 15. 112; 23. 87. kap(y)ikūra (*pterospermum acerifolium*) 73. 123; 100. 1. kadali (*casua sapientum*) M. ed. p. 331, v. 5; 70. 211; 72. 318; 73. 123; 75. 61; 85. 36, 114; 98. 41; 100. 90. kadamba (*nauclea cadamba*) 73. 98. kadambapupphā 17. 31; 19. 73, 75; 25. 48; 33. 85; 35. 104, 116. kapittha (*feronia elephantum*) 29. 11. kaṇṇuka (*areca palm*) 98. 41. kuṭaja (*wrightia anti-dysenterica*) 73. 99. ketaka (*pandanus odoratissimus*) 33. 50; 73. 98; 100. 1. khajjūra (*phoenix silvestris*) 100. 6. khura-patta (*tectona grandis*) 32. 5. champaka (*michelia champaca*) 73. 98; 98. 59; 100. 1, 197. jambū (*eugenia jambu*) 36. 71 ff.; 73. 98; 100. 4. tamāla (*xanthochymus pictorius*) 73. 99. tāla (*palmyra palm*) 10. 59; 23. 46, 59; 73. 123; 79. 3. timbarū-saka (the tinduka tree) 100. 5. tilaka(?) 73. 98. dāṣṭina (pomegranate) 100. 5. nāga (iron-wood tree) 73. 98, 123; 85. 34; 89. 43; 100. 1, 293. nāraṅga (orange) 100. 5. nālī-kera (*cocopalms*) 23. 59; 61. 65; 73. 99; 74. 204; 79. 3; 80.

5, 17, 45; 97. 34; 98. 41; 100. 5, 218 (the shell 57. 8). *nigrodha* (*ficus indica*) 10. 35 f., 89; 15. 147. *nīpa* (*nauclea cadamba*) 73. 98. *punast* (*artocarpus integrifolia*) 28. 23; 79. 3; 85. 36; 86. 50; 100. 4, 218. *picula* (*tamarix indica*) 15. 28. *punnāga* (*crotteria tinctoria*) 73. 98, 123; 89. 45; 100. 1, 293. *pūga* (*areca palm*) 36. 47; 79. 3; 100. 3, 293. *phārsa* (?) 100. 4. *bodhirukkha* (*ficus religiosa*) see VIII, C, 3. *madhu*, *-ūka* (*bassia latifolia*) 34. 56; 44. 18; 83. 18. *mupdaka* (?) 100. 5. *muddikā* (grape) 100. 6. *rambhā* (*musa sapientum*) 100. 4. *rājāyātana* (*buchanania latifolia*) 1. 52, 54, 67 f. *labuja* (*artocarpus incisa*) 90. 37; 94. 11 f. *vakula* (*minuosops elengi*) 73. 99. *vaṭa* (*ficus indica*) 6. 16. *sattapappa* (*alstonia scholaris*) 39. 47. *sannira* (king coconut tree) 74. 204; 100. 5, 26. *sāla* (*shorea robusta*) 3. 2; 5. 161; 73. 98. *sirisa* (*acacia sirissa*) 15. 73. *haritaka* (*terminalia chebula*) 5. 26; 11. 31. *hīntāla* (kind of palm tree) 73. 123. *Bamboo* (*veḷa*) 11. 10; 70. 213. *sugar-cane*, *sagar*, *molasses* 34. 62; 35. 92; 61. 53; 89. 53; 100. 196. *sandal-wood* 11. 28; 58. 9; 61. 57; 100. 2, 196. *aloe* (*agaru*) 61. 57; 100. 2. *betel* (*tambula*) 35. 62; 54. 22, 46; 100. 3, 196. *garlic* (*lasuna*) 54. 22 f. *pepper* (*marica*, *pipphali*) 25. 114; 54. 23. *ginger* (*siṅgivera*) 28. 21; 54. 23. *saffron* (*piyaṅgu*) 24. 25. *camphor* (*kuppūra*) 58. 9; 61. 57; 69. 24; 89. 43; 100. 3, 196. *liquorice* (*yaṭṭhimadhuka*) 32. 46. — *Bean* (*mūsa*) 23. 51. *sesam* (*tila*) 23. 12; 34. 56. — *Cotton* 57. 50; 72. 3; 80. 16. — *Lāja* 98. 46; 100. 31. *pūṭali* (*bignonia suaveolens*) 73. 98. *guṇṭhipuppha* 39. 59. *jasmīn* 15. 27; 29. 61; 30. 27; 73. 99; 98. 8; 100. 1. *lotus* 19. 18; 22. 45, 53; 34. 47, 53 f.; 73. 102; 88. 113; 100. 1, 30 (the stalk: *majālī* 7. 12).

3. Animals

Elephant, wild or domesticated 7. 56; 18. 28; 23. 8, 47, 49; 29. 1; 37. 112; 41. 23, 47 ff.; 47. 9; 51. 37, 43, 112 f.; 61. 6; 70. 219, 229, 265; 72. 3, 88, 155, 311, 325; 76. 48, 70; 89. 22; 96. 26; 99. 16 and pussim. *young* els. 62. 22, 25. *rutting* els. 66. 150; 72. 321; 74. 63; 83. 13. *solitary* els. 72. 218; 76. 244. *catching* wild els. 72. 105. *el-trainer* and *driver*

22. 63; 88. 34. batthisala 14. 62; 15. 1. alhaka 19. 73; 35. 24. sivigaha "canopy on an el.'s back" 99. 55, 59. el-trade 76. 17-34. white els 62. 21. six-tusked race 22. 61. maṅgalabhatthi see below V. B. 3. (danta "ivory" 27. 32, 35; 37. 100 ff.) — Horse 7. 56; 70. 127, 265; 72. 315; 74. 221; 76. 112; 85. 113; 88. 34, 74; 92. 29; 99. 46 &c. h. s. among the Damiḥas 76. 100. horse dealing (sāndhu-h.) 21. 10; 23. 71; 31. 38. — Buffalo, wild or domesticated 23. 79; 67. 2; 86. 24; 90. 76; 92. 29 (māhisa camma 25. 36). lion, not indigenous 6. 5; 27. 30; 60. 40; 66. 90, 104; 67. 6, 48; 70. 24, 141, 219; 72. 3, 68, 88, 108, 152, 155, 221; 83. 13; 96. 5 (migaraṅga 96. 20). tiger, not indigenous 27. 30. panther 75. 39. bear 5. 31; 67. 41. boar 10. 4; 23. 66; 54. 32; 67. 44; 83. 18. elk (gokappa) 14. 3; 23. 66; 70. 36. deer or antelope (miga, hariga) 5. 154 ff.; 23. 66; 54. 32; 66. 90; 67. 48; 72. 68; 75. 39. monkey 54. 32; 68. 20; 87. 20. hare 29. 65. mouse 5. 30. cow 90. 76; 92. 29. bullock (usabha) 60. 74. dog 28. 9, 41; 36. 44; 54. 32; 60. 74 (bitch: sopp 7. 9). yak-cow, not indigenous (camari) 98. 14; 100. 31. — Vulture 75. 114. crane 98. 43. peacock 57. 7; 73. 101; 74. 229. crow 60. 74; 75. 114. parrot 5. 29. cuckoo 73. 101. goose 39. 65; 35. 97; 73. 134. kalanda 37. 204. karavika 5. 32. (birds in cages 70. 292; 72. 209). — Glow-worm 75. 29; 83. 25; 86. 22. bee 5. 31; 34. 52; 73. 97. moth (palaṅga) 75. 41. — Crocodile 70. 4. iguana 28. 9 f. tortoise 75. 58. — Fish 75. 58; 88. 113. — Snakes (nāga) 5. 164; 37. 112 ff. (sappa) 21. 19. (deḍḍubha) 37. 132. (ghoravisa) 96. 8.

c) Geographical and ethnographical names

1. Names of the Island

Sihala, Laṅkā passim. — Prehistoric names 15. 59, 93, 127. — Tambapanni 7. 41; 80. 25; 85. 106; 89. 57. — Tisihala 81. 46; 82. 1; 87. 25, 71; 88. 65.

2. Names of provinces (raṭṭha) and districts (maṇḍala)
(18 provinces: 86, 11)

Apṭhasahassaka 61. 21; 75. 151	Paṭṭhāraṭṭha 55. 22 N.; 81. 15 N.; 88. 87
Ambarava 66. 85; 69. 9	Paṭi 83. 16; 88. 61
Ājiska 60. 14; 70. 106	Pillavittṭhi 69. 8
Uttararaṭṭha 70. 92	Purattimadesa 41. 33
Uvararṭṭha (see Hūva) 95. 22	Buddhagāmaraṭṭha 69. 9
Brāhula 74. 91	Bodhigāmavarararṭṭha 69. 9
Kantakapeṭaka 69. 9	Majjhimanavagga 70. 20
Kalyāṇi 1. 61, 74; 22. 12 ff.; 61. 35	Malaya 7. 68; 24. 7; 25. 5; 41. 10 &c.
Kālagiribhaṇḍa 72. 62	Mahākhetta 72. 63; 75. 50
Kirinda 74. 97	Mahāṭṭha 66. 71
Kurundi 83. 16; 88. 61	Mahāthala 48. 3
Giribā 69. 9	Mahāraṭṭha 72. 141, 163, 190
Girimāṇḍala 51. 111	Mhyyāraṭṭha 81. 15; 87. 24
Guttasālā 61. 12; 74. 151	Merukandara 41. 19; 70. 282
Janapada 44. 56; 66. 110	Moravāpi 69. 8
Tabbā 69. 9	Ratanākaraṭṭha 42. 16; 69. 31
Dakkhiṇadesa 38. 24; 41. 35; 42. 8 &c.	Rattakaraṭṭha 68. 23
Dighavāpi 74. 69, 180; 75. 1; 96. 25	Rājaraṭṭha 52. 1; 55. 22; 61. 30
Dighāli 72. 63; 75. 60	Robhaṇa 22. 6, 8; 35. 27 f.; 38. 12 &c.
Dumbara 70. 8	Laṅkāgiri 70. 88
Dvādasasahassaka 61. 22; 75. 156 N.	Lokagalla 74. 79
Dhanumaṇḍala 74. 166	Sapara(gamu) 78. 8; 94. 12
Narayojanaraṭṭha 72. 61; 75. 72	Sūrambarava 70. 87
Nāgadipa 1. 47; 20. 25; 42. 62	Hūvaraṭṭha (see Ūva) 60. 66
Nilagallaka 70. 14	
Pañcayojanaraṭṭha 57. 71; 72. 57; 75. 21; 85. 81	
Pañcātaraṭṭha 95. 9	
Pañcuddharaṭṭha 94. 4; 95. 21 f.; 96. 17	

3. Towns and villages

Āṅgamu 70. 130
Anurādhapura 10. 76, 106 and passim
Antuvittṭhi 60. 68; 61. 46
Ambaggūma 86. 23

Ambavana 66. 85
 Āligāma 70. 112
 Uddhanadvāra 61. 16
 Upatissaggāma 7. 44
 Ullapanaggāma 86. 23
 Kadaligāma 60. 66
 Kadalinivāta 44. 6; 48. 50
 Kammāragāma 75. 47
 Kalahanagara 10. 42
 Kalyāṇī 72. 151
 Kājaragāma 19. 54; 45. 45
 Kālagollaka 90. 9
 Kālagiribhaṇḍa 72. 62
 Kālatittha 56. 12; 86. 44
 Kuṇḍasālā 97. 44
 Kumbhagāma 75. 149
 Koṭṭa see Jayarajjhanakoṭṭa
 Koṭṭhasāra 61. 43; 74. 44
 Konduruva 72. 231
 Kolamba(tittha) 94. 1; 95. 4, 15
 Kolambahālaka 25. 89; 33. 42
 Kīrāgāma 74. 163; 79. 71
 Gaṅgāsīripura 86. 18; 88. 48
 Gimbatittha 75. 22
 Giltmalaya 60. 65
 Guttasālā 24. 17; 51. 109
 Jayarajjhanakoṭṭa 91. 7
 Jambukola (= Dambul) 70. 72;
 72. 136
 Jambukola (harbour) 11. 23;
 18. 7
 Jambuddhoṇi 81. 29; 85. 4
 Tambagāma 75. 90
 Talatthala 70. 107
 Titthagāma 90. 68
 Tilagulla 58. 43
 Demaṭṭavala 74. 139

Devanagara 56. 6; 60. 59;
 75. 47
 Doṇivagga 75. 69
 Dvāramapḍala 10. 1; 23. 23
 Dhanapiṭṭhi 46. 41
 Dhanuvillika 70. 15
 Nandigāma 25. 14; 38. 14
 Nālandā 70. 167
 Nilavālatittha 75. 48
 Parakkamapura 72. 151; 74. 15
 Puṅkhagāma 61. 26
 Puṭatthinagara 44. 122; 46. 34
 and passim (three suburbs
 of P. 73. 151 ff.; 78. 79 ff.).
 Perādhoṇi 91. 2
 Bakagalla 75. 124
 Badalatthala, -It 58. 43; 66. 43 N.
 Buddhagāma 58. 43; 66. 19.
 Bubbola 70. 99
 Bodhigūmavara 66. 78
 Bhitatittha 85. 81; 86. 40
 Maṅgalabegāma 67. 52
 Majjhimagāma 74. 83
 Maṇḍagalla 58. 43
 Maṇḍagāma 45. 47
 Maṇḍora 61. 39
 Mallavājāna 70. 61
 Mahāgalla 44. 3
 Mahāgāma 22. 8; 45. 42
 Mahūtitttha 7. 58; 48. 81; 51. 28
 Mahānāgukola 58. 39; 60. 90
 Mahāvālukagāma 75. 36, 45
 Mālavaratthali 75. 68, 157
 Muttūkara 70. 60
 Rakkhapūsūpa 57. 67
 Ratanaḡāma 42. 18
 Rānucehuvalika 70. 11, 14 N.

Labajagāma 94. 12
 Lābugāma 10. 72
 Vattalagāma 81. 58
 Vālikūkhetta 70. 62
 Vikkamapura 72. 147
 Vijitapura 7. 45; 25. 19 ff.
 Sampha(nātha)ithali 63. 43;
 64. 22
 Saraggāma 66. 71
 Sarogāma 71. 18
 Sahodara 74. 78, 79 N.
 Sākhāpatta 74. 166
 Sāligiri 90. 97
 Sāputagāma 74. 141, 166 N.
 Sīriyula 66. 20
 Sīriyaññhana (near Jambuddhi)
 85. 1
 Sīriyaññhana = Kandy 92. 7;
 94. 6, 16
 Sītāvaka 93. 2 N., 5
 Sīmātālathali 75. 101
 Sihagiri 39. 2 ff.
 Surayannulaya 75. 62
 Sūkharāḷibheripāsāṇa 75. 98
 Sēṅkhaññaselasīriyaññhuma 92. 7
 Hatthigiripura, -selapura 85.
 62; 99. 77
 Hīntāḷavanagāma 74. 162; 75. 7
 Hayaḷagāma 75. 149

4. Mountains

(p. = pabbata, g. = giri)

Ariṭṭha-p. 10. 61; 44. 86
 Kāsa-p. 10. 27; 25. 50
 Gopāla-rock 78. 65
 Govindamala (-sela) 81. 5

Cetiya-p. 16. 1; 17. 24; 38. 75 &c.
 Dola-p. 10. 41 (cf. M. tr., p. 289)
 Dohala-p. 44. 56; 100. 291
 Dhūmarakkha-p. 10. 46; 37.
 213 (cf. C. tr. I, p. 359, 3)
 Puñjali-p. 32. 14
 Paluṭṭha-p. 58. 18
 Pācinatissa-p. 41. 14; 44. 14
 Billasela 81. 33
 Mārapabbata 48. 129
 Missaka-p. 13. 14, 20; 17. 23
 Laṅkā-p. 66. 80
 Vāta-g. 58. 31; 88. 43
 Samantakūṭa, Sumanak. 1. 43,
 77; 7. 67; 60. 64; 92. 17;
 97. 16 ff.
 Sīrīdevinaga 66. 19
 Sīlakūṭa (Missaka) 13. 20
 Subhakūṭa (Missaka) 15. 191
 Subha-p., Sundara-p. 81. 3;
 88. 26, 61 ff.
 Sumanakūṭa see Samantakūṭa
 Sūyga-g. 34. 4.

5. Rivers, fords

(g. = gaṅgā, n. = nadi)

Kaccakatiṭṭha 10. 58; 23. 17;
 37. 213 N.
 Kacca-n. 53. 20
 Kadamba-n. 7. 43; 15. 16; 41. 61
 Karinda-n. 32. 14
 Kāla-n. 86. 40, 44
 Kālavāpī-n. 70. 126 f.
 Kumhīlavāna-n. 68. 32
 Gaṅgā see Mahāvāḷuka-g.
 Gambhīra-n. 7. 44; 28. 7

Gaṇa-n. 75. 34
 Gaṇa-g. 48. 132
 Gokappa see Mahāvāluka-g.
 Goṇa-n. 35. 13, 113
 Jajjara-n. 68. 16; 79. 67
 Mahā-n. 51. 121
 Mahārukkaṭṭhittha 72. 11
 Mahāvāluka-g. (Gaṇḍā) 10. 44,
 47; 21. 7; 38. 12; 71. 17 &c.
 (Gokappa 41. 79; 71. 18)
 Mahāgāmatittha 72. 50
 Yakkhasūkaratittha 72. 21
 Yasa-n. 75. 156
 Saṅkhavaddhamānaka-n. 68. 32
 Sahassatittha 87. 71
 Indian river-names conferred
 on Ceylonese canals 79. 57 N.

6. Tanks (v. = vāpi)

Abhaya-v. 10. 84
 Ambāla-v. 68. 49 N.
 Karavittṭhaviḷatta-v. 68. 49 N.
 Kāla-v. 38. 42 &c.
 Kira-v. 68. 49 N.
 Gaṇḍatāṭṭaka 70. 286
 Giritaṭṭaka 70. 312; 72. 149
 Giribā-v. 68. 49 N.
 Gīriyā-v. 68. 49 N.
 Tintigigāmaka-v. 68. 49 N.
 Tilagullaka-v. 68. 49 N.
 Tissa-r. 20. 20 &c.; 70. 149
 Digha-v. 1. 78; 74. 89 &c.
 Dūratissa-v. 33. 9; 49. 8; 79. 32
 Nāgasouḍi 42. 28 (14. 36; 16. 6)
 Paṇḍa-v. 60. 48; 68. 39
 Paṇḍi-v. 79. 34

Parakkama-sānudda, -sāgara
 68. 40; 79. 26, 28, 40
 Buddhagāmanakaniḷhara 68.
 49 N.
 Maṇihira-v. 37. 47; 42. 34
 Maṇḍika-v. 68. 49 N.
 Mahākīrāla-v. 68. 49 N.
 Mahāgalla-v. 44. 3
 Mahindataṭṭa-v. 42. 29; 79. 28
 Mora-v. 69. 8; 72. 177
 Rattamālakappa-v. 37. 48
 Vāsā-v. 68. 49 N.
 Suvappatissa-v. 79. 32
 Sūkaraggāma-v. 68. 49 N.

Monasteries and Monastic buildings

(vih. = vihāra, pariv. = pariv-
 veṇa, c. = cetiya; A. = Anu-
 sādhapura, P. = Paṭatthina-
 gara, M. = Mahāgāma)

Abhayagiri-vih. in A. (different
 names) 33. 81 ff.; 35. 120;
 37. 59; 52. 13; 78. 21. —
 37. 97, 123; 44. 96; 53. 33.
 — 41. 95; 50. 79. — 42.
 28, 63; 50. 26. — 48. 135
 Ambatthala-c. 13. 20; 37. 69
 Ākāsa-c. 22. 26
 Ājāhama-pariv. 78. 48
 Āloka-lena 98. 65
 Issarasamāṇa-vih. 19. 91; 20. 14;
 39. 10
 Uttarārāma in P. 78. 73
 Udumbaragiri-vih. 78. 5 N.
 Kuntaka-c. 16. 12

- Kappūra-pariv. in A. 45. 29; 46. 21
 Kalyāṇi-c. and -vih. 1875; 81. 59
 Kassapagiri-vih. 44. 98
 Kālarāpi-vih. 38. 50 N.
 Kuṣatissa-vih. 51. 71
 Gaṇḍālādopi-vih. 91. 30
 Gaṇṭhākara-pariv. 37. 243; 52. 57
 Catuvihārā in A. 53. 37; 54. 5
 Candagiri-vih. in M. 60. 61
 Cittalapabbata-vih. 22. 23; 24. 9; 45. 59
 Cūlagalla-vih. 35. 13; 42. 49
 Cetiyapabbata-vih. 19. 62; 20. 17
 Cetiyas of Mahinda and Saṃghamitta in A. 20. 11, 54; 38. 58
 Jambukola-vih. 20. 25; 60. 69
 Jambukolalena 60. 69; 80. 23
 Jetavana-vih. in A. (37. 59 N.) 37. 35; (65): 41. 40; 78. 21 &c. — in P. 78. 32 ff.
 Jotivana-vih. 37. 65; 52. 59 — Jetavana in A.
 Tissa(mahā)-vih. in M. 20. 25; 22. 23; 45. 59
 Tissārāma 52. 24
 Thūpārāma in A. 1. 82; 17. 30 &c.; 37. 267 &c. — in P. or M. 60. 56
 Dakkhīṇa-vih. in A. 33. 88; 42. 14; 44. 140
 Dakkhīṇagiri-vih. 33. 7; 38. 50 N.; 42. 27; 52. 60
 Dappulapabbata-vih. 49. 1 N.; 50; 59, 80
 Dāthaggabodhi-pariv. in M. 45. 42
 Dāthādāttaghara in A. 37. 95. — in P. 73. 128 ff.; 74. 198; 78. 11; 87. 69; 89. 40; 90. 55. — in Jambuddhi 81. 34; 82. 9; 85. 91; 88. 12 ff. — in Subhagiri 90. 46 N. — in Hatthigiripura 90. 66 f. — in Kotte 91. 17. — in Kandy 94. 14; 97. 5, 37; 98. 35; 99. 141
 Dighasanda-pariv. 15. 212; 38. 16
 Devanagara-vih. 60. 63 N.
 Nāga-vih. 22. 9; 45. 58
 Nipannapaṭimāgūhā, Nisanna-paṭimālena in P. 78. 75
 Paechimārāma in P. 78. 70
 Paṭhama-c. in A. 14. 45; 19. 61; 38. 9
 Paylavāpi-vih. 60. 64 N.
 Pappata-vih. 91. 21
 Puppāsāma 100. 86, 111.
 Badḍhasīmāpāsāda, opasāthā-house in P. 78. 55 ff.
 Billasela-vih. 85. 59
 Bhaṇḍika-pariv. 52. 58
 Bhatatittha-vih. 85. 81; 86. 16
 Maccatittha-vih. 48. 24
 Maṇikīra-vih. 37. 40
 Maṇḍalagiri-vih. 45. 29; 60. 63 N.; 71. 3
 Madhuttala-vih. 60. 63 N.

Mayūra-pariv. (Mora-) in A. 37. 172; 38. 52

Maricavatṭi-vih. in A. 26. 8 ff.; 44. 149 &c.

Mahāthūpa in A. (different names) 15. 51; 28. 3 ff.; 42. 32; 76. 108 &c. — 20. 19; 33. 21. — 15. 167; 61. 82. — 80. 68

Mahāpariv. in A. 42. 26; 48. 65

Mahāpālī in A. 20. 23; 37. 181. — in M. 45. 42

Mahā-vih. in A. 15. 8 ff., 214; 37. 4 ff., 54 &c.

Mahiyāngaya-c. and -vih. 1. 24, 42; 25. 7; 36. 34, 58; 51. 74; 92. 16 &c.

Māṇabhiya 46. 19

Yatthulāya-vih. in M. 22. 7

Rajatalena-vih. 28. 20 N., 35. 4; 99. 41; 100. 237 ff.

Ratanapāsāda in A. 36. 7; 48. 135 &c.

Ratanavalt-c. in P. 80. 20 (78. 51 N.). — in Khiragāma 79. 71

Rohana-vih. 45. 54

Laṅkātilaka in P. 78. 53 f. — near Kandy 91. 30

Lohapāsāda in A. 27. 20 ff.; 37. 59 &c.

Vijjādhara-cave in P. 78. 66, 74

Vehivana-vih. 42. 43; 44. 29

Vessagiri-vih. near A. 20. 15, 20; 39. 11 N.

Sitū-c. in A. 1. 82

Silāsobbhakaṇḍaka-c. in A. 33. 87

Sotthiyūkara-vih. in A. 37. 82, 84

Haṭṭhavanagalla-vih. 85. 73 ff.; 86. 12, 37

Names of tribes &c.

Palinda 7. 68

Vaṇṇī 81. 11; 83. 10 &c.

Sihala passim

Clan names in C. 19. 2 N.; 38. 13 N.

(Paruṅgī 95. 5; 98. 80)

(Olundā 96. 26; 98. 82; 99. 109)

VI. King and Kingdom

A. The king and the royal family

CE. C. tr. 1, introd. p. XV ff.

1. The king (*rāja*, *mahārāja*, *mahipati*, *narapati* &c. &c. *passim*). a. Sun- and Moon-dynasty 62. 5; 63. 11; 72. 121; 87. 29; 91. 16; 93. 2; 94. 1; 96. 41. *Mahāsammata* as ancestor 2. 1, 23; 47. 2; 99. 77. *Okhāka* 2. 11 f.; 45. 38; 80. 32. — b. Bodily marks of a king 22. 59; 48. 114; 57. 49; 59. 34 ff.; 62. 16 ff.; 87. 62. *cakkurattin* 100. 35. — c. *Abhiseka* (*molimaṅgala*) 7. 46 ff., 72; 9. 29; 10. 78; 36. 123; 56. 3 f.; 59. 2, 8; 67. 16; 72. 312 ff.; 87. 70; 89. 5 ff.; 90. 61; 94. 10. *abh.* performed twice 11. 7 and 40 f.; 71. 19 ff. and 72. 311 ff. — d. The king assumes a new name 36. 98; 44. 128; 45. 22; 58. 1; 94. 6. the *biruda* *Sirisampghabodhi* 44. 83; 46. 1; 54. 72; 59. 10.

2. The queen (*rājini* 24. 13 &c.). a. *maheśi* 7. 47; 8. 28; 10. 37, 78; 22. 7, 12, 22; 33. 96; 37. 211; 46. 27; 51. 6, 86; 55. 8, 16; 56. 15; 62. 19 ff.; 97. 2; 98. 1; 99. 123. two *maheśi* 33. 45-7; 59. 25, 30; 64. 24; (97. 24; 98. 4). — *devi* 22. 3; 33. 47; 34. 86; 35. 21; 36. 42, 50; 48. 113; 56. 10; 63. 4, 6; 64. 24. *aggamaheśi* 54. 10; 70. 33; 94. 9; 97. 2, 24; 98. 4. — b. Political marriages 7. 52 ff.; 51. 15 ff., 92 f.; 54. 9 f.; 59. 27 ff., 40 ff.; 63. 6 ff.; 87. 28; 97. 24; 98. 4.

3. The princes (*rājaputta* 5. 194; 7. 10 &c.) a. Education 64. 3. — b. *Ādipāda* 41. 31; 49. 3; 50. 8, 25, 40 f.; 51. 94, 126; 52. 4, 8, 42; 53. 1, 4, 13, 19, 28, 39; 54. 1, 11; 55. 11; 57. 4, 61; 59. 12; 60. 88; 61. 2 ff. *mahādipāda* 44. 136; 50. 10, 44; 51. 1; 58. 7; 67. 91. — c. *Yuvārāja* 42. 6; 44. 123, 137; 50. 6, 21, 31; 51. 13, 15, 18, 79 ff.; 52. 1 ff., 6, 37, 42; 53. 1, 4, 13, 19, 28, 39; 54. 1, 7, 38; 58. 1; 59. 7; 61. 3; 63. 42; 67. 26; 85. 59. — *aparāja* 5. 154; 6. 38; 9. 12, 14; 14. 56; 22. 2 ff.; 41. 99; 42. 6; 44. 84, 119, 124; 46. 24; 50. 58 f.; 51. 7, 12, 94; 53. 1, 4, 13, 39; 59. 11; 60. 40, 80, 86 f. two

uparājas 99. 85, 121. — d. Malayarāja, -rājara 41. 35; 42. 6; 44. 53; 46. 29; 52. 68; 53. 36; 69. 6; 70. 62, 155. Cf. C. tr. I, p. XV-XX, XXIV.

4. The princesses (rājadhītā, rājakanyā 3. 194; 7. 59 &c.) n. rājini as title 49. 3; 59. 58; 54. 11, 63; 59. 11; 60. 84; 62. 1.

5. The bhāgineyya 1. 45; 5. 169; 11. 20; 16. 9; 18. 2; 48. 90; 49. 71; 61. i N.; 62. 60; 83. 41; 87. 38, 41; 88. 5.

6. Right of succession 33. 1-4, 20; 49. 65, 84; 50. 41; 52. 37; 54. 1; 60. 87; 61. 4; 62. 59; 63. 22; 80. 27, 28; 90. 1, 4, 49, 59. Cf. C. tr. I, p. XX-XXIV.

B. Attributes of royalty; royal life

1. Residence (rājadhāni) 61. 25; 74. 1; 88. 103; 90. 35. palace (pāsāda, rājageha, -ghara, -maṇḍira) 9. 11; 10. 71; 12. 46; 35. 63; 66. 127; 68. 42; 70. 237, 312; 73. 70; 92. 9; 98. 68. rājadvāra 14. 60; 22. 15; 25. 105; 35. 33, 63. rāj-aṅgaṇa 5. 47; 72. 214; 99. 65. royal throne (pallaṅka, āsana, śhasana) 25. 98; 27. 32 ff.; 31. 76 f., 88; 35. 52, 54; 76. 166; 85. 114; 90. 13, 23; 100. 285. — 2. Royal insignia and ornaments (rajasādhana, -bhagḍāni, -bhūṣaṇa, -ābharapa) 11. 28; 35. 102; 39. 28; 41. 20; 46. 38; 48. 89; 50. 51; 55. 16 f.; 56. 10; 71. 28; 74. 224; 76. 166; 82. 50; 90. 13 (crown 11. 28; 41. 145; 71. 28; 72. 326. cūḍmaga 33. 46. ekavali 41. 127; 46. 17. (śeta)chatra 11. 28; 17. 7; 19. 59; 31. 39, 78; 33. 40; 35. 15, 69; 44. 19 f.; 55. 1; 64. 33; 69. 4. cāmara 76. 113; 85. 26; 89. 19; 99. 47, 55; 100. 193. vāṭavijanti 11. 28; 31. 78; 39. 54. maṇḍilavayita 31. 78). royal order 15. 188; 24. 58; 25. 67; 31. 32, 114; 58. 2, 57; 76. 68 &c. royal treasure bhagḍāgāra 69. 27; 70. 265. — 3. State elephant 14. 61; 17. 6; 19. 72 ff.; 34. 86; 35. 20 f.; 78. 60 &c. state horse 22. 52; 34. 86. state carriage 31. 38; 72. 323. — 4. The harem (orodha, itthāgāra, antepara) 14. 46; 15. 189; 17. 63; 59. 33; 60. 85; 70. 263; 88. 71 (dancing girls 29. 24). the king's retinue (parivāra, bahattā, sevukā &c.) 31. 112; 35. 52;

38, 22; 67, 15; 70, 25 f.; 72, 118 ff.; 83, 24; 88, 33 f.; 89, 31 f. (satta rajjasiṅṅāni 88, 4, rājakammāni 69, 22, rājakammikā 62, 34, paricārakā 63, 53, * pañca and dasa pessiavaggā 7, 56; 67, 58; 84, 5). — 5. Funeral rites, cremation of the members of the r. family 24, 14; 25, 72 f.; 32, 58, 79 f.; 34, 34; 36, 121; 61, 9; 67, 89; 85, 76.

C. Politics

1. Niti, rājāniti (naya, sippa) 10, 23; 48, 80, 96; 55, 3; 58, 1; 64, 3; 70, 56; 90, 56; 99, 81. Mananiti 80, 9, 50; 83, 6; 84, 2; 96, 26. dhamma, dasa rājadharmā (dasa puñña-kriyā) 7, 74; 37, 107, 180; 52, 43; 70, 31; 97, 3; 99, 73, 75, 81 f.; 100, 118. sangahavatthūni (the lair) 37, 108; 52, 43; 92, 8; 95, 2; 97, 2; 99, 14, 73, 83; 100, 118. — Support of poor subjects 52, 3; 53, 50; 60, 22, 71, 77 f.; 62, 32. of poets 60, 75, 79. — 2. Distinctions conferred upon officials 61, 19; 68, 5; 69, 30; 70, 19, 277 ff.; 96, 38. — Relations to foreign sovereigns 11, 18 ff., 27 ff.; 58, 8; 60, 5 f., 24 ff.; 62, 54; 67, 95; 76, 11 ff.; 80, 6 ff.; 87, 29; 88, 87 f.; 98, 89 ff.; 99, 109 ff., 164; 100, 63 ff., 151 ff. honours paid to foreign ambassadors 7, 70; 11, 25 f. &c. — Treaties 71, 1 ff. — Organised espionage 66, 130 ff.; 67, 19. — Foes of the king, rebels, carā 36, 21, 80 f., 94; 37, 18; 59, 4. dāmarikā 61, 74; 74, 34 ff.; 75, 10, 34 ff.; 76, 3.

D. Brahmanism at court

1. Brahmins supported by the king 48, 23; 51, 65 ff.; 77, 105. brahmanical rites observed at court 62, 33, 45 ff.; 63, 5; 64, 13 ff. the purohita 10, 79; 11, 26; 34, 24; 62, 28, 33, 46 (dija 11, 20, vippaseṭṭha 67, 29). care for Hindu temples 79, 19, 22, 81; 85, 85 ff.

E. The king and the Buddhist order

1. Bhikkhus as advisers of the king 42, 22; 57, 38 f.; 87, 39 ff., 62 ff.; as mediators in conflicts of the royal family

24. 50 ff.; 51. 14; 52. 9; 53. 25 ff.; 70. 328 ff. political influence of the clergy 33. 17 ff.; 60. 87; 61. 1; 76. 73 ff. — Bh.s accompany the king in the field 25. 3; 96. 15. — 2. Princes educated by bh.s 81. 76 f. members of the royal family enter the order 15. 18 ff.; 17. 57 f.; 18. 5; 34. 28 f., 35; 84. 29; 94. 22. conversion to Buddhism of foreign monarchs 98. 6 ff. — 3. Kings cause sermons to be held or hearken to them 32. 44; 41. 58; 54. 34 ff.; 60. 8; 62. 41; 92. 11 f.; 98. 73 ff.; 99. 15 ff., 20, 30 ff., 88; 100. 116 ff., 275, 280 f. they recite holy texts 52. 48 ff.; 54. 4; 60. 17. — 4. K.s or princes cause holy texts to be copied 45. 3; 60. 24; 81. 40 ff.; 90. 37 f.; 91. 27; 92. 13; 97. 36; 99. 86. payment of the scribes 91. 28; 99. 331. — Literary works composed at the k.'s instigation 54. 35; 97. 56 f., 59; 90. 78 f., 82 f.; 98. 24. sacred books fetched from abroad 84. 26; 100. 73. bhikkhus fetched from abroad to Ceylon 61. 5 f.; 84. 9, 11 ff.; 94. 15 f.; 97. 10 f.; 98. 89 ff.; 100. 58 ff., 136 ff. — The king cares for the accomplishments of the clergy 84. 26 f.; 98. 16 f.; 99. 173 ff.; 100. 101 ff. — 5. Clerical acts, particularly the pabbajjā and upasampadā ceremonies, performed at the k.'s instigation 60. 7; 78. 30; 81. 49 ff.; 84. 37, 48; 87. 72; 89. 47; 90. 39, 62, 65; 91. 31; 92. 19, 21 ff.; 94. 20; 97. 8, 13, 26; 98. 16; 99. 168 ff.; 100. 94 ff., 133 f., 172. purification of the order and church-reform caused by the k. 5. 236 ff.; 36. 41, 111 ff.; 39. 57; 44. 46, 76; 51. 64; 52. 44; 73. 2 ff.; 78. 2 ff.; 84. 7 ff.; 91. 11; 100. 44 ff. the k. determines a *śīmā* 15. 184 ff.; 78. 56 ff. — 6. Dedication to the church or to a sanctuary of the kingdom, the regalia &c. 18. 36; 19. 31; 31. 90, 92, 111 f.; 32. 36; 39. 31; 42. 61; 82. 50; 85. 109 ff.; 86. 57. donations equal to the bodily weight 51. 128; 60. 21; 73. 11. the k. grants titles to the bh.'s 84. 31, 38; 89. 64 ff.; 100. 239. — 7. Conflicts with the bh.'s 44. 74 ff.; 53. 14 ff.; 93. 6 ff., 10. — Persecution of the christians 98. 80 ff.

F. Administration of the kingdom

1. Officials and titles (cf. U. tr. I, p. XXV ff. and p. 359, 2), chatta mark of distinction for officials 70, 85, 122. — General expressions: *adhikārin* 66, 66; 70, 278, 297 f.; 72, 21, 37, 75, 122, 123, 138, 160, 207, 232, 265, *adhipātha* 70, 216, 278, *anturaṅgadhura* 69, 32, 35, *amaṇa* 4, 37; 5, 35, 239 &c.; 58, 30; 66, 72 &c. (*mahāmaṇa* 16, 10; 61, 1; 72, 96, 129 &c.; *mahāmatta* 72, 70, 181; *māmaṇa* 69, 31), *maṇḍalika*, *maṇḍalanāyaka* 46, 31; 51, 109, 122; 54, 8; 69, 5; 70, 242, 246, *mantin* 66, 113; 89, 27, *saciva* 66, 67; 67, 90; 68, 7, 18; 70, 83, 324, *sāmanta* (58, 20); 61, 63; 66, 142; 69, 5, 16; 70, 9, 37, 129, 136, 179, 189, 242, 246, 314; 72, 16 ff., 50, 54, 78, 82, 165. — Special designations: *asiggāha* 39, 54; 42, 42; 44, 1, 43, 54, 58 ff.; 66, 29, *Adipottahakin* (*bhaṇḍārāp*°, *bhaṇḍāgārādhipārin*) 69, 27; 72, 27, 160, 182, 196, 207, *kaṇḍakin* (-*nāyaka*) 68, 53; 69, 26; 70, 44; 72, 58; 75, 176, *kammanātha* (-*nāyaka*) 72, 58, 206, *gaṇaka* (-*amaṇa*) 11, 20; 69, 30; 76, 39, *chattaggāha* (-*nāyaka*) 38, 3; 59, 16; 66, 29; 70, 60; 72, 68, *jivāpottahakin* 70, 174, 318; 72, 161; 74, 90, *daṇḍanātha*, -*nāyaka* -*adhipārin* 11, 26; 70, 5, 8, 15, 19, 64, 68, 124, 279; 72, 36, 65, 162, 222, *doṇḍarika* 35, 51, *dhammagahakanātha* 69, 16, *nagaraguttika* 10, 81, *bhaṇḍārāpottahakin*, *bhaṇḍāgārādhipārin* see *Adipottahakin*, *mahālekha* 52, 33; 72, 1, 161, 166, 170, 182, 206, *mūlapottahakin* 75, 139 f., *lekha* 66, 155, *sabhapati* (*kuṣṭhasabhanāyaka*) 67, 61, 64, 70, 80, *seṭṭhinātha* 59, 16, *senāpati* (*senāni*, -*adhipārin*, *camūpati*, *dhujinipati* &c.) 11, 25; 15, 212; 35, 59; 50, 82; 51, 30, 40, 88; 52, 16, 28; 53, 43 ff.; 54, 13 ff., 58 ff.; 55, 2; 56, 7; 64, 9 ff., 22; 65, 13 ff., 27 ff.; 66, 2 ff.; 67, 82; 70, 123, 129 ff., 153 ff., 235; 72, 45, 49, 76, 122 f., 137 f.; 90, 12; 96, 38 (*sakkasenāpati* 52, 52, 61 ff., 72 ff.; 54, 53, *andhasenāpati* 41, 87). — Titles: *kesadhūta* 57, 65 ff.; 72, 2, 5, 7, 107; 76, 253 ff., 324 ff. &c. (cf. C. ed. II, p. 601, col. 2); (-*nāyaka* 70, 68, 279), *jitagiri* 72, 25, *daṇḍādhipārin* 75, 20 ff., 69 ff.; 76, 39, *nagaragiri*, -*galla* 66, 35, 62; 70, 68, 89, 146, 199, 318; 72, 107; 76, 60, *alagiri* 70, 137, 140,

māragiri 72. 11, 164, 174. laṅkāgiri 72. 27, 124 f.; 75. 250. laṅkādhikārin 70. 278, 283, 306, 315. laṅkābhīṇāyaka (°nātha &c.) 70. 24, 95 ff.; 123, 174, 205, 220. laṅkāpura 72. 39, 222; 75. 70; 76. 250, 324, 325. lokagalla 72. 222. saṅkha(ka)nāyaka 70. 278; 72. 31, 41; 75. 75.

2. Administration of justice. The k. the highest judge 21. 14. alleviation of punishment 36. 80 f.; 83. 4 ff.; 87. 48 f. amnesty 34. 84; 62. 42; 89. 2 ff. — Law-books 49. 20; 80. 41. — Crimes: high treason 35. 10; 36. 21, 91; 87. 48(7). robbery 61. 67. indebtedness 36. 39. — Forensic procedure 35. 10; 37. 38; 78. 13. — Punishment: bhagānutto volāṅko 36. 28. fine 83. 6. prison 35. 22; 54. 31; 62. 42; 70. 238, 254; 83. 4. mutilation, capital punishment 35. 11, 36, 43; 36. 124; 59. 22; 60. 42 ff.; 75. 160 ff., 190 ff., 83. 4; 87. 49.

3. Internal administration. Book-keeping at court 66. 155; 69. 27. — Taxes 61. 53, 70; 68. 54; 73. 3; 74. 48 f.; 87. 50. alleviation of taxes 36. 26. the gāmaḥhojaka 61. 73. — The village community 10. 103; 23. 4; 38. 38; 55. 31; 69. 75; 74. 48 f.; 84. 3 ff.; 86. 53. — Administration organised by Parakkamabāhu I. 69. 27 ff.; 74. 48 f.

6. Army and war

1. The soldiers (dhaṇa 39. 20; 58. 29 &c.; yodhā 22. 44; 69. 7 &c.; sārā 69. 36; 99. 119 &c.; virā 72. 248 &c.) Enrolling of soldiers 10. 21. soldier's pay 30. 15, 18 f., 20. — Four-membered army 18. 29; 25. 81; 70. 217, 226; 74. 18 &c. balavāhana 15. 189; 17. 28; 25. 1, 57; 70. 23, 69 &c. war elephants 25. 26 ff., 81; 41. 23; 50. 21 ff.; 70. 229; 76. 48 &c. chariot warriors 25. 81 (rathin 88. 34; rathesabha 15. 189; sārathi 14. 42). cavalry 25. 81 (numerous in the Damiḷa armies 76. 100, 238, 331). infantry (paṭṭi) 25. 81. — Mercenaries (āyudhiya 61. 69; āyudhajvīn 66. 67); Sīhulā 55. 12; 61. 69; 74. 44; 90. 17 ff. Damiḷā, Keraṭṭā, Kaṇṇāṭṭā 45. 11; 55. 5, 12; 69. 18; 70. 239; 74. 44. the Velakkāṇā 60. 36; 63. 24, 29; 74. 44. villages granted to the mercenaries for maintenance 74. 48. — Militia 67. 79; 70. 82, 187, 260; 72.

127; 74. 52, 112; 75. 102; 99. 42 ff. (among the *Damilas* 76. 130, 246 f., 259 ff.). *vyādha*, *kirita*, *corū* as soldiers 69. 20; 70. 285; 72. 208. — Officers (*sāmanta* see F 1). an umbrella their badge 66. 49; 70. 122; 76. 160; 88. 75. a palanquin their conveyance 70. 85, 122; 72. 100. — Trumpets 25. 65; 65. 27; 66. 32; 72. 119; 74. 222; 85. 113; 88. 75; 89. 46. drums 69. 20; 70. 227; 74. 222; 75. 104; 76. 161; 85. 114; 88. 75; 96. 15 f.; 99. 46. flags 70. 225; 85. 113; 88. 75. a relic as field-badge 25. 1; 26. 9. — 2. Weapons (*yuddha*, see 7. 36; 69. 7, 38; 99. 49 &c.; five kinds 7. 16; 41. 48; 70. 229). Bow and arrows 6. 20; 7. 19; 25. 89 ff., 99; 33. 63, 65; 35. 31; 55. 6; 57. 43; 66. 27; 70. 114; 72. 134, 246, 250; 74. 96, 117; 83. 44; 96. 14. poisoned arrows 76. 49; 83. 38, 45. *gokappa* arrows 76. 48. archers 25. 82; 69. 19; 70. 116; 72. 241, 322. — Sword: *asī* 10. 59 ff.; 22. 44, 53; 66. 108; 72. 84. *khagga* 25. 63, 89; 30. 93; 31. 79; 64. 4; 66. 24, 31, 49; 72. 102; 88. 74 &c. *thara* 24. 1; 69. 22. (royal swords 72. 102 f.). — Dagger: *churika* 55. 6, 17; 69. 21. *asiputtaka* 41. 24. *nikkaragi* 44. 112. — Spear: *kuṇṭa* 25. 1; 26. 9; 36. 47; 96. 14; 98. 49. *satti*, *sattha* 69. 20; 70. 116; 90. 7. *tonara* 24. 35; 70. 116. *salla* 70. 307. — Lasso 7. 29; 10. 55. — Club 23. 58; 69. 17. — catapults 72. 251; 83. 44. — Armour (*kavaca*) 69. 7, 38. shield 25. 58, 62 ff.; 67. 42; 99. 48. doublet of buffalo hide 74. 73. — 3. The war (*yuddha* 1. 63; 38. 36 &c.). Preparation of war 68. 7, 38, 52; 69. 28, 33, 38; 70. 1, 57. *yuddhopakaraṇṇi* 69. 5, 14, 17, 31; 70. 1; 96. 12. — Review of troops 99. 42 ff. sham-fights 89. 26, 31 f. manoeuvres 69. 36. — Four methods of war 58. 3. guerilla warfare (*corayuddha*) 75. 18 N., 135. ambush 66. 75 f. stratagem 25. 56. — Battle (*yuddha*, *sangṇa*, *raṇa* &c. 24. 19; 70. 246; 72. 5, 17; 96. 17 &c.). single combat of the commanders 25. 67 ff., 83 ff.; 41. 47 ff.; 60. 40 ff. victory and defeat (*jaya* and *parijaya*, -*bhava* 70. 78 f., 180, 225, 246; 71. 16 &c.). celebration of victory 76. 332. *ābharaṇa* as distinction of victorious officers 72. 329. officers of the defeated foe beheaded 70. 122. — Naval battles 70. 63 ff., 91; 96. 32. — Field entrenchments 10. 46; 25. 20;

37, 19; 38, 36; 70, 61, 72, 93, 100, 130 ff., 161, 163 ff.; 72, 232 ff., 258; 74, 32 ff., 62, 86 f., 91; 76, 121 ff. &c. fortresses 81, 1 ff.; 88, 43, 60, 77; 96, 22, 34; 99, 116; defence, besiege, capture, plundering of fortresses 25, 21 ff.; 51, 34; 58, 55 f.; 70, 235 f., 251 ff., 283 ff.; 72, 209 ff., 250 ff.; 76, 244 f., 324 ff.

VII. The people

A. Clans, castes, guilds.

1. Clan-names 19, 2; 35, 16 ff.; 38, 13; 39, 44; 41, 69; 42, 30; 66, 35; 69, 13; 74, 213; 80, 15; 85, 51; 90, 7; 91, 3 (Moriyā and Lambakappā in India 5, 17; 77, 27 f.) — Castes (vaṣṣā 72, 145) and guilds 7, 57; 19, 1, 3; 69, 24; 80, 41, 75, seṭṭhin 11, 26; 19, 2, 67; 59, 16. khattiya, vājāsā 3, 3; 7, 47; 17, 63; 19, 54, 66; 87, 28; 89, 27. brāhmaṇa, dvija, vippa 3, 3; 9, 2; 10, 20, 192; 19, 2; 33, 37 ff.; 34, 24; 35, 18; 37, 41; 62, 33, 46; 64, 16; 66, 132; 67, 24. vessa 3, 3; 20, 15; 76, 264. sudda 3, 3. — Kulā: hīna 61, 50, 52, 52, 68; 66, 153. kulaputta 72, 501; 92, 23; 97, 13 f., 26; 99, 169; 100, 134, 172; kulīthi 60, 78; kulavappa 95, 6; kulapati 23, 19. — Slaves (dāsa, dāsī) 9, 4, 15, 19, 22, 24; 27, 12; 61, 68; 70, 202; 88, 106; 90, 2 (shaving of the head 6, 42. redemption of slaves 87, 46). outcasts (capāla) 5, 57; 10, 91 ff.; 33, 2; 35, 18; 66, 132; 88, 106.

2. Single professions (kammakāra 61, 68; 69, 21; 99, 50; pesakkān, passiya 7, 56; 30, 6; sippika, -in 34, 73; 66, 139; 88, 13, 85. list of craftsmen 88, 105-7, (wandering craftsmen 66, 139). payment of the craftsmen 27, 22 f.; 30, 14, 18 f.; 88, 119; of artists 100, 198 f. farmer and herdsman: kasi-kamma 60, 47; 76, 287; gopa(ka), gopāla 9, 22; 10, 13, 17; 19, 2. smith: kammāra 68, 25; 88, 105; lohakāra 68, 25; soṇṇakāra 18, 24; 66, 139; 68, 25. goldsmith's works 98, 91; 100, 30, 72. barber &c: nhāpita, nhāpaka, kappaka 29, 20; 34, 84; 69, 26; 70, 44. bricklayer: (iṭṭhaka)vaḍḍhukī 30, 5, 8, 30; 35, 101, 109 f.; 37, 27; 88, 106. mason: silākottaka 68, 25. wood-carrier: dāruddhatika 34, 22. writer: lekha-

37. 26; 66. 155; 99. 33. merchant: *vāṇija* 5. 49; 7. 24; 28. 21 ff.; 75. 45; 95. 4; 99. 109 (wandering traders 66. 134). hunter: *luddaka*, *vyādha* 28. 9, 11; 67. 19; 70. 35, 44. fisherman: *kālīsika*, *kevaṇa* 22. 62; 28. 37.

B. Settlement

1. Village: *gāma*, *passāṃ*. fence of briars round a v. 66. 87 (*gāmika* "villager" 23. 66; 67. 70; *jānapada* 29. 22). — small town: *nigama* (*negama* 70. 254). — town: *nagara*, *pura*, *purī* 87. 67 (*nagara* 4. 5, 15; 14. 59; 17. 63; 79. 1 &c.; *pura* 29. 22). — 2. Description of a town 10. 84 ff.; 73. 55 ff.; 88. 92 ff., 116 ff.; 91. 5. four districts of a t. 73. 26. streets: *vithi* 34. 76; 73. 59. houses: *ghaṇa*, *ghara*, *āgāra* (special kinds: *apḥhayoga*, *hammiya* 88. 93, 118). houses of more than one storeys: *pāsāda* 88. 92; 91. 5 &c. (cf. *va*, 0. 12 c). halls: *sālā*, *catussālā* 15. 47, 50; 35. 88; 37. 15; 73. 23; 76. 123. alms-houses: *dānasālā* 54. 30; 73. 26. hospitals: *vajjasālā* (37. 182) 49. 18, 19; 52. 25, 57; 54. 31, 53; 73. 94. dispensaries: *bhesajjagaha* 52. 27. lying-in hospitals: *sirikkasotthi-sālā* 10. 102; *sutighara* 79. 61. shops: *āpāṇa* 5. 52; 29. 29; 34. 76; 91. 5. gardens, parks (*oyyāna*), bathing-ponds (*pakkharapī*), bath-houses (*ubhāṇakotṭhaka*): 15. 2, 7, 8, 30, 202, 207; 35. 97, 98; 37. 33; 68. 57 f.; 73. 95-123; 78. 45 ff.; 79. 1 ff.; 100. 288 f. *jantāghara* 15. 31. — 3. Fortification of the city 60. 2 f.; 73. 57 ff.; 94. 7 f. wall and trench (*pākāra*, *parikkhā*) 25. 8; 35. 96; 60. 3; 70. 236; 91. 5, 7. gate-towers, bastions &c. (*gopura*, *dvāraṭṭāla*, *dvārakotṭha*, *patṭhapāla*, *torana*, *khaṇḍhāvāra*) 51. 31; 60. 3; 70. 116, 190; 91. 5, 7; 96. 30; 98. 70. gates (four) 34. 79; 35. 97. fourteen gates of Palatthinagara 73. 160 ff. — 4. Suburbs (of P.) 73. 151 ff.; 78. 79 ff.

C. Domestic and social life

1. The family. Terms of kinship 7. 65; 9. 16, 24, 26 f.; 10. 7, 29, 73 f., 82; 11. 20; 48. 51, 82; 51. 24; 52. 11; 57. 28; 59. 28; 61. 1; 62. 2; 63. 38, 40, 51, 53; 64. 38; 67. 16; 69. 29; 70. 266; 93. 9; 99. 1, 123. three kinds of sons 87. 18 ff. —

Marriage (*pariṇaya*) 72. 91. marriage-outfit of a bride 7. 55 ff.; 87. 28. brides from India 7. 50 ff.; 87. 28; 96. 40. allusion to the buying of brides 72. 91. master of the house (*kaṭumbika*) 23. 61, 90; 24. 25. fire kept in the house 10. 14. — Pregnancy 22. 42 ff.; 62. 36. child-birth, birth-rites 9. 21; 62. 45. childhood 87. 55 ff.; 88. 6 (wet nurse 35. 20). domestic ceremonies 22. 65, 71; 62. 53; 63. 5; 64. 13. — Death and funeral 74. 144 f.

2. Food and drink 7. 24; 10. 3; 14. 55; 22. 41, 70; 24. 56; 29. 28; 30. 37, 39; 32. 30, 39 f., 45, 49; 34. 55 f., 62; 35. 65, 67, 92 f.; 36. 69, 100; 54. 22 f.; 70. 211; 73. 36; 85. 38; 89. 44 ff., 51 ff.; 100. 4, 195 f. — morning meal 25. 114. pod-pepper and other spice 25. 114; 26. 16; 28. 21; 54. 22 f. — Intoxicating drinks (*sura*) 25. 32; 54. 70 f. — Betel chewing 35. 62; 54. 22; 100. 3, 196.

3. Dress (*vattha* 11. 29; 29. 28; 35. 65; 36. 53 &c.) and ornaments (*ābharaṇa* 7. 27 &c.). Staffs 68. 9; 70. 109; 73. 84; 90. 70. — Turban 11. 28; 29. 38; 32. 78; 35. 59 (hair-knot 66. 103). mantle 35. 102; 60. 70; 66. 103, 109. shoes (*pāduka*, *upāhṃā*) 11. 28; 30. 14, 39. — Ornaments, unguents, perfumes (*sugandha* 89. 42) 7. 55; 11. 28; 25. 91; 32. 29; 34. 52; 66. 44 f., 134; 70. 108; 73. 84; 76. 206, 237; 85. 41, 116; 89. 19; 97. 47. *saṃjāna* 11. 29; 34. 52. incense 89. 42.

4. Articles of personal use (tools &c.). Umbrella (*ālapatta*, *chatta*) 76. 113; 89. 19; 99. 47, 55 (cf. v. B. 2). fan 11. 28; 31. 78; 76. 115; 85. 27, 46; 89. 20; 100. 193. napkin 11. 29. twigs for cleansing the teeth 5. 25. — Knife (*vāsi*) 28. 24 f. hammer, axe and other tools 29. 3; 88. 108 f. — Pottery, vessels: *kalasa* 74. 205; 85. 28. *kumbha* 89. 20; 90. 71. *ācānakumbhī* 27. 40. *ghaṭa* 29. 57 ff.; 76. 112, 115; 85. 26; 92. 17. *thāla*, *thālī* 89. 21, 44; *paṭiggāha* 89. 21. *pāṭi* 30. 12. *bhājana* 11. 31; 22. 5, 64 (fig. 44. 70; 84. 16). *bhāṅkāra* 11. 28; 76. 115; 89. 20. *saraka* 32. 55. — Spoon 27. 40. basket (*pāṭaka*, *paṭa*) 36. 93; 88. 160. water-strainer 36. 92.

5. Household-furniture. Bed: *maṇḍaka* 24. 40; 27. 39; 54. 31; *sayana*, *soyya* 22. 83 ff.; 29. 39; 25. 102; 31. 167 f.;

62. 23, 24 &c. chair, poṭṭa: 27. 39; pallaṅka 27. 32 ff.; 31. 76 f. sirika 11. 31; 32. 7. — Carpet, mat 14. 51; 25. 102; 27. 35; 34. 54; 73. 61; 88. 109; 90. 70; 98. 46. — Lamp 25. 101; 31. 80; 33. 6; 34. 55, 77; 74. 295; 85. 40 f.; 89. 43 f.; 90. 71; 92. 17; 99. 62. lamp-stand 76. 295; 89. 25. — Mirror: adāsa: 100. 106; dappapa 89. 21. — Charcoal-pan 66. 70. bell 21. 15. mill-stone (nisida) 23. 6; 28. 40; 30. 9. chest (mañjasa) 30. 60. — parissavana 36. 92.

6. Measures and weights, time, money. Measures of length: yojana (cf. M. tr. p. 297, Nr. 41) 1. 21; 5. 23, 173, 262; 6. 13, 35; 18. 29; 20. 12; 23. 22, 26; 28. 7, 13 ff.; 38. 68 (note is incorrect; cf. C. tr. I, p. 349), 85. 4; 86. 41; 89. 14. gāvuta 65. 4; 73. 154; 74. 63; 76. 197; 89. 9. usabha 22. 42; 23. 88; 25. 43; 85. 1. hattha 1. 41; 18. 27; 25. 43; 70. 128; 78. 63; 69. ratana 15. 167; 30. 58, 63; 72. 235; 78. 77; 92. 17. vidatthi 28. 14. laṅgula, -li 18. 27; 28. 11; 30. 59. porisa 72. 235. yaḷḷhi 78. 63; 86. 41. bayapāta 72. 239. dham 35. 31. fāla 17. 43. — Square measures: ammaṇa 38. 77. karisa 10. 30; 28. 13; 35. 83, 85. — measures of capacity: ammaṇa 30. 7 ff. dopa 15. 167; 31. 18; 74. 3. mṭṭi 30. 37; 32. 45. — weights: nikkhaḷa 76. 18; 82. 13 f.; 100. 14. — — Time: year (vassa, samvachara passin, ha-yana 41. 3; 44. 133 &c.). months (māsa 3. 16; 5. 279; 25. 8 &c.). names of months 1. 12, 19, 46, 73; 3. 2; 11. 37, 40, 42; 12. 2; 13. 14, 18; 16. 2, 14; 17. 1, 17; 18. 7, 61 f., 64; 19. 9; 20. 33; 29. 1, 14, 63; 31. 109; 39. 37; 41. 89; 85. 89; 90. 62; 100. 91. sukka-, kālapakka 18. 61 f., 64; 19. 9; 20. 39; 29. 14; 31. 109. day (divasa passin, vāsara 62. 16, 32; 70. 263 &c.). yāma 25. 105; 85. 40. — — Money: kahāpapa 4. 13; 21. 26; 25. 100; 30. 14, 18; 53. 29, 32 f.; 77. 192; 81. 45. gold coins 27. 21; 48. 7; 81. 45; 100. 11. silver coins 91. 12; 97. 6. sums of money in numbers only (to be supplied by kahāpapa) 6. 24 f.; 7. 61; 10. 18, 24; 23. 36 ff.; 26. 22; 34. 87; 35. 61, 72; 89. 66; 92. 13.

7. Traffic and trade. Roads: maggānumagga 67. 20. — footpaths 70. 4; 72. 240. high-roads (mahānumagga) in C. 25. 6 ff.; 50. 37; 58. 41; 73. 163; 74. 83; 89. 13 f. cause-

ways and bridges 70. 127 f.; 86. 21 ff.; 98. 86; 99. 118. resthouses 60. 66; 89. 15; 99. 118. mile-stones 80. 25 N. — Means of conveyance: *yāna*, *vāhana* 10. 31 ff.; 58. 21; 61. 6; 99. 84. carriage (*ratha*) 7. 56; 14. 42; 15. 189; 31. 38; 33. 46; 70. 127; 89. 16. cart (*sakaṣa*) 28. 21 ff.; 30. 6; 34. 46. litter 70. 85, 122; 72. 100; 90. 5, 8; 95. 12; 42 15. 189; 25. 1, 57; 70. 23, 69). — Trade: (merchant see VII, A, 2). navigation and ocean-trade 6. 43; 7. 51, 58; 8. 11; 11. 23, 38; 18. 7 f.; 19. 4, 17, 70; 23. 24; 35. 26 f.; 58. 9; 69. 31; 100. 63 ff., 75 ff. harbours in U. Mahātittha 7. 58; 25. 79; 48. 81; 51. 28; 60. 34; 88. 63 &c. Jambukola 11. 23, 38; 18. 7; 19. 23 ff. Uruvelaputtana 28. 36. Matlikāśatittha 60. 34. Maunāra 61. 39; 83. 16. Vālukagāma 75. 45. Pallavavaṅka 76. 46. Pulacceri 83. 17 (?). Bhimatittha 86. 40. Kolambatittha 94. 1. Tikopamālatittha 100. 76. in India: Tāmalitthi 11. 38; 19. 6. — Articles of trade: horses from India (*sindhava*) 21. 10; 23. 71; 31. 38. elephants from Birma 76. 17-34. jewels 69. 34. spice 28. 21; 54. 46; 58. 9. stuffs 58. 9.

8. Rural life. Agriculture (*kasikamma*) 69. 37. its intrinsic value 92. 24 ff. clearing of the jungle 23. 51; 68. 30. — Irrigation works 68. 16 ff., 32 ff.; 79. 27 ff.; 88. 111 ff. *nettika* "canal" 61. 65; 68. 24, 34; 79. 25 ff., 40 ff. (*nettika* 60. 14). *vāpī* (see V, C, c, 6) *gaph*, *kar*, *bandh* 10. 88; 23. 92 f.; 35. 120; 36. 3; 37. 46; 38. 42; 42. 31; 51. 73; 79. 69. structure of a tank: dam (*bandhana*, *setu*, *setubandha*) 42. 31; 68. 17, 23, 26, 28. *paṇṇā* "outflow running through the dam, sluice" 79. 27, 30, 42 ff., 68. *avarapa* "lock" 60. 52; 61. 65; 79. 27 N., 69. *koṭṭhabaddha* "square hole (for the lock)" 68. 16; 79. 27 N., 28. weir (*varipata*) 48. 148; 68. 35, 37, 40. flood-escape (*nijjhara*) 68. 33, 50; 79. 28, 66. — raising of the water by means of machines 34. 45. subterranean canals 35. 98. — Fields 23. 51; 68. 30, 52 ff.; 88. 114 f.; 92. 26. produce of the fields 23. 51; 34. 9; 68. 31; 92. 26. corn (*āhanna*) 68. 7, 38; 70. f. sowing and harvest 10. 31; 24. 58; 34. 3. barn 68. 31. — cocoplantation 90. 93. sugar-mill 34. 41; 61. 53. — Herdsman

9. 22; 10. 13, 17; 19. 2. assagopa 39. 1; batthipaka 88. 34. cattle (*gowa*) 35. 12. domestic animals: elephant, cow, buffalo, dog, see V, C, 3, b, 3.

9. Education of the people, literary life. Education: wandering schoolmasters 66. 138. art of writing, letters 7. 54, 57; 8. 7; 22. 15; 23. 25, 33, 35; 33. 40; 66. 36; 67. 55, 58; 76. 30; 98. 90; 100. 61, 158. *lekha* 99. 33. royal inscriptions and sannas 28. 2; 33. 50; 54. 28; 85. 94 f., 39; 100. 214. — Appreciation of books, their destruction and restitution 52. 50; 80. 67; 84. 41 B.; 99. 125. See also V, E, 4. — Knowledge of languages and dialects 66. 130; 69. 22; 90. 80. Pali as ecclesiastical language 98. 90. grammar 64. 3. philosophy 90. 80. — Poetry: *kāveyya* 42. 13; 64. 3. poets in C. 42. 13; 60. 75. See V, E, 4.

10. Sport and amusement. Sport (*kūḍa* 66. 111): hunting 5. 154; 10. 2; 14. 1, 4; 30. 32 ff.; 72. 263 (bow and javelin, the hunter's weapons 14. 4; 70. 44). capture of wild elephants 72. 105. art of fencing 24. 1; 64. 4; 69. 22. pugilistic contest 63. 40; 75. 75. riding on horseback or on elephant 22. 56; 23. 72 ff.; 24. 1; 62. 6; 64. 4; 69. 32; 88. 34; 96. 7 B. Archery (*dharmasippa* 57. 43) 23. 86 ff.; 24. 1; 69. 19; 72. 243, 245; 83. 45. plays in water 26. 7, 10; 70. 31. — Music and dance: music (*ariyavādita* 34. 60; *lāḍavacca* 17. 7). song (*gāṇa*) 34. 79; 72. 94. dance (*nacca*) 34. 60, 79; 85. 43. musicians 30. 91; 69. 24; 72. 94, 264. singers 72. 264; 85. 43. dancers and dancing girls 10. 87; 29. 24; 32. 78; 74. 217; 85. 43. wandering musicians 66. 132 f.; bards and minstrels 74. 222; 89. 34. musical instruments, *ariya* (five kinds 73. 68; 85. 30, 45; 89. 33) 29. 25; 76. 111. lute 30. 75; 31. 82; 72. 264; 74. 216. trumpet 74. 222; 99. 60; 100. 34, 190. flute 72. 264; 74. 216. cymbal 99. 60; 100. 34, 190. drums: *bheri* 74. 221; 96. 15; 99. 46; *maddala* 96. 15; 99. 46; *modiṅga* 74. 216; *kāḍala* 74. 222. — *rasa*-theory 66. 56; 72. 94, 265; 73. 117; 75. 89. *lāya* 73. 79. — dance and music at festival occasions 34. 60, 79; 74. 215-7; 85. 42 f.; 89. 33 B.; 90. 71; 99. 46. d. and m. as amusement of ladies and princes and at court 26. 99, 102; 29. 24; 64. 4;

69. 22; 70. 31; 73. 141. — Public amusements: *samajjā* 34, 79 (cf. E. Haney, *Album Kern*, p. 61 ff.). *Asāḥa-fest* 85, 89; 99. 53, *vasanta-kijā* 64. 17. — stage for mimics (*raṅgabhūmī*) 31. 82, puppet-plays 66. 133, snake-charmers 66. 131, mendicant artists 52. 30; 53. 30. — festival processions 31. 36 ff.; 37. 77 ff.; 38. 77; 52. 53 ff.; 72. 313 ff.; 74. 224 ff.; 76. 108 ff.; 89. 16 ff.; 99. 45 ff., 54 ff. decoration of the streets 19. 38; 34. 76 ff.; 37. 74 ff.; 62. 13; 74. 199 ff.; 85. 4 ff.; 89. 14 ff.; 98. 10 ff.; 99. 7 f., 13; 100. 25 ff. illumination 34. 80. donations distributed to the people at festival occasions 29. 20 f., 27 f.

11. Medicine. Physicians and medical art 32. 38; 73. 16 f., 39; 99. 176 f.; 100. 144. wandering quacks 66. 137. kings as physicians 37. 112–50; 73. 34–54. gynecology 37. 110. veterinary science 25. 34; 37. 112 ff., 128; 73. 50 ff. medical books 97. 59. — Diseases 15. 60, 63; 35. 66; 36. 82 ff.; 37. 111; 52. 25, 77; 56. 5; 99. 176. cripples 37. 118. poisoning 66. 131, 138. surgical instruments 37. 150; 76. 51. bleeding 37. 123. medicaments: *bhesajja* 5. 221; 22. 30; 32. 38; 76. 19 f. &c. honey and ghee 5. 49 ff., 215. — Hospitals and dispensaries see VII, B, 2.

12. Art: architecture, plastic and graphic art. Architecture, a. building material (*dhāva*) 25. 39; 37. 25, 29; *paṇṇa* 30. 6 f. *matṭika* 11. 29; 29. 5; 30. 21. *cūḍa* 88. 106; 100. 284. *sudhā* 25. 29; 29. 8; 32. 1; 34. 46; 68. 27; 91. 29 f.; 97. 38, 47. *iṭṭhaka* 25. 29; 28. 3, 7 ff.; 30. 15 f.; 35. 85; 88. 98, 106; 92. 10; 100. 87, 284 (*taṃbalohiṭṭhaka*) 37. 121. *grājaka* 88. 97. *siṃhā* 25. 29; 33. 23, 25; 35. 118; 36. 102; 68. 25; 88. 107; 97. 47; 98. 80; 100. 284, 296. *medavaggaṇṇāsāṇā* 30. 57; 31. 119, 121. — b. Workmen: *vaṇḍhaki* see VII, A, 2; 88. 106 f. — c. Various buildings: *ekakṭṭhūpikageha*, *ekakṭṭhambhapāsāda* 9. 3; 73. 92. *pāsāda*, *aḍḍhayoga*, *haṃmiya* see VII, B, 2. — d. Elements of a house: *ājira* 35. 3. *ālinda* 35. 3; 98. 44. *dvāra* 73. 63; 88. 99. *kavṛṭa* 35. 25; 73. 63. *bhūṭi* 73. 63; 88. 98. *thambha* 27. 30; 36. 102; 69. 11; 78. 41; 88. 98; 100. 296 f. *sopāna* 34. 44; 73. 64; 78. 41; 89. 99. *vedikā* 27. 16, 26; 73. 88; 88. 99.

gabbha 27. 15, 28; 73. 61. kūṭāgāra 27. 15, 26; 73. 62; 78. 38, 49, 55. viṭaṅka 88. 97. silapaṇḍara 27. 16, 28. chadana (72. 211); 97. 49. valabbhā 88. 97 (balāyaṣṭhi 88. 97; gopānasi 37. 141; 88. 98). — e. Pāsāda (digha-, eṭṭap^o 78. 36 f., 50; 90. 90); pākāra 27. 41. kūṭāgāra, gabbhasālāghara, paṇḍara-
 rugeha 78. 55. dvārakoṭṭhaka 27. 41. gopura 60. 12. pā-
 sādātala 25. 98, 105; 28. 3. thūpikā 31. 13; 73. 135, siṅga
 90. 66, 90. underground tunnel 55. 7. — Thūpa, cetiya
 (M. tr., p. 295, Nr. 26). a tree as cetiya 1. 67. thūpa "tomb"
 20. 53; 37. 41. cetiya "tomb" 20. 44; 25. 73. cetiya = thūpa
 29. 15; 30. 57; 86. 51 &c. dhātugabbha = thūpa 60. 56;
 68. 28; 79. 14. silanaya th^o 35. 118. model of a th^o 39.
 11 ff. — erection of a th^o 30. 15 ff. mantling of a ruined
 th^o (kaṇṇuka) 1. 42; 33. 23, 25; 35. 85, 121; 36. 12. — parts
 of a th^o: foundation 29. 2-12 (maṅgalāṭṭhaka 29. 15, 16-63).
 moonstone 31. 61. toraṇa 38. 10. vālikāṅga, -mariyādā,
 cetiyāṅga 33. 31; 34. 70; 37. 60. hatthipākāra, -vedi 33. 5;
 38. 10; 39. 30; 41. 95. pupphadhāna 39. 51, 56; 33. 22.
 padavedikā 34. 41; 35. 2. dhātugabbha 30. 57 ff., 62 ff.; 34.
 19. sudhakkamma 32. 1; 33. 5; 34. 16. the "tee": caturassa-
 caya 31. 124; maddhavedi 32. 5; songathūpa 100. 263. vedikā
 on the tee 34. 39; 35. 2. figures of sun and moon on the tee
 36. 66. thūpikā 44. 133; 76. 105; 80. 20; 87. 66. chatta
 33. 5; 35. 2; 36. 24, 65; 38. 54; 44. 133. vajracumbha
 36. 66; 38. 71; 41. 95. — Maṇḍapa, provisional pavilion,
 erected for various purposes: as a chapel 100. 237; for a
 sermon 98. 71 ff.; 100. 279; in connection with a pāsāda 14.
 17; 27. 29 ff.; 36. 99, or with a temple 100. 185, 217, 243.
 ratanap^o 27. 29; 37. 103. siṅga^o 36. 102. thaṇḍhā, chatta
 and vedikā of a m^o 27. 30 f.; 100. 226. — f. Ornamentation
 of the buildings (the object itself or its representation in
 relief or in fresco-painting): pupphapavvaghara 30. 90; 32. 3.
 strings of pearls 27. 31; 30. 66 f., or of bells 27. 16, 27; 30.
 69; 73. 68. ratanapadumani 27. 34; 30. 68. — Figures (panti
 "rows") of animals 27. 36, 37; 30. 65; 100. 255, or of deities
 27. 36; 30. 74 ff.; 89 ff., 92, or of sun, moon and stars 27. 93;
 30. 68; 36. 66; or of sacred symbols 27. 37; 30. 65, 92;

36. 103. *agghāyapanti* 30, 92. *pañcagūlikapanti* 32, 4. — *Pupphalālā* 30, 65; **73.** 62; **100.** 244, 255. *vijjullatā* 30, 96. *ūpasaṅkamaṇa* **98.** 70. — Painted representations of the sixteen sacred places **100.** 253, 261, or of *jātakas* 30, 88; **97.** 39–45, or of scenes from the life of the Buddhas **30.** 78 ff.; **100.** 261 ff.

b. Plastic art. Statues of the Buddha **35.** 89; **38.** 65, 86; **39.** 6, 7, 40; **45.** 61; **49.** 14, 44; **51.** 76; **52.** 65; **53.** 49; **78.** 74 f.; **79.** 78; **85.** 10, 66; **88.** 56; **90.** 19; **92.** 14; **98.** 66; **100.** 154, 245, 257. golden or gilded images **30.** 72; **48.** 137; **49.** 77; **50.** 34, 66; **51.** 23, 48 f.; **55.** 20; **61.** 57; **100.** 72, 75, 249. stone images **36.** 104, 128; **37.** 14; **38.** 61; **42.** 18; **44.** 68; **51.** 77; **52.** 12; **53.** 50; **85.** 77; **100.** 181. bronze images **36.** 31; **37.** 31. images made of stucco **100.** 245. — Buddhist iconography **38.** 62–4 with N.; **45.** 61; **52.** 26, 65; **53.** 50; **73.** 78; **98.** 66. — Statues of Mātteyya and of other bodhisattvas **38.** 68; **45.** 62; **51.** 77; **79.** 75; **100.** 248, 259; of Ānanda, Śāriputta, Moggallāna **39.** 53; **51.** 80; **100.** 248; of Mahinda and of his companions **37.** 68, 79, 87; **38.** 58; of princes **39.** 52; **88.** 57; **100.** 249. — Images of gods **30.** 73 ff.; **86.** 19; **90.** 192; **100.** 248, 259. *devāṅka* images **78.** 40; **85.** 66. — Figures of animals **39.** 52; **100.** 252.

c. Graphic art (cf. the notices in a) Paintings on stuff **27.** 18. a picture of the Buddha **85.** 94 ff. — Mural paintings **78.** 35 ff., 40, 52, 88; **90.** 66, 90; **100.** 244, 247 ff., 250 ff., 260 ff.

d. Special arts. Ivory work **37.** 100 ff. — mosaic **51.** 69. — figures moved by mechanism **85.** 15 ff.

VIII. Hindu religion and popular belief

A. Hindu gods (deva 18. 51; 32. 63 f.; 51. 108; 70. 223; 96. 39 &c., *anara* 99. 107, *sura* 72. 322; 100. 135. — 1. Hindu cult in G. 45. 55; 48. 113; 73. 71; 83. 49; 90. 101 f. *veda* and *vedaṅga* 5. 107, 143; 10. 20; 62. 33; 64. 16. the *brāhmaṇa* caste see VII. 1. *brahmanical ceremonies* 62. 33, 45, 52 f. *bhatti* 74. 213; 85. 33, 70, 82, 121; 93. 9. Hinduism forcibly introduced 80. 75; 83. 9 ff. Hindu temples (*devūlaya*, -*sthāna*) 37. 40; 79. 19, 22, 81; 88. 93, 119; 99. 45. — 2. Groups of gods: *dvaitīpāsā*, *tattīpāsā* and their heaven 27. 18; 30. 44, 89; 31. 79. *tuṣita* gods and their heaven 32. 72 ff.; 33. 13. *dvaitīpāsā kumārīpā* 30. 89; 31. 80. *brahma* gods 18. 51; 85. 15; 87. 11. *planetary gods (gaha)* 87. 1. — 3. the three great gods: *Brahma* 30. 74; 74. 197, 237; 89. 17 (the *brahma* world 5. 139; 19. 45; 31. 11). *Viṣṇu* (*nathasura* &c.) 7. 5; 83. 49; 85. 85 ff.; 90. 102; 97. 46; 99. 42; 100. 248. (*Lakṣmī* 72. 101. - *Āśāhi* festival 85. 89). *Śiva* 73. 91; 74. 193; 93. 9 f. (*Caṇḍi* 73. 161). — 4. Other gods: *Indra* (*Sakka*, *Devinda*, *Vāsava*, *Sajjampati*, *Pākasāsana*, *Sahassakkha*, *Nārāyana*, *Vajirapāṇi*) 15. 185; 17. 13; 21. 31; 28. 6; 30. 71; 31. 31, 78; 37. 151; 39. 29; 47. 25; 51. 108; 62. 11; 65. 19; 72. 59, 168, 186, 265, 299, 328; 74. 206; 85. 12; 96. 37. his residence, his palace, his hall of justice, his garden 15. 185; 73. 70, 87; 74. 198, 206; 80. 5; 88. 121; 89. 5, 10. his trumpet 30. 74. his bow 85. 12. *Kuvera* (*Vessavaṇa*) 10. 89; 27. 29. his residence *Āṭaka* 37. 106; 39. 5; 74. 207; 80. 5. his treasures 87. 31. *Skanda* 45. 45, 55; 57. 7. *Vissakamma* 18. 24; 28. 6 ff.; 30. 11; 31. 34, 76; 73. 69. *Pajjunna* 21. 31; 85. 44 (*devo vassati* 21. 32; 36. 77). *Soma* 62. 5; 63. 14. *Bṛhaspati* 42. 3; 52. 38. *Sarasvatī* 73. 86. *Yama* 72. 249, 309; 75. 30. *Mara* 30. 75; 31. 85; 41. 48; 66. 99; 74. 237; 80. 70; 86. 9; 88. 81; 93. 17; 96. 42. *Namuci* 98. 96. the four *lokapāla* (*mahārājā*) 30. 89; 31. 79; 72. 59. *minor gods* 30. 75; 31. 78, 82. — 5. *Demigods*,

nymphs &c. Kandappa 77, 106, kumbhaṣṭhā 12, 20, gandhulaka 12, 20: 73, 163, necharā 25, 162: 27, 13, nāgā (bhūjagā &c.) and garuḍā (supannā) 1, 84; 5, 28: 12, 9 ff.; 14, 10; 19, 3, 19 ff.; 31, 19, 27 ff., 46 ff.; 50, 27; 75, 38; 83, 14. Nāga king Aravāla 12, 9, 15, 19. Kālanāga 5, 87; 30, 75: 31, 27, 46, 83. Mahānāga 41, 77 ff. Ananta 73, 120. Nāgas original inhabitants of C. 1, 45 ff., 63 ff., 71 ff.; 19, 35. — 6. Demons, asurā 1, 84; 51, 39; 72, 299; 96, 37; 99, 63, dāmarū 75, 54, kiṇmarū (-riyo) 5, 212; 78, 40, rakkhasā (-siyo) 12, 45 ff.; 15, 69; 39, 34; 54, 66; 72, 79; 83, 46, yakkhā (-siyo) 9, 23; 10, 84 ff.; 12, 20 ff.; 18, 52; 19, 3; 31, 81; 36, 82 ff.; 50, 36; 55, 21; 99, 125. y.s in bodily shape 10, 104; 14, 7. twenty-eight y.-chiefs 30, 90; 31, 81. the y. Kālavela 10, 84; 37, 41. y.s original inhabitants of C. 1, 20 ff.; 7, 9, 11, 30 ff.; 63, 12. pretā and bhūtā 10, 104; 74, 115. — demons in animal shape 7, 9; 10, 53 ff.; 14, 3, or changing their shape 7, 26, or producing animal beings 10, 4. — Kālu 83, 42.

B. Popular belief. 1. Spirits, local or tutelary deities (devatā, deva, devaputta, maru) 5, 27; 8, 13, 25; 15, 67, 81, 135, 165; 19, 19; 20, 41; 22, 19, 80; 23, 10; 27, 30; 30, 15, 59, 99; 31, 56, 83 f., 93; 32, 63; 37, 238; 42, 51; 57, 32, 38; 70, 210; 80, 55; 99, 112, 133. tree spirits 1, 52; 5, 42; 10, 89, mountain deities 14, 3 (Sumanadeva 1, 33; 86, 19), gnomes 14, 38, chattampi devatā 28, 6, devatās in animal shape 28, 9, vyādhideva 10, 89, devapalli 57, 38, offerings to the ds (hali) 15, 67, 135; 36, 89. — 2. Magic art and witchcraft. Incantations, charms 41, 80 ff.; 51, 81; 52, 80; 57, 6 ff.; 66, 138, magic water and thread 7, 9; 73, 73, rag-trees 49, 27, magic remedies 46, 37, fending off the influence of evil spirits (santī) 85, 50. — Rainfall effected by charm 37, 189 ff.; 87, 1 ff. — Oracle, soothsaying, signs (nimitta) and their interpretation 6, 2; 8, 10, 14; 14, 53; 22, 46 f., 68; 35, 66; 39, 22; 57, 38 f., 53; 62, 38 ff.; 66, 132; 67, 29 f., 32; 77, 48; Brahmins as soothsayers 9, 2, casting lots 25, 20 ff. — Dreams and their interpretation 62, 12 ff., 21 ff.; 66, 47 ff.; 95, 14 f. — Bodily marks and their interpretation 5, 45; 22, 59; 35, 109; 48, 114; 57, 49; 59, 34 ff.; 62, 46 ff.; 81, 68 f.;

87. 62. — Astrology 35. 71; 57. 48; 100. 46, 51. auspicious and inauspicious constellations 19. 47; 29. 1; 31. 109; 62. 37, 55; 63. 47; 67. 31, 62. 91; 70. 240; 71. 28; 89. 39; 96. 13; 100. 191.

IX. Buddhism

Buddha, dhamma, saṅgha (ratthutāya, ratanātāya) 5. 81; 12. 28; 13. 13; 21. 8; 23. 13; 26. 23 f.; 64. 15; 87. 43; 90. 65; 91. 5, 9, 16; 92. 27; 97. 1; 98. 2; 99. 11; 100. 169, 301.

A. Buddha. 1. Bodily and mental qualities of a B. 3. 1, 6; 5. 91; 17. 46; 18. 22; 54. 29; 74. 2; 85. 51; 99. 67. former B.s 1. 5 ff.; 15. 91 ff.; 27. 11; 39. 51. future B.s. 32. 73; 37. 242; 38. 68; 51. 77 f.; 52. 47; 80. 12; 87. 3; 100. 237. paṇḍita-buddha 1. 55; 5. 50. — 2. Gotama B.: in former existences 42. 5. his life 1. 12 ff.; 2. 22; 3. 1 ff.; 35. 31; 51. 10; 73. 162; 74. 3. miracles performed by the B. 17. 44; 82. 29; 100. 272. his visits to C. 1. 19 ff.; 15. 100 ff.; 74. 2. his disciples 3. 4 ff.; 9 ff.; 37. 176; 39. 53; 51. 80; 85. 78 ff. 107. the five great resolves 17. 46 ff.; 18. 22; 82. 33. titles of the B. 1. 57; 82. 47; 85. 100 f.; 90. 51.

B. Dhamma. 1. puṇḍa, apuṇḍa; kamma 32. 22 f.; 37. 51; 93. 15, 17; 94. 21 f.; 95. 24 et passim. saṃsāra 22. 31 ff.; 30. 44; 32. 21, 81 ff.; 37. 152; 93. 11, 14; 100. 237 &c. three bhavas 4. 66. gati, agati 37. 51 N., 108; 80. 19. paṭi 42. 50 N.; 44. 107; 52. 69; 100. 146, 159. — 2. The eightfold path 12. 42; 84. 32. compassion with living beings 35. 6; 49. 36; 52. 15, 28; 54. 32; 60. 74; 74. 20 f. — 3. Influence of Mahāyānaism (cf. Pārasarava, Mahāyānaism in Ceylon, C. J. Se. G. II, p. 95 ff.) 1. 57; 50. 65; 80. 12; 82. 17; 85. 119; 85. 5-7; 87. 3; 90. 51. kings as bodhisattvas 36. 99; 88. 35; 90. 48; 100. 136.

C. Saṅgha passim (cātubbiṣa s' 32. 34; 45. 54; 73. 155; 79. 17. gāya "chapter" 60. 17; 89. 18, 57; = saṅgha 99. 66, 106). 1. Organisation of the order; pabbajjā, upasampadā (see V. B. 5; M. tr., p. 294, 296) 5. 129 ff.; 12. 30 ff.;

14. 31 f.; 37. 210, 223; 57. 19; 81. 49 f.; 84. 37, 43; 87. 72; 89. 47 ff. &c. shaving of the head 5. 46; 16. 11. the yellow robe 5. 229; 14. 13; 18. 10. cripples not admitted 57. 19. pabbajjā of nuns 15. 19 ff. — pañca sahadhamnikā 80. 60; sāmāyera 13. 4; 22. 25; 31. 119 &c.; 99. 25, 89, 169, 173; 100. 44, 96 f., 238. bhikkhu passin (samapa 14. 8; 26. 21; 30. 37; 33. 94; 66. 114; 67. 94; 97. 14. yatī 37. 175; 53. 15; 57. 19; 89. 58 ff.). — thera, mahāthera 37. 218; 89. 64 et passim, ayyaka 46. 69. yatissara 67. 61, 80. — bhikkhunī 5. 198 ff., 208; 19. 68, 78 ff.; 26. 15 &c. therī 19. 65, 77. — nissaya 36. 112. upajjhāya (antevāsī) 5. 69, 206, 208. ācariya (sāvaka) 5. 70, 208. — the bhagvāgārīka 89. 58. — bhikkhus living in villages or in the wilderness 52. 19, 22; 53. 14 ff.; 54. 20; 57. 32; 84. 18, 22; 99. 179. tapodhana, tapassin 53. 14 ff.; 54. 20; 89. 57; 91. 25. wandering bhikkhus 98. 15. — retirement from the order 93. 14 f. occupations not allowed to bh.s 84. 7; 100. 45 f. kulasaṃsagga 33. 95. — exclusion 5. 270 ff.; 37. 39; 94. 22. cremation of dead bh.s 20. 34 ff., 43 f., 47, 53; 100. 148. — titles granted to bh.s: sāmin (mahā*, sāmaṇ* &c.) 52. 20; 53. 23; 81. 76; 86. 38; 89. 64. saṃghathera 4. 56; 37. 45. saṃgharāja 100. 69, 108. rājaguru 90. 81.

2. Necessaries of a bh: catupaccayā 3. 14; 5. 196; 22. 21; 33. 94; 37. 76 N.; 51. 122; 60. 10, 15, 69; 84. 16; 89. 50; 90. 41; 94. 20; 97. 11; 98. 22; 99. 26. añña parikkhānā (sāmaṇakā p^o) 4. 26 N.; 20. 24; 26. 21; 30. 37, 39; 54. 25; 60. 71; 84. 21, 39, 41; 85. 39; 88. 52; 89. 66 f.; 91. 21, 33; 97. 8; 99. 89. ticvara, chattivara 33. 26; 34. 7, 84; 35. 77; 36. 40, 110, 131; 41. 29; 91. 23, 33; 100. 132. patta 14. 52; 24. 26 ff.; 35. 7. parissavana 35. 71. dhammakaraka 22. 68. akkhamakā 46. 17; 57. 6.

3. The vihāra. Four viharas 53. 37; 54. 5, 33, 54. añña mahavihārā 61. 59. ajjhayatanāni 84. 4, 18. assama 72. 145. bhikkhunūpassaya 18. 11 f.; 20. 21; 37. 43 &c. āṣṇa 10. 101; 15. 185; 19. 41; 24. 13 (cf. 22. 23); 29. 32 &c. — steṇā 14. 32; 15. 184 ff.; 78. 56 ff.; 100. 129, 287, 291. sūnāsamuggahāṭa 37. 36 f., 56. pakara 36. 8, 37; 78. 51, 91; 100. 217, 265 &c.

— Component parts of a v. (49. 32; 60. 11 ff.; 78. 32 ff., 49 ff., 70 ff., 79 ff.; 79. 19 ff., 62 ff.; 84. 18 ff.; 85. 2 f.; 86. 50 f.; 100. 240 ff., 282 ff.): *mūlaka* 15. 29, 36 ff.; 16. 15; 32. 58 &c. *bodhi tree* 34. 31; 37. 91; 48. 5; 49. 15; 68. 28; 79. 16, 62, 72; 85. 2, 70; 86. 51; 90. 99. the *bodhi tree* of Be-gaya 15. 22; 17. 17, 47 ff.; 18. 34 f., 42; 19. 43, 56; 20. 4 ff.; 37. 246. the *bodhi tree* in the Mahāvihāra, Anurādhapura 17. 30, 40; 18. 4 ff.; 19. 1 ff.; 20. 1; 23. 28; 28. 1; 34. 58 ff.; 36. 52, 100, 126; 37. 35; 38. 55, 57, 67, 69; 41. 29, 32, 91; 42. 66; 44. 45, 65; 48. 70, 124; 51. 78; 52. 11, 24. its eight saplings 19. 60-2. the b. trees of former Buddhas 15. 78, 112, 147. — *pāsāpa-vedi*, *silā-vā* round a *bodhi tree* 36. 52, 103; 37. 91; 42. 19; *bodhikoṭṭhaka* 79. 72. *dvāratorāṇa* 36. 103, 126. *bodhihara* 15. 205; 37. 15, 31; 38. 43, 69; 41. 65; 42. 19, 66; 48. 70; 49. 15, 74; 51. 54; 53. 10; 60. 62; 79. 72. — *thūpa* or *cetiya* (see VII, C. 12, e) 17. 37 ff.; 26. 8 ff.; 29. 1 ff.; 78. 51 &c. *thūpaghara*, *cetiya*² 31. 60; 34. 87, 90 ff.; 36. 9, 106; 48. 66. — Single buildings: dwelling house for the priests (*pāsāda*, *āvāsa* &c.) 27. 9 ff.; 36. 11; 40. 11, 57; 78. 33 ff., 49 ff., 67, 81 ff.; 90. 96; 92. 11; 100. 297. *guhā*, *lena* 3. 19; 16. 12; 20. 16; 78. 32, 66, 74 f. *pariveṇa* 15. 204, 206 ff.; 33. 57, 88; 36. 8, 10; 57. 20; 78. 36, 71. *relic temple* 37. 15; 46. 29; 78. 41; 85. 75; 90. 66 ff.; 94. 14; 97. 36 ff.; 98. 25, 35. *image house* (*paṭimāgeha* &c.) 35. 89; 37. 15, 183; 60. 83; 68. 28; 78. 53 ff., 85 ff.; 85. 77; 86. 50; 88. 56; 90. 99; 98. 67; 100. 295. *dharmasālā* 78. 42, 73; 79. 21; 98. 78 (*dharmāsāna*, *therāsāna* 3. 21, 35; 44. 115; 85. 46). *uposathaghara*, *-āgāra* 15. 37; 34. 30; 35. 85; 36. 16, 107; 37. 201; 51. 70; 78. 56; 92. 16; 100. 93, 287. *padhānaghara* &c. 36. 105; 37. 232; 39. 58; 42. 46; 44. 119; 46. 11. *aggisālā* 78. 43, 54, 71, 86. *poṭṭhakālaya* 78. 37. *dānasālā* 37. 182; 78. 150. *agantukasālā* 79. 20, 22, 63, 80. *bhāttasālā*, *bhojanasālā* 15. 205; 20. 23; 36. 12; 78. 42 (*bhāttavā* 37. 181 N.; 42. 67). *sālākagga* 15. 205; 36. 74; 49. 32. *caṅkamaṇa* 14. 208; 78. 42. *nāhānakopphaka* 78. 45 f., 83. *vaccenkuṭṭi* 78. 43, 50, 86. — Servants and officials in a v. (*ārāma* &c.) 37. 63, 173; 46. 14, 28; 52. 26; 57. 21; 78. 4 N.; 88. 58; 97. 55; 98. 27; 100. 218. *dāsa* 46. 10, 20; 80. 36, 40; 100. 11.

4. Duties of the bhikkhus, vihāra-life. *Dasasilāṇa* 18.10. — Scholarly studies 90.80; 100.178. *tepiṭaka* 5.84, 275; 27.44; 78.7. — Performing of ecclesiastical acts: *dhammakamma* 39.57 (cf. VI, E, 5); *kammavūcā* 5.207. — Recitation of sacred texts 3.33, 36; 41.58 f. *gāyasaṃjñāya* 31.86; 32.11, 63; 34.49. preaching of the doctrine (*dhamma-dāna* 98.77 ff.; 99.15, 24); *dhammadessanā*, -*desaka*, -*kathika* &c. 14.22, 58; 15.4 &c.; 32.45; 35.92; 60.20; 85.46 f.; 98.73, 79; 99.18 f., 170; 100.275 (magdapas erected for the preachers 98.72; 99.16. seats prepared for the ps. 4.51; 99.18. fans in the hands of the ps. 85.46; 98.73). — *kulipaka*, -*ga* 30.40; 36.116. — Ceremonies performed by the bh.s: *vassa*, *antovassa* 1.14; 3.15; 16.8; 17.1; 18.2; 100.131. *uposatha* 5.235, 273; 13.14, 18; 29.69; 32.41; 35.76; 36.16; 51.83; 53.29; 74.20; 100.131 (*pāṭihārī-yapakha* 37.202) (cf. IX, C, 3; *uposathaghara*). *pavāraṇā* 5.235, 280; 17.1; 20.24; 34.62; 37.90; 100.132. *kathina* 44.48; 85.99 ff.; 86.46 ff.; 91.34; 100.132. *paritta* 46.5; 51.80; 52.80; 62.31; 87.5; 99.26. — Ceremonies performed in buildings erected in water (*odakukkhopasimā*) 78.28 ff.; 87.71; 89.47, 70; 94.17; 97.12. — Higher attainments. *upanisaya* (marks of future-holiness) 5.45, 172, 194. *padhāna* 36.105; 42.46 (cf. IX, C, 3; *padhānaghara*). *kammagghāna* 5.148. meditation, trance (*jhāna*) 5.123, 220; 15.209; 23.63; 35.104; 88.55. *vipassana*, -*ssaka* 5.152; 19.46; 99.170; 100.174. — The path of salvation (*sotāpatti* &c.) 13.17; 15.18; 23.61; 27.44; 29.68; 31.101. *ānāpāna*, *khiṇṇāpāna* 5.112; 29.54 f.; 28.24; 29.6. *arahant*, -*hatta* 1.14; 5.46, 172, 214; 14.14, 33; 16.11, 17; 19.46, 65 f.; 23.63; 25.104; 26.5; 29.68 f.; 31.95, 100; 84.25; 86.13. *iddhi* 34.49. *iddhi* 1.37; 5.174; 12.15; 13.19; 14.14; 30.99; 32.15. *abhiñña* 4.12; 5.152, 275; 13.4; 14.14; 22.34; 52.38. — *Theras* as soothsayers 15.169 ff. miracles performed by th.s 5.258 ff.; 12.10 f., 49 f.; 13.19; 14.35; 15.38 ff.; 31.85; 32.15. *nirvāna* of th.s 5.219, 226 f.; 20.33.

5. *Cult.* Inauguration of a monastic building 26.14 ff.; 36.130. music and dance at festival occasions 5.181; 34.60. —

Vesākha-festival 1. 12; 32. 35; 34. 59; 35. 100; 36. 40, 109, 130; 44. 46; 51. 84. Kāṣṭha-festival 99. 53. abhisēka (net-tapūjā, nettamaha, akkhipūjā) 5. 94; 38. 58; 39. 7; 100. 187, 191, 204 f., 235, 267. Cf. EZ. II, p. 254. — traces of a temple ritual: the Buddha-image or a relic of the B. is treated as the living master (buddhupattibhāva 34. 61) 38. 64; 52. 26; 53. 30; 78. 35; 90. 77 ff.; 97. 33; 100. 182. — Relic-cult (sāricikā dhātuyo 17. 12; 80. 69; 99. 58. paribhogikā dh. 55. 17; 82. 18, 34): dāphadhātu 17. 14; 37. 92 ff.; 38. 8, 70 f.; 42. 33; 44. 45; 51. 22; 54. 5, 45; 57. 23; 60. 16; 61. 56, 61; 64. 30; 70. 266, 310; 72. 301; 73. 128; 74. 38, 84, 88, 103, 126, 142, 147, 165, 167, 183 ff., 193, 198 ff., 226, 246; 81. 17 ff., 26 ff., 33 f., 77; 82. 6 ff., 40 ff.; 84. 13; 85. 25, 33, 92, 111; 86. 54 ff.; 87. 5, 69, 74; 88. 10, 15, 65; 89. 16-46; 90. 41, 46 f., 54 f., 67, 72, 77; 91. 12, 19; 92. 9; 94. 11 ff.; 95. 2, 9 ff., 21; 97. 4 ff., 25, 52; 98. 3, 25, 37 ff., 94; 99. 58, 63, 68, 86, 105, 123, 141, 143 ff., 166; 100. 1 ff., 12, 23 ff., 40 ff., 124 (an image of the d. 100. 153, 157). pattadhātu 17. 12; 20. 13; 33L 48, 55; 37. 192; 61. 56, 61; 64. 30; 70. 266, 310; 72. 301; 74. 38, 84, 88, 103, 126, 142, 147, 165, 167, 188 ff., 210, 226; 81. 17 ff., 77; 83. 25, 33; 87. 69, 74; 88. 10, 66; 89. 16-46; 90. 72. dakkhiṇakkhukadhātu 17. 14, 20, 24, 37 ff., 50; 37. 207 N.; 42. 53 ff.; 64. 30. kesaḍdhātu 39. 49 ff.; 44. 45; 50. 71; 54. 41; 64. 30. givaṭṭhiḍdhātu 20. 19; 64. 30. — the relics of the Mahāthūpa 17. 51; 31. 16 ff., 15 ff. relics of theras 20. 44; 85. 80. — Miracles performed by relics 17. 25 ff., 43, 51 f.; 31. 97 ff.; 82. 41 ff. — Reliquaries (caṇḍoṭṭa, karmaloka) 31. 77, 87 f.; 50. 71; 76. 115; 85. 27; 89. 21; 90. 72; 91. 18 f.; 92. 14; 97. 6, 53 f.; 98. 27 ff., 91; 99. 160, 165; 100. 13 ff. — Relic feasts 88. 16; 90. 41, 57, 75; 95. 2; 97. 25; 99. 68; 100. 8 &c.

C. History of the Saṅgha. The three councils 3. 5 ff.; 4. 9 ff.; 5. 228 ff. Buddhist sects 5. 1 ff. (cf. M. tr., p. 276 ff.). theravāda, ācariyavāda 5. 2; 37. 227; 52. 46; 54. 46 f. &c. vibhajjavāda 5. 271 f. mahāsamghikā 5. 1; 50. 68. — Schisms in C. 33. 95 ff.; 37. 2 ff. — church-reforms see VI, E, 5. — tayo nikāyā 41. 97 and N.; 44. 131; 45. 16; 46. 16; 48. 73; 51. 14,

64, 133; 52. 10, 12, 35, 80; 54. 4, 27; 55. 20; 60. 10, 13, 56; 70. 181, 328; 73. 5, 12, 20; 75. 74; 78. 5, 10. *dre nikāya* 46. 15. *dhammarucikā* 5. 13; 38. 75; 52. 17 f. *vetullavāda* 36. 41, 111; 42. 35; 78. 22. *sāgalikā* 5. 13; 39. 41; 42. 43; 52. 7. *dhammudhātā* 41. 37-40. *sassatadūṭṭhi* 5. 269. *abhiyāsāna* (= *hīna-* and *mahāyāna*) 84. 10 (cf. IX, B, 2). — Ascetic groups of bh.s in C: *pamsukūlino* 47. 66; 48. 4; 49. 80; 50. 63, 76; 51. 52; 52. 21, 27; 53. 23, 48; 54. 18, 24, 25; 61. 59. *lūbhavāsino* 54. 27; 60. 68, 72. *vantajivakā* 60. 69. *tapovana-*
vāsino 41. 99 N.; 52. 22; 53. 14 ff.; 54. 20. — Bhikkhus in the Cēla and Pāṇḍu country 36. 112 ff.; 89. 67; 90. 89. foreign bh.s fetched to C. 60. 5 f.; 84. 9, 11 ff.; 94. 15; 97. 19; 98. 89 E.; 100. 58 ff., 122 ff. — Persecution of the order by Rājasiha I. 93. 10 ff.; 100. 220 ff. by the Parāṅgis 95. 7 ff. by the Chāṇḍas 99. 112 ff., 125. — Non-Buddhist sects: *titthiyā* 5. 74. *jaṭṭhā* 1. 16. *nigayṭhā* 10. 97 ff.; 33. 43, 79; 39. 20. *paribbājakā* 7. 6; 8. 41; 10. 101. *āpasā* 7. 11; 66. 135 f. *ājivaka* 10. 102.

7. The *lāṭṭy* (*opāsaka*, -*sikā* 89. 100). *ariyā*: *puṭṭhajjanā* 5. 113. conversions 1. 32, 33; 12. 19 ff., 27 ff.; 14. 23, 40, 58, 64; 19. 46. *saraṇa*, *silā* 1. 32, 62; 14. 23, 40; 22. 69; 25. 110; 35. 75; 36. 73; 54. 29; 98. 13; 100. 230. *uposatha* vows (7. 6; 35. 76; 97. 202 f.; 99. 18; 48. 10; 60. 21; 97. 19; 98. 13; 100. 131. *padakkhiṇap* kar 18. 96; 29. 48; 31. 94; 37. 196; 72. 328. — Sacrificial offerings to the community or to a sanctuary: *pūjā*, *dāna* 17. 62; 32. 35; 34. 57, 59; 35. 74 f.; 44. 46; 54. 37, 39; 64. 15; 70. 193 ff.; 85. 26, 70, 112-6; 89. 19 ff.; 90. 73 ff.; 97. 29 ff.; 98. 52 ff., 58 ff., 76; 100. 211, 225 &c. *pūjopakaraṇṇī* 70. 193 f., 198; 98. 93 (*sankhā* 70. 194; 100. 120. *puṇḍurīyānī* 70. 194; 98. 54; 100. 7, 33, 190. *se-tacchatta* &c. 70. 194; 98. 52; 99. 55; 100. 31, 193. *dhajapa-takā* 70. 194; 99. 57; 100. 187. *puṭṭhaghaṭṭā* 29. 48; 30. 90; 32. 4; 98. 96; 100. 188. Cf. also VI, C, 3). *pūjāvatthūnī* 97. 33; 98. 54, 75; 99. 22, 56; 100. 124, 146, 197, 205 f. (food, garments, carpets &c. 30. 96 f.; 31. 113; 32. 35, 39; 33. 72; 34. 62; 35. 77 ff., 92 ff.; 36. 100, 131; 51. 61; 85. 116; 90. 73; 92. 27; 97. 29; 98. 10 f., 15; 99. 26; 100. 10, 195, 205 &c.

Cf. catupaccayā, atthaparikkhūā, ticivara, chaetivara in IX, C, 2; kuḥina in IX, C, 4, salākabhutta (*cf.* salākagga IX, C, 3); 27. 11; 34. 64; 48. 73. — medicaments 22. 30, 37; 60. 70; 98. 10; 100. 3, 196. — flowers, perfumes, incense 15. 27 f.; 22. 30, 37; 30. 27; 85. 70, 83; 90. 73; 92. 16; 97. 29; 98. 8 ff., 64, 75; 99. 56; 100. 3, 83, 197. — valuables, gold, jewels &c. 17. 62; 36. 125 f.; 64. 56; 85. 121; 97. 28; 98. 11, 33, 53; 99. 37; 100. 9, 31 f. — elephants, horses, cattle, buffalos 90. 76; 92. 29; 98. 83; 99. 37; 100. 42. — slaves, male and female 46. 10, 20; 80. 36, 40; 90. 76; 100. 11. — lamps and oil 32. 41; 92. 16 f.; 98. 75; 100. 33, lamp-feasts, illuminations 32. 37; 35. 79; 76. 119; 85. 40 f., 70 f., 84, 116; 86. 31; 98. 60 ff., 84). — Festival processions in honour of a sanctuary see VII, C, 10. Covering of a thūpa with costly stuffs 33. 10 f.; 34. 42, 46 ff., 74; 44. 44; 54. 37, 42. — Donations of land, tanks and fields 34. 63; 35. 83, 117 f., 120; 36. 3; 85. 120 f.; 88. 52; 90. 76 &c. maintenance villages (*bhogagāma*) 46. 14 f.; 49. 21, 26 ff.; 52. 46; 53. 31; 60. 66 ff., 72 f.; 61. 54; 84. 3 ff.; 85. 58; 90. 87, 97 &c. — Ceremonies connected with donations 15. 25; 26. 18; 27. 46. — Pilgrimages 66. 136; 80. 24; 85. 118; 86. 1, 9 ff.; 88. 48; 92. 15-8; 97. 15, 27 ff.; 99. 36 ff.; 100. 125 ff. the sixteen sacred places in C. 1, 77 ff.; 100. 128, 253. the sacred foot-print on the summit of the Sammekūṇa 1. 77; 60. 64; 85. 113 ff.; 86. 10, 28 ff.; 88. 48; 97. 18; 98. 84; 100. 221 ff. the same in Siam 100. 160, 253.

Additions and Corrections

I. Mahāvamsa ed.

2. 11. Put; after Okkākā, and read pavattā instead of papattā.
4. 30 d. Read: tampaḥkhagāhiṃ.
5. 169. Put comma instead of full stop at the end of the verse.
5. 170. Read: tassa-tassa and put full stop after nūnato.
Pāda c begins Yācivā.
19. 3 c. Read: seṇṇaṃ.
19. 70 d. Read: vidu.
23. 11 c. Read: sahoḍhaṃ.
33. 8 c. Read: Velaṅgavittḥikaṃ.
35. 11 a. Read: sahoḍha.
35. 13 a. Read: Goṇakannādiṃ.
35. 113 a. Read: Goṇanādiyā.
36. 7 c. Read: Ratanapāsādaṃ (proper noun).
37. 45 b. Expunge the comma after so.
- p. 337, col. 2, line 30. Read Kukkutārāma, a monastery in I. 5. 122; in C. 37. 15.
- p. 339, col. 2, line 10. Add Goṇakanādi 35. 13, 113.
- p. 344, col. 1, line 29. Add 14. 44 after Paṭhamo ihāpo.
- p. 349, col. 1, line 20. Add Ratanapāsādo, a building in A. 36. 7.
- p. 350, col. 1, line 25. Add Vattaniya, a monastery in I. 29. 40.
- p. 350, col. 1, line 44. Read: a monastery in I. (instead of C.).
- p. 353, col. 2. Expunge the last article Honakanādi.
- p. 356, line 19. Read: sahoḍhaṃ gaḥḥāli cf. skr. sahoḍha.

II. Cūlavamsa ed. I

37. 79. Put the whole verse between marks of suspension.
It is a parenthesis.
37. 103. Put: after ratanamayadapaṃ.
37. 114 d. Read: 'nāgo rogīti nicchayaṃ.'
37. 202 ab. We have probably to read: cūḍuddesiṃ pañca-
dasim yā ca pakkhussa aṭṭhāni.
37. 206 b. Read: coraṃ rāḷiyam, uggate &c.
38. 3 b. Read: chuttagāḷhakaḷantuno.
38. 29 cd. Read: cato, putto Parindo pi, tatiye tassa bhātuko &c.
38. 60 d. Read: attanā instead of atiano.
38. 65. I propose to read: Akāsi paṇimāgeho Bahumāṅgala-
cetiye | bodhisatta ca, tathāpi Kālaselussa satthuno &c.
38. 77 b. Read: kamsalohajam.
38. 79 cd. Read: ko hi nāma samatto? ti mukhamattam
nidassitam.
38. 88 c. Read: rūjakule.
41. 82 cd. Read: gahetvā khipi; tih' eṇam āṅgulhi sa tam
chopi.
41. 89 b. Expunge the comma after vasaṃ.
41. 96 b. Read: Uttare instead of uttare.
44. 51 b. Add the note: 'vihāṣkam all MSS. and Ed.
44. 56 b. Read Janapadam (it is proper noun).
44. 90 b. Read: sakkū hantam ti dārukam.
44. 123 c. Read: 'parajjhivā.
47. 66. Read p. 89²: tatth' eva.
48. 20 d. We have probably to read: publavuttilo instead
of -no.
49. 17 d—18. Read: paṇimāyo ca kārāyi || pāsāde cetiye c' eva
&c. with full stop after anappake.
49. 78 d. Expunge the full stop after avalokiya.
49. 81 b. Expunge the comma after sādhuḷam.
50. 34 a b. Read: Pāsāde Ratane sabbasovayyaṃ satthu-
bimbakam.
50. 40 d. Read: 'samo instead of samo.

51. 88 d. Read: Kuṭṭhaka* instead of Tuṭṭhaka*.
 54. 57 a. Read: tam rājan.
 56. 6 c. Read: Devanagaram (it is proper noun).
 59. 2 a. Read: >Abhisekamaṅgalattham pāsādādiṃ &c.
 59. 49 b. Read: Sundarivham.
 61. 4 d. Read: 'khilā instead of khilā.
 61. 56 a. We have probably to read: Ariyadesāsa.
 61. 51 c. Note. Read: thū instead of thū.
 61. 53 d. Read: 'khiyatosā instead of khiya*.
 65. 6 c. Read: Paṭiladdha*.
 66. 26 c. Read: kumārūp.
 66. 56 a. Perhaps we should read: Nānāhassarasasānussa.
 66. 59 d. I propose to read ten' ato instead of te tato.
 66. 80 d. Read: Rānamburam.
 66. 143 a. Read: *opāya* instead of *opaya*.
 70. 54 a. Read: Rājaraṭṭham (it is proper noun).
 70. 98 d. Read: Ambavāṇap instead of Amba*.
 70. 103 a. Read: Janapadaṇi.
 70. 112 d. Read: gaṅgāpasse instead of Gaṅgā*.
 70. 120 a. Read: gaṅgājālap instead of Gaṅgā*.
 70. 181 c. Read: vast karitasamudbhūta.
 72. 58 a. Read: Ārakkhā* instead of ārakkhā*.
 72. 106 d. Expunge > before and after sāvadhāraṇaṇi.
 72. 121-2. Put: at the end of v. 121 and > before Bil-
 lavhayambhī.
 72. 127 b. Expunge > before sakulārātivāhinī.
 72. 179 d. Read: Kālarāpiyam.

III. Cūlavamsa ed. II

- Introd. p. III, l. 6. Read: anxious.
 73. 96 cd. Read: nayanā nandanādarap.
 73. 145 d. Expunge the comma after natthitap.
 74. 46 a. Read: Rājaraṭṭham.
 74. 64 d. Read: an dassānāti sabbathā &c.
 74. 149 c. Expunge > before yasodap.
 74. 150 c. Put > before cātuddisikadhinānap.

74. 206 d. Read: maggāmaggaṇīcakkhaṇo.
 75. 24 b. Read: yuddhakāḷantakaṇ.
 76. 124 c. Read: So Kaṇḍakudīya^a.
 76. 130 a. Read: So Kaṇḍakudīya^a.
 76. 157 a. Read: Dampiḷe neke.
 76. 190 b. Read: *pperūmāḷaṇ.
 76. 192-3. Read: vissutaṇ || etth' antare &c.
 76. 223 a. Read: *pperūmāḷo.
 76. 232 a. Read: *pperūmāḷe.
 76. 316 a. Read: Virapperaṇaṇ.
 77. 52 b. Read: jhāpetvā.
 78. 38 d. Put; at the end of the verse.
 78. 39 b. Expunge; after akkhirasāṇaṇ.
 80. 33 d. Read: Suraṇḍakulavādḍhanaṇ.
 80. 37 c. Read: Khundhāṇaṇ.
 80. 39 b. Read: Suraṇḍakulavādḍhanaṇ.
 82. 37 a b. Read: paṇṇanto ; bhagavā āṇḍacakkhucā tesu
 maṇ pi ca &c.
 85. 56 a. Read: mahāvihāraṇ, not Mahā^a.
 86. 17 d. Read: taṇṇaṇṇaṇṇakriyāsa.
 86. 18 b. Read: Gaṇḍasiripuraṇ.
 88. 22 b. Read: dakkhiṇaṇṇaṇṇaṇṇaṇ.
 90. 82 b. Expunge the comma after tadanaṇṇaṇ.
 91. 24 d. Read: Saṇṇetṭapaṇṇaṇ.
 91. 25 c d. Put comma after pūṇṇetvā and expunge it after
 taṇṇaṇṇaṇ.
 93. 7 a. Read: tassa dhammaṇ instead of tass' adhammaṇ.
 97. 18 a. Read: *kāṇṇaṇ.
 98. 61 a. Expunge * after kuraṇṇā and insert it after
 ekaṇṇa va.
 98. 95 d. Expunge the full stop after pūṇṇo.
 99. 29 d. Expunge the comma after so.
 99. 80 d. Read: yav' etaraṇi.
 99. 89 d. Read: paṇṇikkhāṇṇi.
 99. 107 b. Read: Lāṇṇaṇ.
 100. 15 d. Put comma after naṇṇāṇṇaṇ.
 100. 16 b. Expunge the comma after vaṇṇaṇ.

100. 41 a. Insert; after so.
101. 14 c. Read: *sarpmānesi*.
- p. 601, col. 1, alt. Read: 73. 62, 114; 78. 77; 89. 45.
- p. 609, col. 2, Devanagari. Add: 56. 6.
- p. 612, col. 1, line 29. Add: Pajjanna, the Hindu rain-god 85. 44.
- p. 612, col. 2, line 13. Add: Pandiyāṇḍāra, a D. chief 76. 173.
- p. 613, col. 2, line 12. Expunge 18 and insert 88. 18 on the following line after 87. 16.
- p. 620, col. 1, Mahāśālekagadgā. Add: 78. 28.
- p. 623, col. 2, line 4 from below: Ratanāvalicetiya. Add: 80. 20; a thūpa in Khiragūna 79. 71.
- p. 624, col. 1. Expunge the article Rājakulavaḍḍhana.
- p. 624, col. 1, Rājaraṭṭha. Add: 74. 46.
- p. 630, col. 1. After Sarassatimandapa insert the article Sarājakulavaḍḍhana, a *parivēṇa* built by Āyasmanta 80. 39 (cf. 80. 33).
- p. 632, col. 2. Add after Sudhammā the article: Sunetraparivēṇa, a monastic building erected by Parakkamabāhu VI. 91. 24.
- p. 632, col. 2. Expunge the article Sunāri and add after Sundarapabbata: Sundari, a Kāliṅga princess 59. 49.
- p. 642, line 31. Add: **tilāṇṇa*, s. m., the moon 95. 17. — Cf. skr. *tilāpura*.
- p. 644, line 4. Add: *akkani*, s. m. sound, noise 99. 60. — skr. *dhvani*, Ch., Abhp. 128.
- p. 650, line 19. Add: **rekkhā*, adj., protecting, guarding; *saddhamma* 100. 248. — skr. *rakṣin*.
- p. 652, line 5. Add: **cippakūṭṭha*, s. n. a spark of fire 72. 84; 75. 110; 95. 14. — skr. *cīpākūṭṭha*, Ch., Abhp. 35.
- p. 654, line 27. Add: **sāhica*, s. n. art of poetry 82. 3. — skr. *sahitya*.
- p. 657. To make agree this list of kings with that in C. tr. II, Introduction expunge the separate numbers 90 and 92 of Līlāvatī's second and third reigns, and then read 90 instead of 91, and 91, 92, 93 &c. up to 125 instead of 93, 94 &c. up to 127.

IV. Mahāvamsa, tr.

Introd. p. XXXVI ff. Wickramasinghe's Chronological Table of Ceylon kings in EZ. III, p. 4 ff. differs somewhat from my list of kings. As nr. 5 he adds after Paṇḍukābhaya the name of Gaṇatissa which does not occur in the Mhvs., and therefore nrs. 6-28 in W.'s list correspond to 5-27 of my list. Instead of nrs. 28-32 Wickr. has only nr. 29 Anulā, omitting the names of the paramours of this queen. Nrs. 30-58 correspond to 33-61 of my list. In Cūlavamsa trsl. II, Introduction I accepted Wickr.'s table.

2. 11. Translate the verse thus: and sixteen even unto Okkāka. These (kings) who are mentioned in groups reigned in due order, each one in his capital — and add the note: We must with the Tika read *paratte* instead of *paratte*.
3. 69. The note 4 on page 31 is indeed misleading (Wickramasinghe EZ. II, p. 276). Read thus: *Upajjhāyasa*. Every novice on his entrance into the order chooses an *upajjhāya* "spiritual preceptor" and an *ācariya* "teacher". The former instructs him in the rules of the monkish life, the latter in the study of the holy scriptures. In his relation to the *upajjhāya* the novice is called *saddhābhārika*, and *ānterāsika* in his relation to the *ācariya*.
5. 139. Read: after it had been perfumed, instead of for better care thereof.
7. 43. Page 58, note 3 read Malvatu-oya inst. of Malvatte-oya.
9. 23. Read Citta instead of Citta.
10. 53. The note 1 on page 72 is wrong. Read thus: According to v. 62 foll. not far from the Kaccakalitha (see note to v. 58), on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga. The Dhūmarakkhapabbata is also mentioned Mah. 37. 213. It is identical with the Dimbulāgala (anciently Udumbaragiri, cf. Cūlav. tr. II, p. 102, note to 78. 5), the so-called "Gunner's Quoin". H. STUART, Ceylon Antiquary and Literary Register III, p. 229).
10. 90. To Yonus add the note: See E. R. ARDEN, Ceylon Notes and Queries I, Oct. 1913, p. VIII.

11. 10 ff. As to *yattāi* Professor N. Law (letter of 3rd April 1930) calls my attention to skr. *yaśi* in the meaning "necklace", occurring in the Kauṭaliya Arthaśāstra 2. 11. 29 (p. 76 of SHAKA ŚASTRI's edition). Accordingly we should translate thus:

(10) At the foot of the Chāta mountain there appeared¹⁾ three cane-like necklaces of the size of a chariot whip. (11) Of them one was a creeper-necklace of bright silver: on this might be seen brilliant delightful creepers of golden colour²⁾. (12) One was a flower-necklace³⁾: on this again might be seen flowers of many kinds, of manifold colours, in full bloom. (13) At last, one was a bird-necklace⁴⁾ whereon might be seen numbers of birds and beasts of various colours, as if they were living.

Notes: ¹⁾ *P. jata*, — ²⁾ Perhaps *suvarṇapattapā* "with golden leaves", — ³⁾ *P. kusumayattāi*, commonly called *pūṣpakara*, a string made of golden flowers. — ⁴⁾ I. e. a necklace formed by a string of birds made of gold and other precious metals. Cf. also the description of the various necklaces in the Kauṭaliya I. 1.

11. 22. Here we should translate: 'Those three kinds of precious stones and the three chariot-like¹⁾ necklaces &c &c, — with Note ¹⁾: Refers to *rathapatodena samanaṁ parimāṇato* in v. 10.
11. 26. Read: the rank of general, instead of the rank of staff-bearer — and add the note: In *daṇḍanagaka* the word *daṇḍa* means "army", and *nagaka* "leader". Cf. Culav. tr. I, p. XXVI.
15. 4 (p. 96, N. 2). The note should run thus: I. e. "the discourse of the fool and the wise man" = Majjhima, Nr. 129 (III. 163).
15. 38 (p. 100, l. 12). Read mango-fruit instead of mango-tree.
17. 31 (p. 118, l. 25-6). Read: was covered with kudambapuppha- and ādāri-creepers — and add in note 3 after This creeper: (skr. *kudambapūṣpā*; the name seems to prove that the flowers of this creeper remind those of the kudamba-tree).

19. 73, 75 (p. 134, l. 11 and 17). Read Kadambapuppha-thicket.
22. 7. Expunge in note 3 the words: Tradition seems &c., and add: Cf. on Yatahalena H. C. P. Bell, Kégalla-District, p. 35-6.
24. 22 (p. 165, N. 5). The note should run thus: According to local tradition the battle took place near Yudagannava $1\frac{1}{2}$ miles NNW. of Buttala. The spot is marked by a thūpa (now in ruins).
24. 39. To come to a vihāra (p. 167, l. 18) add the note: According to popular tradition this vihāra was that of Okkampitiya, about five miles East of Buttala.
25. 48 (p. 173, l. 28). Read: surrounded by a kadambapuppha-thicket.
25. 99 (p. 177, l. 16). Read: sitting on the throne, instead of in the royal chamber.
30. 84 (p. 206, note 2). Add: Cf. Suttanipāṭa 974 foll.
32. 40 (p. 224, N. 2). *Jāla-pūca* means "net-cake". I was told in Ceylon that even now cakes of a peculiar shape are prepared there for which such a denomination would be befitting.
33. 43 (p. 232, l. 6) Read: "The great black Sihala is fleeing".
33. 85 (p. 235, l. 22). Read: concealed herself in a kadambapuppha-thicket.
35. 104 (p. 254, l. 6). Read: in a kadambapuppha-thicket.
35. 116 (p. 255, l. 2). Read: on the place of the kadambapuppha-thicket.
36. 6. Add to note 1, p. 256: In Sinhalese inscriptions he is called Maḷu Tissa. See H. C. P. Bell, ASC. 1896, p. 47-8. p. 274, l. 12. Read: Sam. I, p. 259 ff.
- p. 288, l. 12. Read: south-east of Anurādhapura, instead of south-west of A.
- p. 289, l. 51—290, l. 2. (See above note on 10. 53). The passage should be corrected thus: Its position is shown clearly by Mah. 10. 53, 57, 58. We must look for it on the right bank of the Mahaveliganga, not far from the Kacchaka-ford. It is the Dimbulagala rock, the so-called "Gunner's Quoin", as Mr. H. SPERRY has shown.

V. Cūlavamsa, tr. I

Introd. p. XXII, l. 7. To *dhūgineyya* add the note: Mr. A. M. Hocart, C. J. Sc. II, p. 34, refers to the part played by the sister's son in Ancient Germany, according to Tacitus, *Germania* 20: *Sororum filiis idem apud avunculum qui apud patrem honor. Quidam sanctiorem artioremq; hunc nexum sanguinis arbitrantur.* "The sister's son is in as great honour with the uncle as with the father. Some consider this tie of blood more sacred and closer."

Introd. p. XXV, line 9. Add the note: The inscriptions of King Nissanka Malla's "Council Chamber" in Polonnaruwa supply us with useful information as to the highest officials and the constituent members of the royal council at the time of that king. At the king's right hand there sat 1) the *mahādīpāda* (p. XVII), 2) the *adīpādās* (p. XVI), 3) the *śaṇḍapāṭi* (p. XXVI), 4) the *adīkkārin* (p. XXV), 5) the Chief secretary (*mahālekha*; p. XXVIII); — and on his left side 1) the Governors of the provinces (*maṇḍalika*, p. XXV f.), 2) the eighty-four chiefs of smaller districts (*sāmanā*, p. XXV), 3) the heads of the merchants (*setthi*). The number 84 exactly corresponds to the 84 *sāmanta* appointed by Parakkambāhu in Dakkhiṇadesa (Miers, 66.16). See H. W. Coomaraswamy, JRS. C. Be. XXIX, Nr. 77, 1924, p. 304 ff.; the same, HC. p. 68.

37. 175 (p. 16, N. 5). The identification of Mahādhammakathin with *Tu-mo-kin-ti* is doubtful as *-kin-ti* would correspond to a *-gutta* rather than to a *-kathin*.

P. 17, 18, 19, 20 top. Read Upatissa I. instead of Upatissa II.
37. 213 (p. 23, N. 4). Read: right bank, instead of left bank.

38. 68 (p. 36, N. 1). Add at the end of the note: It is however probable that in the Mahāvamsa not the Buddhist *yojana*, but the common Indian *yojana* is meant which has the double length. See PIERRE, Ancient Ceylon, p. 255 f.

P. 52, top. Read Upatissa II. instead of Upatissa III.

41. 89 (p. 60, N. 5). Add at the end of the note: But we may also take *ntsaṃ* as part. pres. and assume that the sentence extends to v. 92 with *pāṇesi* as finite verb.
42. 67 (p. 73, N. 2). Add in the note: Cf. note to 70. 286 and 312.
48. 66 (p. 116, N. 4). Add in line 8 of the note after **pachāni*: (Cf. C. J. Sc. G. I, p. 145 ff.).
56. 6. The translation should run thus: he thought it not the time to carry on war and came suddenly into the company of the gods when he just had visited (the town of) Devanagara.
59. 7. The translation is not precise enough. It should run thus: After the wise (prince), that best of men, had held the position of a *yuvavīja* seventeen years he caused (this number of years) to be written down (in the annals). — Add the note: *Sattarasamvatsāri* refers as adverbial to *yuvavījapadam pīṭa sūta* and is at the same time object of *likhāpayi*.
60. 64 (p. 220, N. 2). On line 13. of the note read thus: The Jambukola-vihāra is the monastery erected by Devānampiyatissa at the landing place Jambukola (Mhvs. 20. 25) and Jambukolalena the Dambul monastery 26 miles N. of Matale with its celebrated rock temple.

VI. Cūlavamsa, tr. II

74. 151. My translation of the verse is wrong. It is based on a reading *cātuddisikāśāḍṇam*, but the *cātuddisikāśāḍṇam* of the MSS. is quite correct and we must translate: "Collect for the poor (*bhikkhus*) from the four regions of the heavens a plentiful gift of alms."
81. 67 (p. 141, l. 17). Read: after that, instead of for that.

